







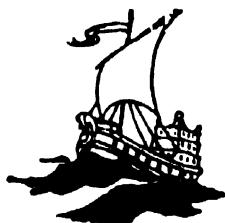






# Lands & Peoples

BY THE EDITOR OF  
**PEOPLES OF ALL NATIONS  
& COUNTRIES OF THE WORLD**



**Second Volume**  
**Pages 433 - 864**

Printed and specially bound  
for sale in the Indian Empire

by

**The STANDARD LITERATURE COMPANY Ltd.**  
CALCUTTA

1942

Uttarpara Jai Krishna Public Library  
Acca. No. 23283 Date 13.12.96.

## Second Volume

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

<b>THE CITY THAT RULED THE WORLD</b> .. .. .	<b>PAGE 433</b>
Rome and the Ruins of its Ancient Splendour	
<b>CEYLON THE ISLE OF JEWELS</b> .. .. .	<b>453</b>
Its Peoples and its Jungle-Buried Cities	
<b>LIFE AMONG THE MAORIS</b> .. .. .	<b>483</b>
New Zealand's Splendid Warrior Race	
<b>THE LAND OF THE DRAGON</b> .. .. .	<b>499</b>
Some Glimpses of China and Manchuria	
<b>KEEPERS OF THE PEACE</b> .. .. .	<b>539</b>
With the Policemen in Many Lands	
<b>THE FIRST BRITISH COLONY</b> .. .. .	<b>555</b>
A Visit to Newfoundland and Labrador	
<b>IN THE GARDEN OF EDEN</b> .. .. .	<b>577</b>
Mesopotamia and its Lost Civilizations	
<b>"DONKEY-WORK"</b> .. .. .	<b>597</b>
The Patient Long-eared Labourers of Man	
<b>AUSTRALIA'S MAGIC-MAKERS</b> .. .. .	<b>609</b>
Primitive Natives in the Island Continent	
<b>CUBA AND THE CURANS</b> .. .. .	<b>627</b>
Largest of Atlantic Isles and its Capital	
<b>FOLK OF A WATER-LOGGED COUNTRY</b> .. .. .	<b>649</b>
The Netherlands and its Fight with the Sea	
<b>THE LOVELY LAND OF KASHMIR</b> .. .. .	<b>685</b>
A Beauty Spot of the Himalayas	
<b>WHERE WATER IS WEALTH</b> .. .. .	<b>705</b>
How Man Brings Moisture to the Thirsty Earth	
<b>ISLES OF UNREST</b> .. .. .	<b>721</b>
Among the Fierce Tribes of the Philippines	
<b>WONDERFUL VENICE</b> .. .. .	<b>739</b>
Strangest and Most Beautiful of Cities	
<b>MY LORD THE ELEPHANT</b> .. .. .	<b>753</b>
His Marvellous Strength in Work or Play	
<b>IRELAND NORTH AND SOUTH</b> .. .. .	<b>769</b>
Its Peasants and its Townsfolk	
<b>THROUGH SUNNY SPAIN</b> .. .. .	<b>793</b>
A Land Where East and West Have Mingled	
<b>MYSTERIOUS MADAGASCAR</b> .. .. .	<b>833</b>
Where Many Races Talk the Same Tongue	
<b>STRANGE HOMES AND QUEER HOUSES</b> .. .. .	<b>845</b>
How Man the World Over Shelters his Family	

# LIST OF COLOUR PLATES

## THE CITY THAT RULED THE WORLD

	PAGE
The Eternal City .. ..	442
The Colosseum .. ..	443
Carnation Seller .. ..	446
Swiss Pontifical Guards ..	447
Pincio Gardens .. ..	450
Temple of Saturn .. ..	451

## CEYLON THE ISLE OF JEWELS

Tamil Dancers .. ..	454
Tamil Girls .. ..	455
Devil Dancer .. ..	457
Rice Fields .. ..	460
Tea Garden .. ..	461
City of Anuradhapura ..	464-5
Boats on a River .. ..	468
Image of Buddha .. ..	469
Sinhalese Girl .. ..	472

## THE LAND OF THE DRAGON

Chinese Actor .. ..	505
Great Wall of China .. ..	508
Monastery on Pu Tu Island	509
Priest of Pu Tu .. ..	512
Holy Man .. ..	513
The Yang-Tse-Kiang .. ..	516
Highway to Kalgan .. ..	517
Gentleman of Shanghai ..	520
Street of Kiu-Kiang .. ..	521
Bride and Bridegroom .. ..	524
Grandmother and Grandson	525
Canal in Sung-Kiang .. ..	528
Pagoda at Suchau .. ..	529
Mountains near Shanhai-kuan	532
Walls of Liao-Yang .. ..	533
Temple in Ningpo .. ..	536

## IN THE GARDEN OF EDEN

Tomb of Ezra .. ..	578
Mosque in Samarra .. ..	579
Arab Woman .. ..	582
Climbing a Date-palm .. ..	583
Bridge at Mosul .. ..	586
Arch at Ctesiphon .. ..	587
Street in Kerbela .. ..	590
Basra .. ..	591

## 'DONKEY-WORK'

Donkey of Bethlehem .. ..	602
Norman Girl and Donkey ..	603
Laden Donkeys at Leiria ..	606
Algerian Boys and Donkey ..	607

## AUSTRALIA'S MAGIC-MAKERS

Totem Mound .. ..	610
Snake Men .. ..	611
Native Enchanter .. ..	614
Kaitish Magician .. ..	614
Medicine Man .. ..	615

## FOLK OF A WATER-LOGGED COUNTRY

	PAGE
Boy with his Boat .. ..	657
Dutch Home .. ..	660
Women of Volendam .. ..	661
Volendam .. ..	664
A Quiet Chat .. ..	665
Harbour of Urk .. ..	668
Dutch Fishermen .. ..	669
Windmill near Flushing ..	672
Utrecht .. ..	674
Amsterdam Gate, Haarlem	675
Arnhem in Gelderland .. ..	678
Street of Middelburg .. ..	679
Sand Dunes at Zoutlande ..	682
Ancient Town of Veere .. ..	683

## THE LOVELY LAND OF KASHMIR

Kashmiri Women .. ..	686
Children of Kashmir .. ..	687

## ISLES OF ENRESI

Ilongot Girl .. ..	729
Kalinga Couple .. ..	732
Mandaya Warrior .. ..	733
Bamboo Hut .. ..	739
Houses on Stilts .. ..	737

## WONDERFUL VENICE

Grand Canal .. ..	740
Church of S. Mark .. ..	741
Bridge of Sighs .. ..	744
Palace of the Doges .. ..	746
Rialto Bridge .. ..	747
Gondolas on a Canal .. ..	750
Venetian Hawker .. ..	751

## MY LORD THE ELEPHANT

Elephants of Siam .. ..	754
Maharaja of Jaipur's	
Elephants .. ..	755
Elephant Drinking .. ..	758
Giant Elephant of Bengal ..	759

## THROUGH SUNNY SPAIN

Spanish Singer .. ..	794
Lady of Andalusia .. ..	795
Murcian Girl .. ..	798
Spanish Woman .. ..	799
Man and Girl .. ..	802
A Serenade .. ..	803
Ronda .. ..	806
Gate of Justice, Alhambra ..	807
Girl in Gala Dress .. ..	809
Captives' Tower, Alhambra ..	812
Court of Lions, Alhambra ..	813
Moorish Arches, Córdoba ..	816
In Granada .. ..	817
Wrapping Oranges .. ..	820
Picking Mulberry Leaves ..	821
Gathering Grapes .. ..	824

# The City that Ruled the World

## ROME AND THE RUINS OF ITS ANCIENT SPLENDOUR

Imagine how you would feel if it were suddenly decided that you were to make a visit to Rome—your first visit. It would be no ordinary feeling. For, whatever our nationality, Rome is to most of us as a great queen is to her subjects—something romantic and magnificent, representing something even more romantic and magnificent. That is why we become excited at the prospect of a visit. Our minds are filled with dreams of kings and consuls, dictators and triumvirates, caesars and emperors. We have visions of pagan Rome, with its temples and theatres, triumphal arch and noisy arena, its baths and aqueducts and all the unsurpassed splendour of the greatest empire in antiquity. To the day of our departure, and while our train rolls on by mountain and valley, town and village, these are our dreams.

AS we approach Rome we enter what is known as the Roman Campagna, a lonely, sparsely-peopled plain which flows like a sea to the walls of Rome. Bare acres, mysterious and melancholy, stretch endlessly to right and left of us; mile upon mile of rustling grass and reed, with here and there a group of umbrella pines, and lines of willows hanging low upon the banks of the Tiber.

Lava-paved roads, which have borne the wear and tear of twenty centuries, cross the great plain. An old, ruined tower—remnant of family feuds in medieval times—is seen; yonder are the gaunt, white remains of an old Roman aqueduct. The conical huts of shepherds are passed, and lines of old, weather-worn tombs. The scene is desolate and unpromising. But so much the better. As Damascus seems Paradise itself to the Arab riding in from the encircling waste of desert, so Rome, by contrast with its drear Campagna, will be the more wonderful and also the more striking.

### *The Cloud That is Rome*

What is our first hint of Rome? The day is clear. The fierce Italian sun seems to polish the dull olive miles of the plain; but as yet it reveals no city. Presently the eye is caught by what looks like a cloud on the horizon. But its shape is too regular for a cloud, it hangs like an enormous pearl between the sky and the earth. Suddenly we realise that that grey cloud, that hanging pearl, is our first glimpse of Rome. It is the

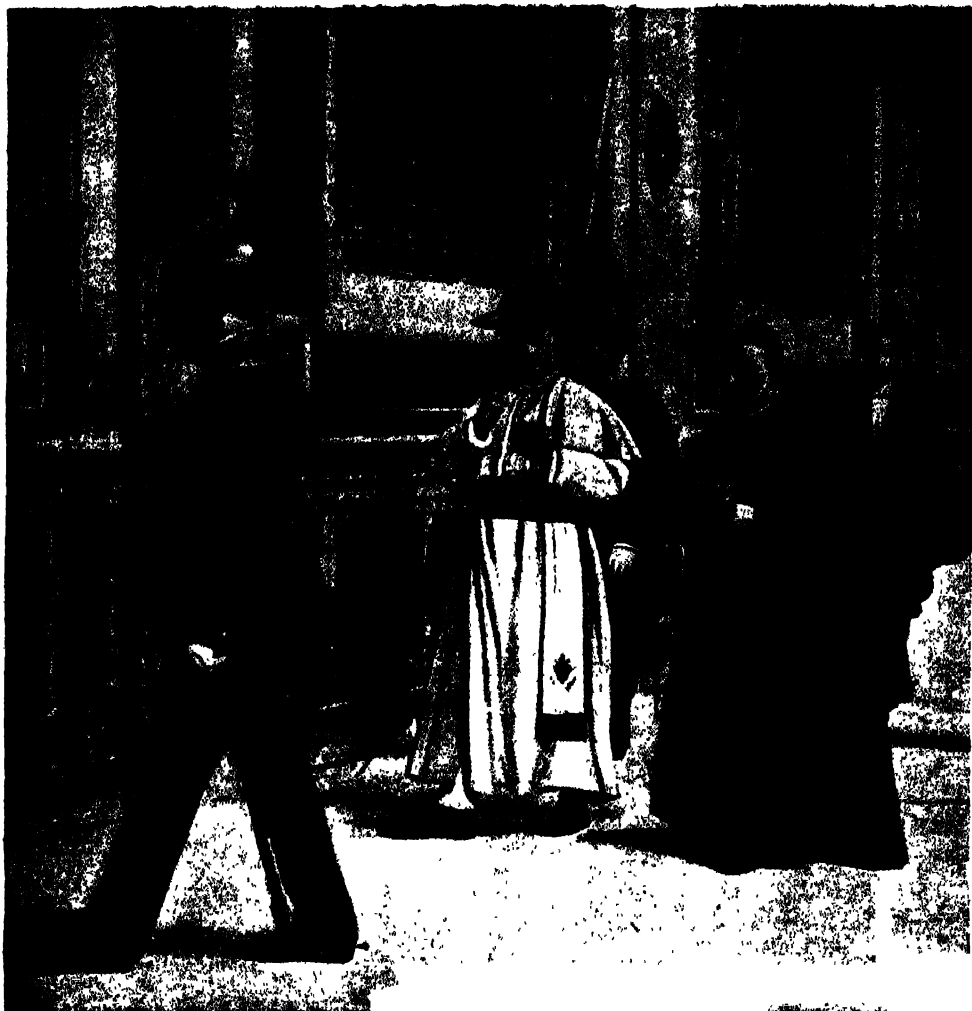
dome of S. Peter's, the great cathedral, and those marks against the sky, like pencil scribblings on a slate, are the eternal city of the empire of the caesars, of the dominion of the Popes and now of the united kingdom of Italy.

### *Where Dreams Come True*

At last we are at Rome. Is it equal to our expectations? What happens to all our dreams of caesars and gladiators, of victorious legions marching through triumphal arches, of marble palaces and temples, fountains and gardens, pomp and majesty? Let an old traveller tell you this: the more dreams you have dreamed, the happier you will be in Rome. The city by the Tiber is no disappointment. We must bear this in mind: that unless we are pressed for time it is foolish to hurry from forum to temple, temple to forum, church to church, and try to grasp the city's wonders in a day or two. Let Rome reveal herself gradually, so that we may fully appreciate her charms.

Our first impression is not, perhaps, anything very wonderful. The drive from the station to our hotel has revealed a street which might very well have been in any big, modern city. Trams clatter along just as noisily as English trams do. Newspaper boys are as numerous as flies, and the number of newspapers is greater than in London. Sturdily built flower girls give colour to the scene with their baskets of bright blooms. Gowned priests push through bustling crowds—for all Rome hurries in these busy days—





#### POPE PIUS XI. ON HIS WAY TO THE CHURCH OF S. PETER'S

This is a recent return to a practice which is as old as the Papacy. In 1870, Rome was captured by a nationalist army to become the capital of Italy. The Pope, considering that the dignity of the Papacy had been outraged, withdrew to the Vatican, from which neither he nor his successors emerged until the election of Pius XI. in 1922.

and tourists, with their little, red guide-books, add to the crowd and the bustle.

Every now and then we come upon a piazza, or public square, with obelisks, columns, fountains, perhaps a few trees and always a goodly number of people. Squares, balconies, palaces, colonnades, churches, obelisks, ruins, gardens, cafés, bookshops, flower-girls and black-shirted Fascisti are what strike us first in Rome. And over it all looms S. Peter's gigantic dome, while the columns of the caesars brood, sentinels of the past set amid the hurry-scurry of the twentieth century. That is half the charm of Rome—a meeting of Present and Past in one city—that cannot fail to arouse our wonder.

The present is all around us, and very agreeable, it seems; but we are eager for a glimpse of the past. Perhaps we should first visit the Palatine Hill. It overhangs the Forum, from which a gentle path goes up the hillside. This is the hill on which Romulus, who—says the legend—was suckled by a wolf, built the first city of Rome.

The ruins here are a little confusing to any but an antiquary; the place is one mass of debris, and the soil itself is probably all formed of crumbling masonry. In spite of this, it is one of the most fascinating spots in Rome. We may trace the wall of Romulus, said to have been built in 600 B.C.; and even the cave

## THE CITY THAT RULED THE WORLD

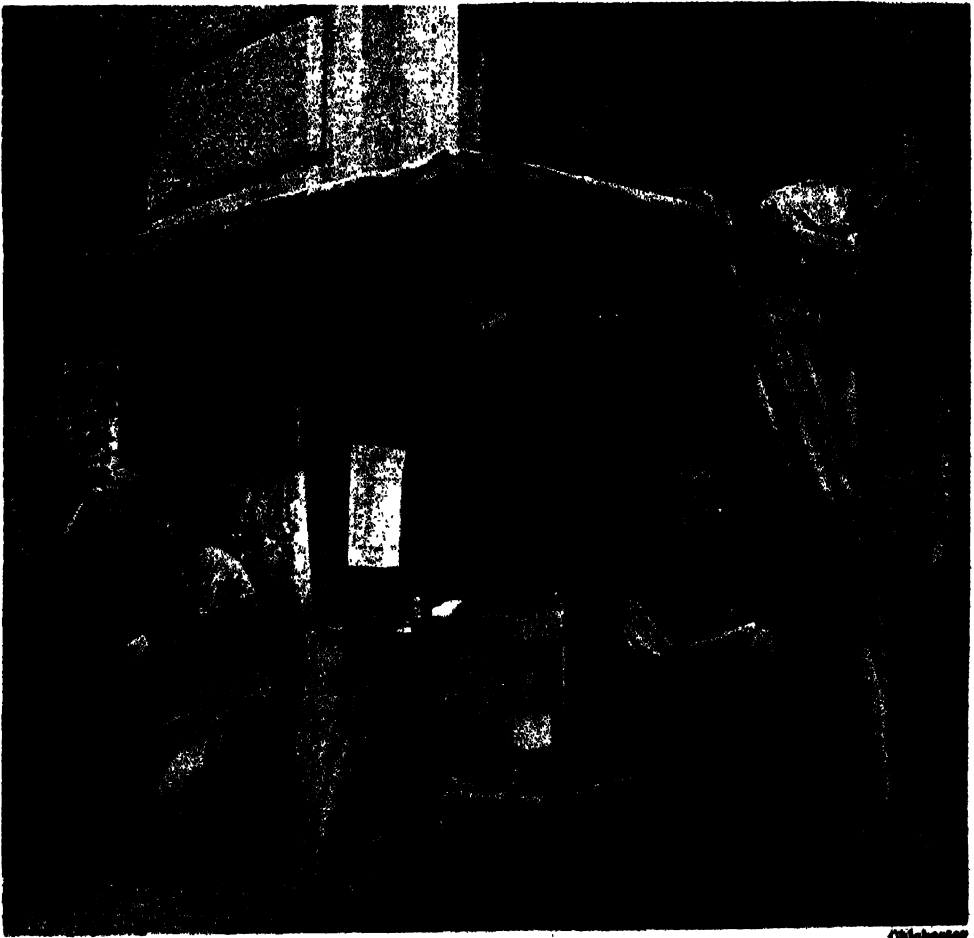
—known as the Lupercal—in which the twin founders of the city were suckled by the wolf, is pointed out.

And what of the Forum? The heart of ancient Rome, and the meeting-place of the first citizens, it became in time the centre of the civic and political life of the city, and on this spot were raised memorials to Roman heroes, temples to their gods and tribunals of justice.

To-day it bears little enough resemblance to its ancient glory. Barbarian conquerors burned and pillaged it; the makers of Christian Rome robbed it to build their churches; ruin and neglect fell upon it, so that the greater part lay buried for centuries beneath forty feet

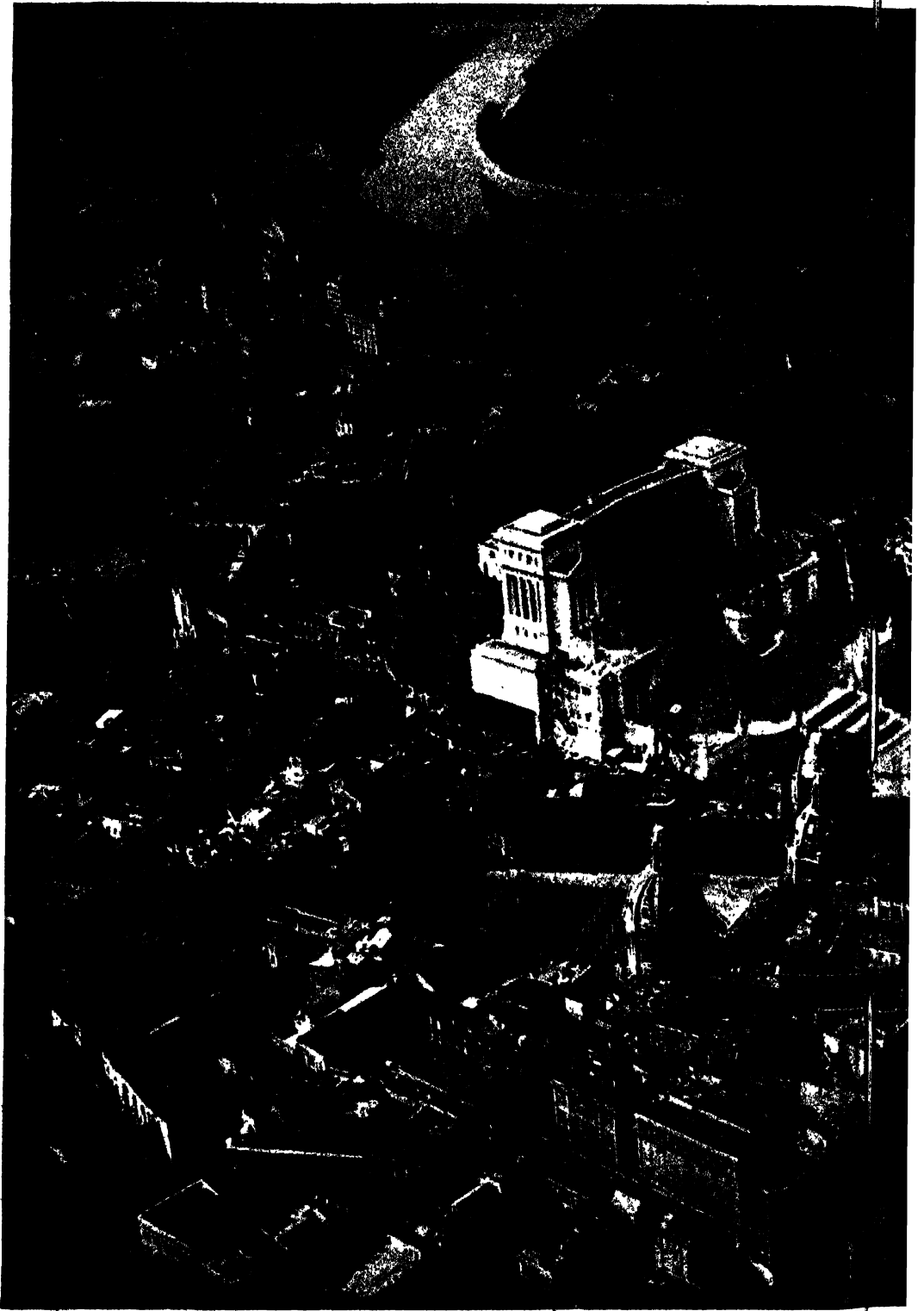
of rubbish, and its surface was used as a cattle market and as a place for washer-women to hang out their clothes to dry.

Now, thanks to the excavators, a great deal of the old Forum has been revealed, and we shall stand before the relics of columns, temples, ancient prisons, arches, the old Senate House, tombs and basilicas. We shall see the small depression known as the Lake of Curtius, and remember the legend of a brave Roman. A chasm had suddenly opened in the Forum and an oracle declared that it would only shut if Rome's greatest possession was thrown into it. Curtius, believing that a good citizen was the city's greatest possession, armed himself, mounted his horse and



### LEARNED MEN WHO WRITE LETTERS FOR A FEW PENCE

In spite of their country's old culture and young, vigorous civilization, a great number of Italians can neither read nor write. When they wish to send a letter, therefore, they do as the woman in this photograph is doing, and dictate whatever they want to say to professional letter-writers, who set up their booths at the side of the street.



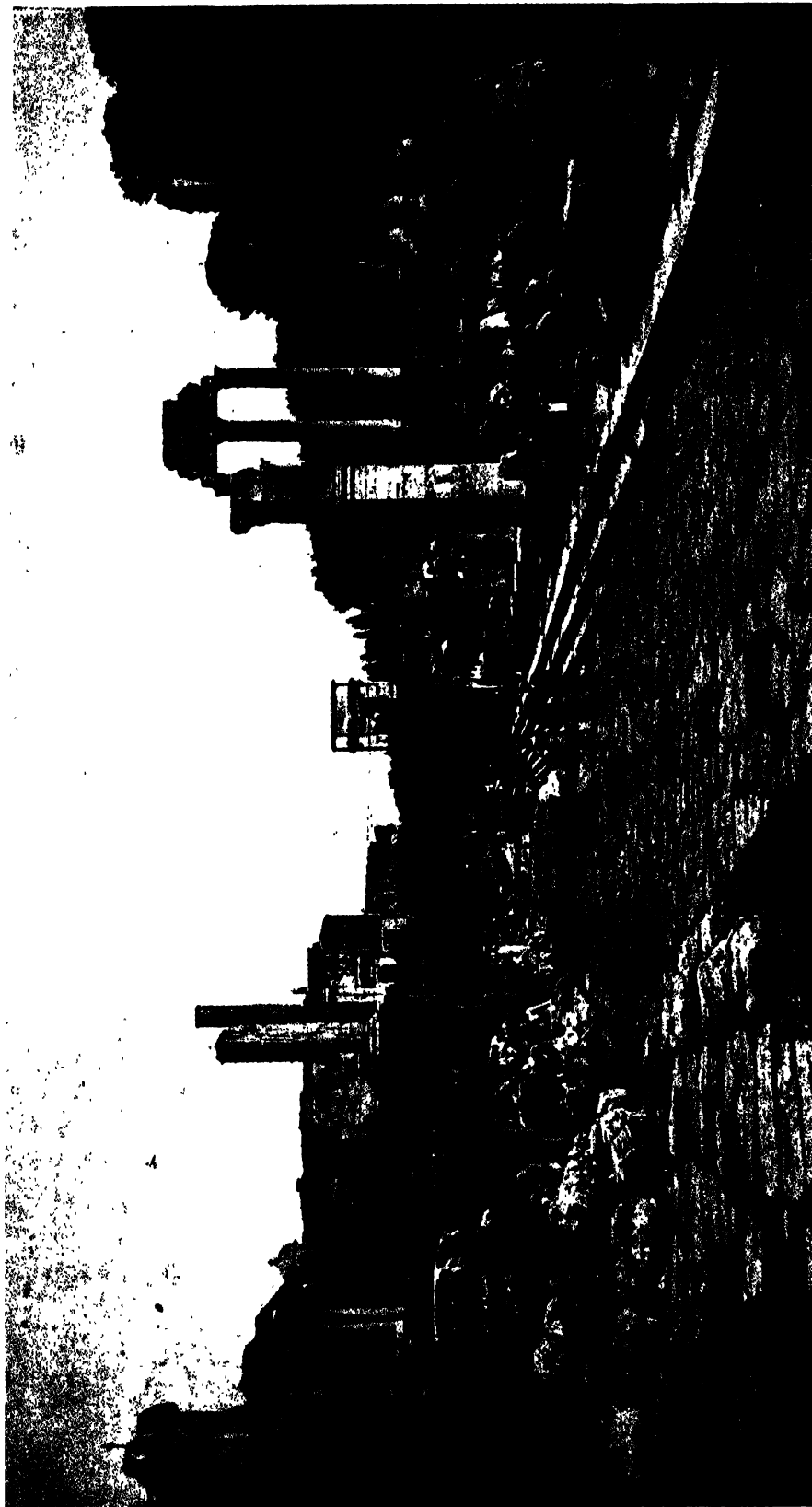
**HOW A MAN IN AN AEROPLANE SEES THE TREMENDOUS CITY—**

In the centre we see the Capitoline Hill, on the northern slope of which the Italians have built their glittering white memorial to Victor Emmanuel II. On the right, in the immediate foreground, are the two courtyards of the Palazzo Colonna. On the left of the Palazzo, and beyond the two domes, we can see the ruins of broken columns of Trajan's Forum.



**—WHERE ANCIENT HISTORY STILL LIVES IN MODERN STREETS**

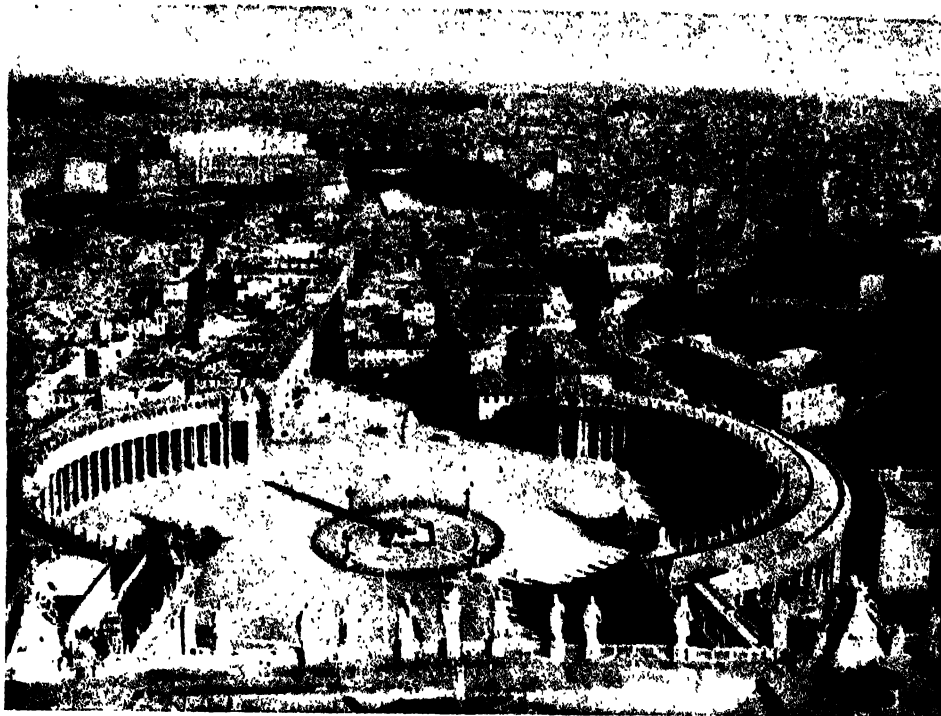
On the extreme left, in a line with the memorial, are the remains of the pillars of the Forum Romanum. Behind the memorial is the Palace of the Conservatori, with its open courtyard. The Corso stretches away from the memorial towards the right, and on the farther side of this street we see the Palazzo Venezia, with its tree-filled garden and tower.



Moletich

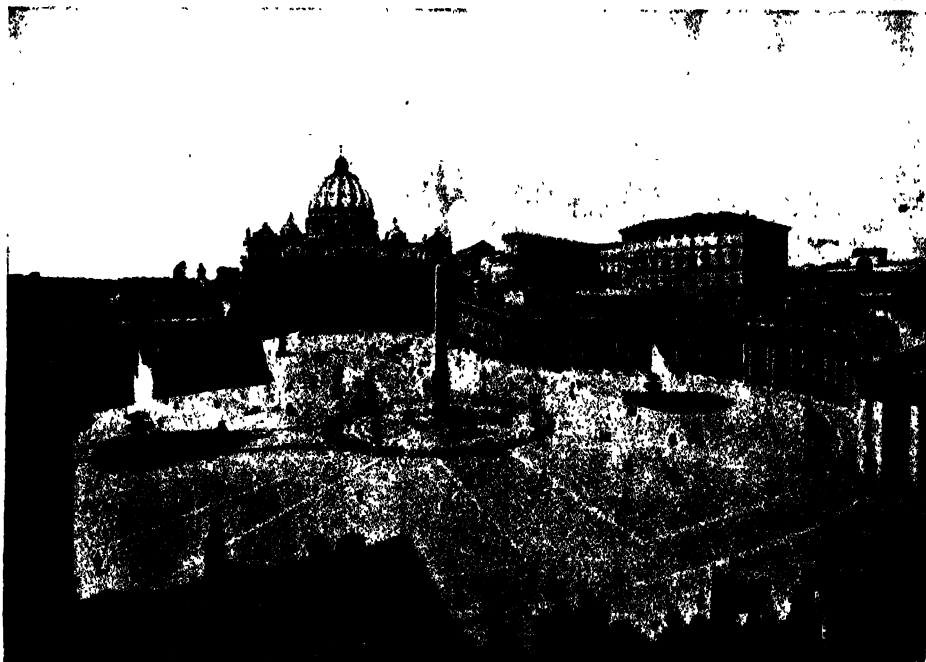
### **SPLendid Ruins of the Forum Romanum, One of the Finest Relics of Ancient Rome**

Here ancient Roman orators like Cicero, or agitators like Catiline, harangued an eager crowd, watched by city merchants and by worshippers coming from the many temples. On the left of the photograph is the line of pillars forming the portico of the temple built by the Emperor Antoninus in memory of Faustina, his wife. On the right, three columns remain of the great temple of Castor and Pollux, the warrior brothers of legend. In the background we see the Arch of Titus, built to commemorate the fall of Jerusalem.



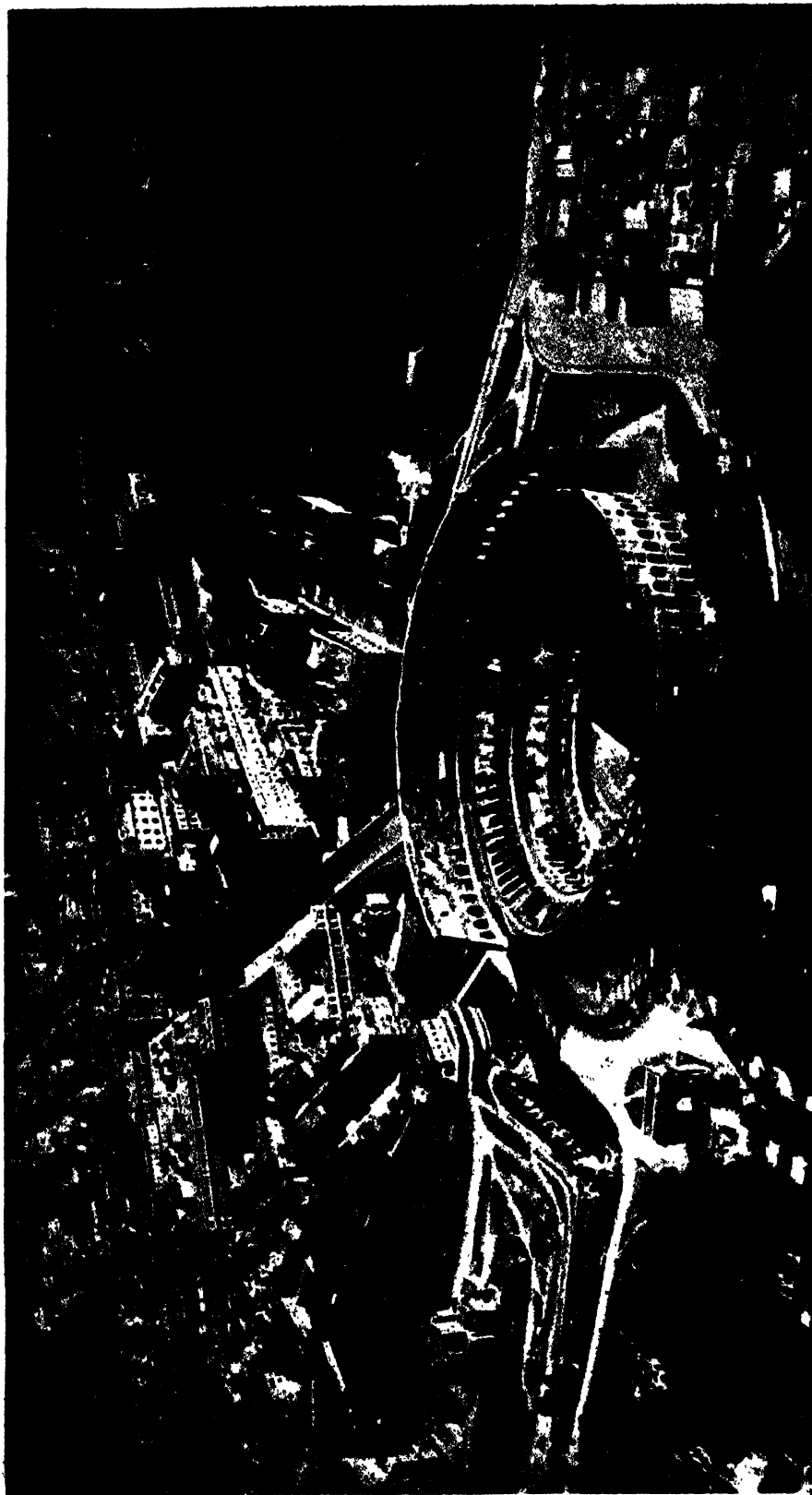
#### LOOKING OVER ROME FROM THE GREAT DOME OF S. PETER'S

From the dome of S. Peter's we see beside the Tiber the rounded Castle of Sant' Angelo, which was once the tomb of Roman emperors. It was rebuilt as a fortress by Pope Boniface IX., and when their safety was threatened by the turbulent factions of the city, the Popes fled from the Vatican by a covered passage to the massive Sant' Angelo.



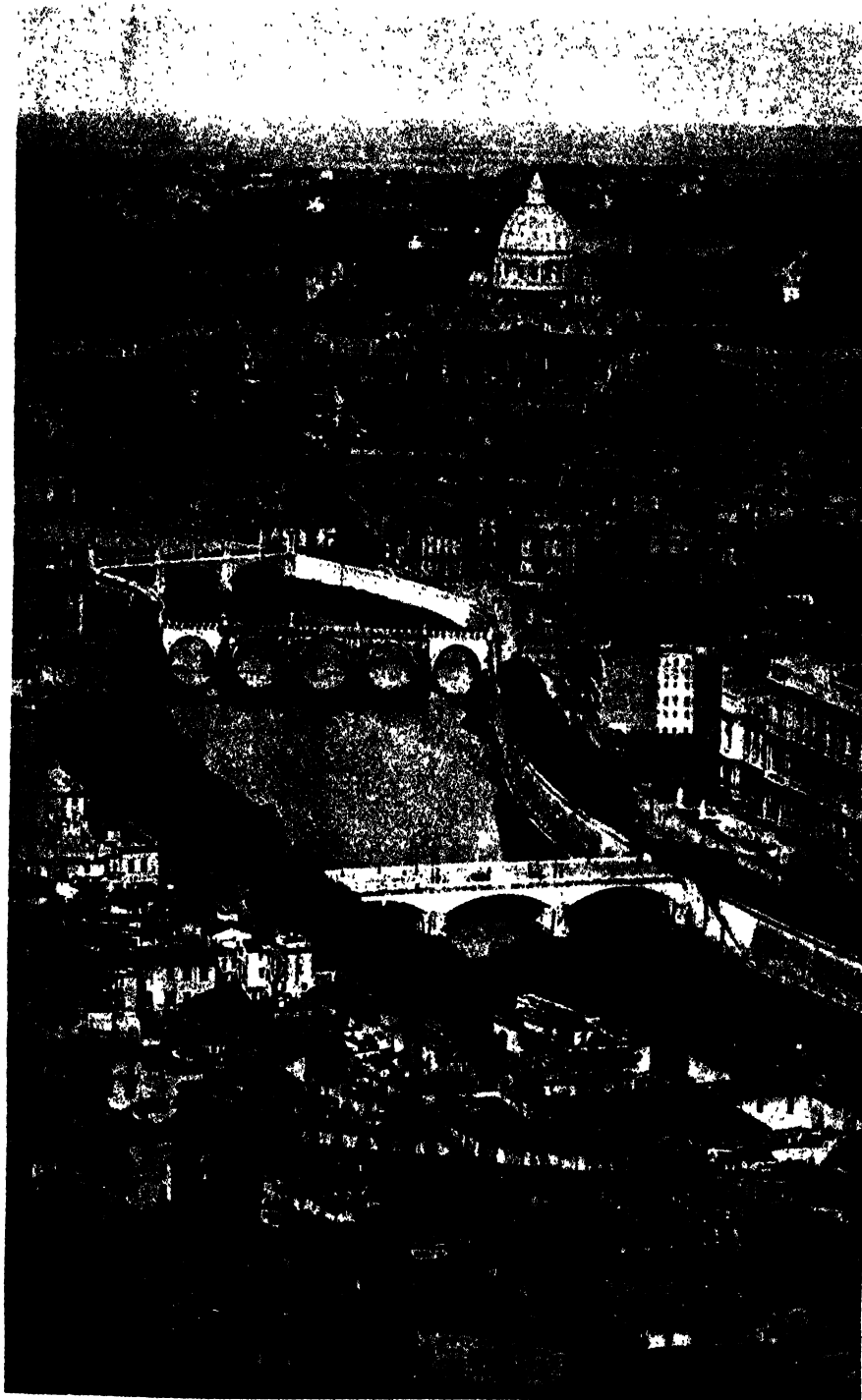
#### THE NOBLE WAY TO THE MOTHER CHURCH OF CHRISTENDOM

The great domed cathedral of S. Peter's was built on the site of a yet older church, which was erected to mark the burial place of the Apostle Peter. The present building slowly took its vast and unsymmetrical shape during a period of 120 years, under the care of some of the greatest Italian artists, such as Bramante, Raphael and Michelangelo.



Topical

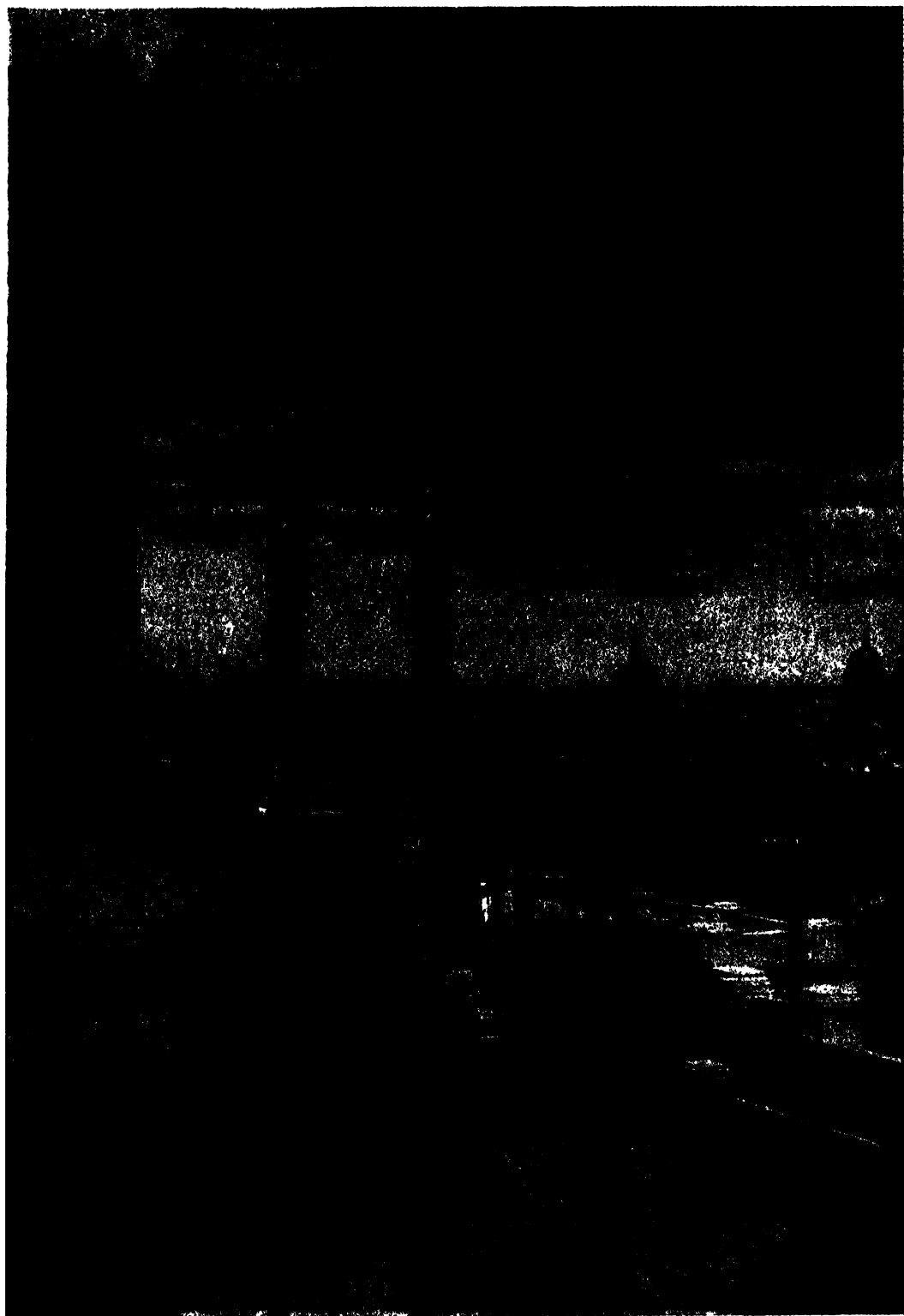
**THE MONSTER COLOSSEUM, WHERE EMPERORS WATCHED FIGHTS TO THE DEATH BETWEEN MAN AND BEAST**  
The Colosseum was said to be the scene of the massacres of Early Christians. Even if this is the truth, such a barbarous persecution was a rare entertainment compared with the combats of gladiators, or paid warriors. A common sight was the match between a man, called Retiarius, armed with net and trident, and another equipped with the round shield and short sword of Greek soldiers. At other times lions, tigers, bears, giraffes and ostriches were killed. Some of the emperors, notably Commodus, took part in these shows.



**S. PETER'S SPLENDOUR AND THE TIBER SEEN FROM THE AIR**

The five-arched bridge is the Ponte Sant' Angelo, originally built by the Emperor Hadrian to lead to the Castle Sant' Angelo, which he built as his tomb, but it has been altered since. Beyond S. Peter's is the rolling country of the Campagna, once the haunt of bands of brigands and marauding nobles, but now the delight of artists.





McLeish

THE ETERNAL CITY shows clean, red roofs after a shower. We can stand on this terrace of the monument to King Victor Emmanuel II., and, looking across Rome towards the domes of S. Andrea della Valla and S. Peter's, compare the new buildings of the city as it is to-day with the wonders that it displayed in olden times.



**IN THE COLOSSEUM** men fought animals before an audience of over 40,000 people. The tiers of seats within were reached through corridors lighted by the arched openings that we see. The Roman people enjoyed many spectacles, since the more cunning Emperors found they could buy their subjects' goodwill with free circuses and gifts of bread.



Gallery

**DIGNIFIED ROYAL PALAZZO DEL QUIRINALE SET ON ONE OF THE SEVEN HILLS OF ROME**

This palace, because of its airy and healthy situation on the Quirinal, of the period of Rome's imperial greatness—that are each 16½ feet high. These sculptures, which are magnificent both because of their size and the energy that they express, have never been hidden from sight since they were originally set up in the Baths of Constantine. was once a summer residence of the Popes. Since 1870 it has been the home of the Italian royal family. In the square before the structure are two superb marble groups of horse tamers—fragments



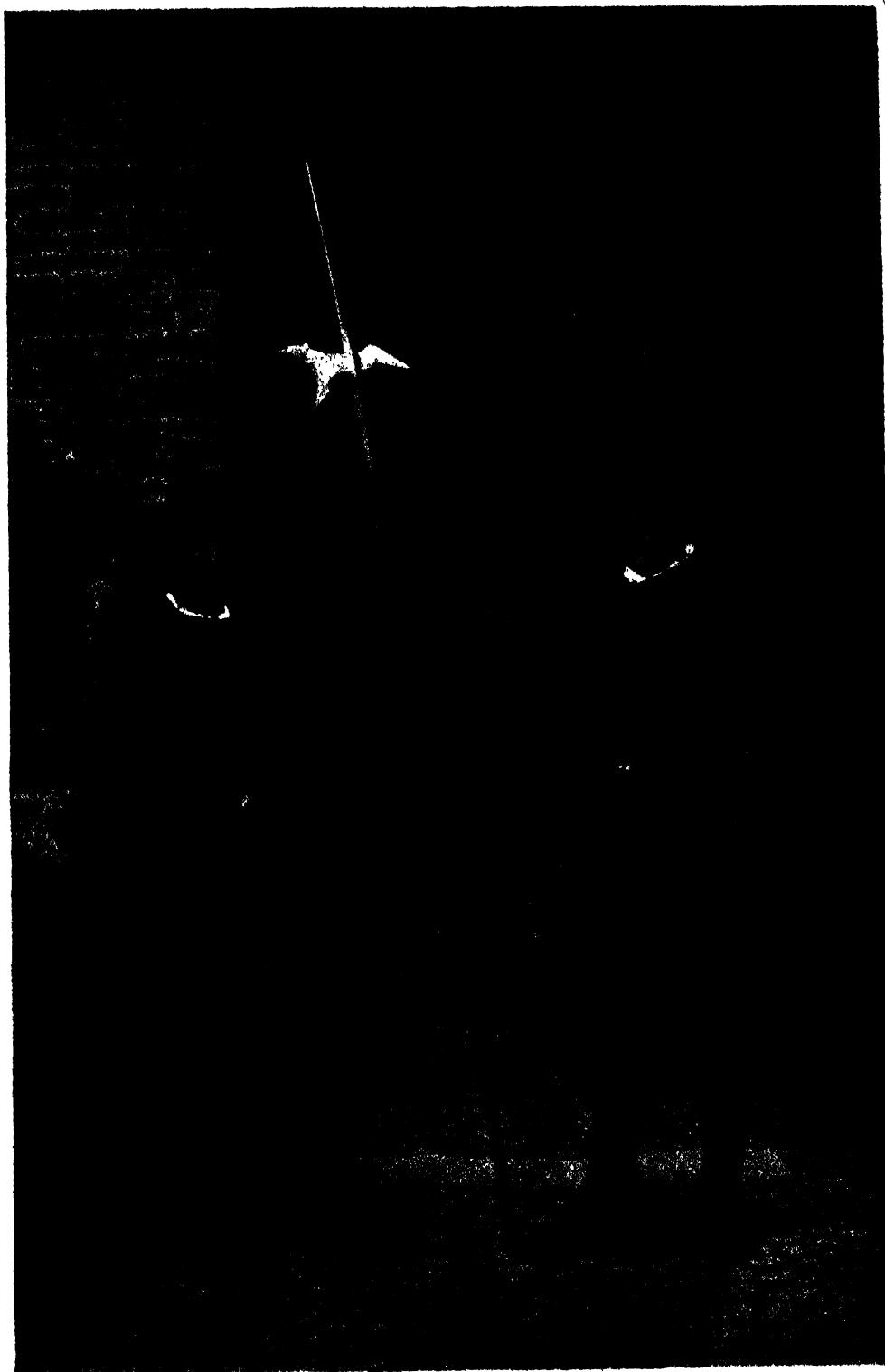
Musei

**S. PETERS BRIGHTLY GLEAMING DOME BEYOND THE TRIM, PEACE-FILLED GARDENS OF THE VATICAN**  
The great palace of the Vatican, containing chapels, libraries, picture style on the hillside. A part is gay with flowers; statuary and and sculpture galleries and collections of many kinds, is the residence shrines adorn walks and groves; and everything is arranged to of the Popes. Much of it is open to the public, including the very produce stately harmony. Science also has its place in these gardens, extensive gardens. These are laid out in an old-fashioned, Italian since what was once a pleasant summer-house is now an observatory.



**THE CARNATION SELLER**, in her quaint country dress, has a ready smile and a bunch of freshly gathered flowers for the likely customer. She has beautiful, classical features, such as we might see on an old statue or wall painting. The little fellow is very useful in getting custom among those who are inclined to admire the flowers from a distance.

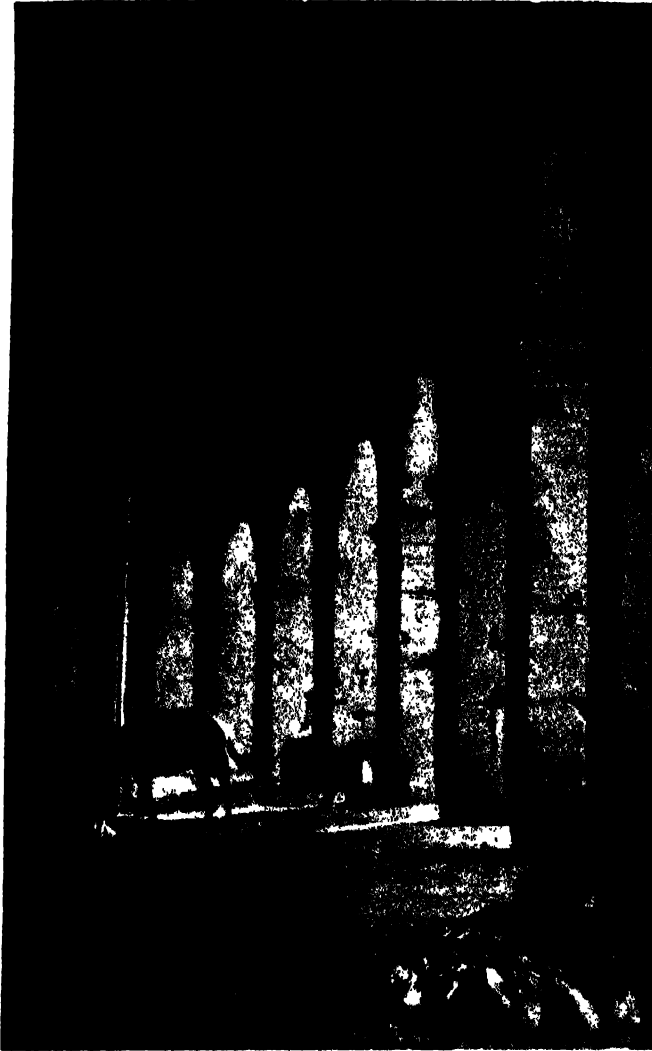
McLeish



McLach

**SWISS PONTIFICAL GUARDS** are always on duty at the Vatican, and form part of the Pope's train in processions. Their uniform has altered considerably through the centuries, and became really quite ugly, so in 1914-15 this very beautiful dress was provided for them. It is a copy of the clothes they wore over three hundred years ago.

## THE CITY THAT RULED THE WORLD



Felton

### OUTER CORRIDOR OF THE COLOSSEUM

The modern Roman shows little respect for past magnificence. This part of one of the Colosseum's great passages, which led to all parts of the amphitheatre, including the private gallery of the emperors, is now used as stable.

leaped into the chasm, which immediately closed again upon its victim.

The broken columns of the Forum and the ruined buildings are modern Rome's reminders of the days when ancient Rome was the mistress of a mighty empire and the centre of civilization.

One thing we shall notice in our wanderings through Rome is the great number of churches, most of them very handsome and impressive, and many of them full of great pictures and statues. Rome is really an enormous museum and art gallery, and it is quite impossible to see

all we should like to see unless we stay there for years. But the great cathedral of S. Peter's we must see. It is, perhaps, the most magnificent church in the world. One is dwarfed and awed by it. With its colonnaded piazza, its fountains and its yellowish-white stone glistening in the sun, it is like the vision of a New Jerusalem. The interior is equally imposing—a wilderness of marble and gold, and so vast that one is almost frightened by it.

Near by is the Vatican, which is the palace of the Popes. It, too, should be visited. Its galleries are crowded with famous works of art, and its gardens are a joy. The Popes had need of the palace grounds, for they never showed themselves outside S. Peter's and the Vatican after the Papal states and Rome became part of the kingdom of Italy in 1870. Since 1922, however, Pius XI. has left the Vatican once or twice to take part in certain ceremonies. The area on which the church and the palace stand belongs to the Pope, who, before the Italian soldiers marched into Rome in 1870, owned the whole of

Rome. He was then one of the greatest rulers in the world, and much of the splendid pomp of that period still remains in the Vatican.

We have seen enough for the moment. Let us now neglect the monuments of Rome and do as all the modern city does—take a walk in the Corso, the most fashionable street of Rome.

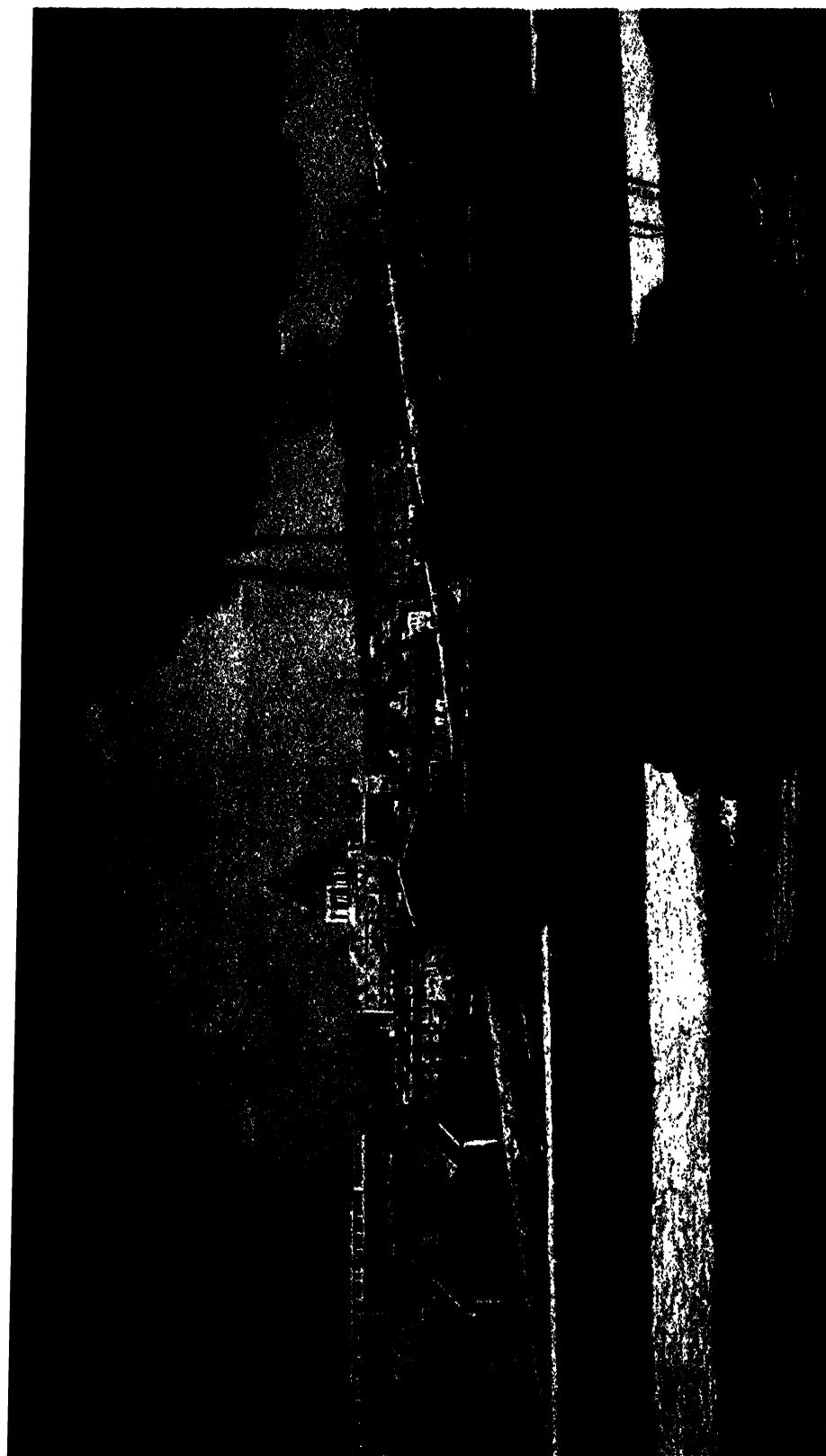
The Corso goes out from the Piazza del Popolo, a large, noble square with an old Egyptian obelisk rising from the centre. Above it are the Pincio gardens, which we shall find a very pleasant retreat on hot



**TRAJAN'S TRIUMPHAL COLUMN: NOW CROWNED BY S. PETER**

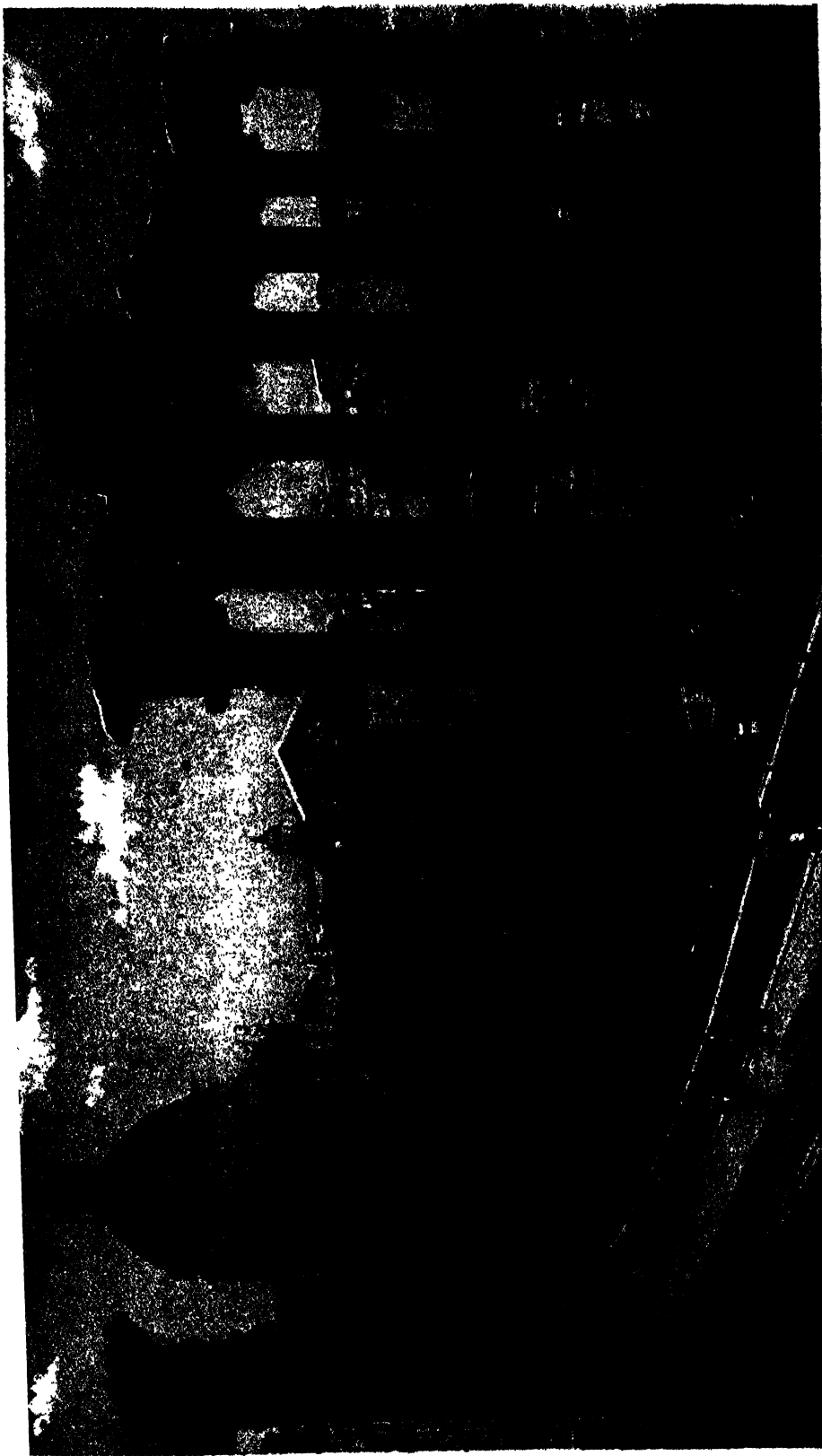
To commemorate his Dacian victories, Trajan erected this marble monument, round which runs a spiral band illustrating the emperor's campaigns, with pictures of soldiers, animals and war-engines—660 feet of figures. Beyond the column is the church of the Santissimo Nome di Maria, a thankoffering for Vienna's deliverance from the Turks in 1683.





**FROM THE PINCIO GARDENS** we look across a modern quarter of the city to the glittering white mass of S. Peter's on the farther bank of the Tiber, and, to the left of this church, to the Palazzo di Giustizia. The Pincio, which is a favourite resort of the Romans in the cool of evening, was turned from a vineyard to pleasure-grounds at the beginning of the nineteenth century; but it was not the first time that it had been laid out in such a fashion, since Lucullus, a Roman soldier and epicure who died in 57 B.C., had a garden here.

McLellan



have been a magnificent building; it was approached by a lofty flight of steps. The splendid church of Santa Martina e Luca, which was first built in the seventh century, on the ruins of the hall in which the Senate of ancient Rome held its secret meetings, faces the temple.

**THE TEMPLE OF SATURN**, now reduced to eight meaningless pillars, looms above the triumphal arch of the Emperor Severus, on the Capitoline Hill. In early times the public treasure was stored in the Temple of Saturn, which, from the remains still existing, must

## THE CITY THAT RULED THE WORLD

afternoons, or round about five o'clock, when the band plays and all Rome walks out among its broad walks and drives, its flowers from every land, its great marble basins with fountains brimming over and its multitude of statues. A very pleasant spot it is, with its perfume, laughter and colour, and its wonderful view over Rome. But we must leave it now for the Corso.

This is not a very exciting street to look at. Here a palace, there a church, now some public building and now a monument, but for the most part low houses, with more jutting balconies and verandas than we have ever seen before.

The Corso is a kind of public drawing-room, in which all Rome rubs shoulders. Friend meets friend. All the gossip of the day here passes from mouth to mouth: chatter, chatter, chatter; jostle, jostle, jostle—and then a cup of coffee at a nearby restaurant, say the "Colonna" or the "Fagiano" in the busy Piazza

Colonna about half-way down the street. This social life of Rome is very agreeable. It is always pleasant and instructive, after a day of sightseeing, to take a stroll through the town and watch the people enjoying themselves.

They are more harmless pleasures than those indulged in by the ancient Romans. Gladiatorial combats are no longer seen in Rome. Many centuries have passed since the Colosseum echoed to the cries of the gladiators and the roaring of hungry lions. What a sad ruin this Colosseum is, with its memories of tragedy! As Charles Dickens has said, to look upon it is to see the ghost of old Rome. It is still imposing enough, despite its ruin, to awe us; its solemnity and vastness, grandeur and majesty, and the hard, cruel nature of its purpose sums up the greatness and the ruthlessness of the city which once ruled the world and gave its laws as an example to every nation that followed it.



McLain

### ROME'S FAMOUS CORSO WHERE RIDERLESS HORSES RACED

The Corso, which is a short name for the Corso Umberto Primo, is nearly a mile in length, and perfectly straight. At one time during the Carnival, which is still held every year, riderless horses were made to race along it. It follows the route of the old Via Flaminia and passes near the supposed site of S. Paul's meeting-house.

# Ceylon the Isle of Jewels

## ITS PEOPLES AND ITS JUNGLE-BURIED CITIES

The tea-gardens of this fragrant island of the East are not like those to which we give that name in our own island. The tea is grown in them : it is sipped in ours. The writer of this chapter knows Ceylon very intimately, and while I would have thought of it chiefly for its tea plantations, my contributor is most impressed by its wealth of precious stones and by the jungle-hidden ruins of mighty cities that flourished in it long ago.

**I**F we go to Ceylon by sea we shall have a journey of over 7,000 miles before getting there. Our steamer will then arrive at Colombo, the capital of the island and now one of the finest harbours in the East. It is not a natural harbour, but has been made one at great cost and labour; the best natural harbour, Trincomalee, is placed away up on the north-east coast, where it is not easy to reach.

Ceylon is about half the size of England and Wales. The shores are low-lying, sandy and, for the most part, palm-fringed, but in the interior, particularly in the southern half of the island, the land rises and is very irregular. Mount Pedro (8,296 feet) is the highest peak and near it is a health resort named Nuwara Eliya. This is not such a difficult name to pronounce as it looks, because it is called Nuraylia. This settlement is over 6,000 feet above the sea, and the climate is delightful, something like that of parts of the highlands of Scotland.

It is necessary for white people who live in Ceylon to have a place like this to which they can go when the low country gets too hot. But Ceylon, for a tropical country, is healthy, and there is some rain almost every month of the year, though not much in the north.

### *Flowers All the Year Round*

What seems to us especially wonderful is that there are flowers and shrubs blooming all the year round. Tulip trees covered with gorgeous scarlet blossoms, cassia bushes with hanging or upright flowers of sulphur-colour or terra-cotta, bushes called datura, covered with white and purple flowers like convolvulus, a climbing

flower in the hedges resembling scarlet honeysuckle, huge yellow-leaved crotons and misty blue plumbago. These are only a very few of the glorious flowers that can be seen on the island.

When we land at Colombo, it is the colour that attracts attention first. The emerald-green water of the harbour shows up the gay figures of the men standing on the wharf in their garments of pink and green and yellow. One tall, old man with snowy, flowing garments, who looks like a priest, is a Sinhalese gentleman. Close beside him, between the shafts of a rickshaw, is a little dark man with a smiling face, and fuzzy hair sticking out from under a red fez or cap. He is a Tamil, and we notice that he wears a thin khaki-coloured jacket and has a cloth tucked around his loins.

### *Warrior Hero of Old Ceylon*

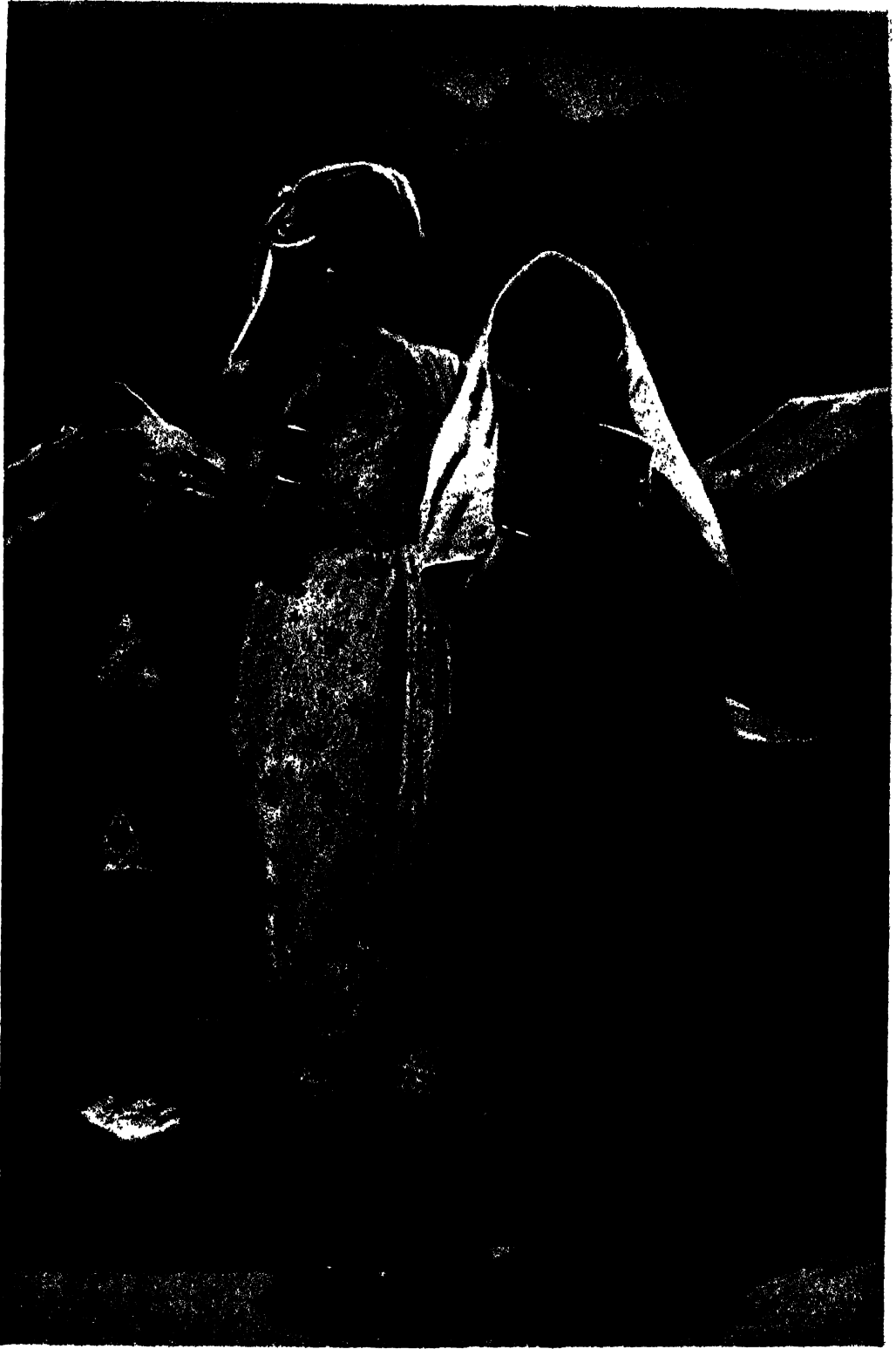
These two men are of entirely different races and beliefs. The Sinhalese, who are Buddhists, ruled the island before the Hindu Tamils came from India. But even before them were some wild men of a low civilization called Veddas. There are still a few Veddas left, but they live hidden away in the deep jungles of the eastern part of Ceylon.

The Sinhalese have a long history, reaching back to 500 years before Christ. Some of the stories of their ancient kings are as fine as anything in history. There was the great Dutugemunu, who had adventures enough to make a book for boys. His father had been defeated by the Tamil usurper Elala, who came over from the mainland of southern India. But Dutugemunu trained himself in all feats of arms, and when he was old enough



Stevens

**THE TAMILS OF CEYLON**, two of whom are shown here performing a native dance, make up a quarter of the population of the island, of which two-thirds are Sinhalese. For many hundreds of years Sinhalese and Tamil have battled for supremacy, but they now live peacefully together, though the former are Buddhists and the latter Hindus.



E. N. A.

**NOSE AND TOE RINGS** are worn by many of the graceful Tamil girls who earn their living in the tea gardens of Ceylon. The Tamil people are a small and slightly-built race, but they are very hard workers, and it takes a great deal to tire them. They came originally as invaders from southern India in the second century before Christ.

## CEYLON THE ISLE OF JEWELS

challenged Elala to a single combat on elephants and killed him. The Tamils continued through the ages to raid and fight the Sinhalese, and they were often the stronger. Many settled down and intermarried with the Sinhalese, and to-day both live peaceably together under British rule.

### *Training the Rickshaw Coolie*

But before the British came there had been other conquerors. The Portuguese came first, for in the sixteenth century the Portuguese were among the most adventurous of the exploring and trading nations. They settled on the coast, and stayed there for a hundred years or more until they had to give way to the Dutch. At the end of the eighteenth century the British took Ceylon from them. All this time there had still been native kings in the interior, and the last kings had settled at Kandy, a town in the very middle of the island.

Besides the Sinhalese, who form by far the largest part of the population, the Tamils, who come next, and the Veddas, who are but a handful, there are Mahomedan Moormen, the descendants of Arab traders, and a mixed population with Portuguese and Dutch blood in them, as well as Europeans proper.

The Tamils are sturdy, hardworking people; as we have seen, it is they who run in the rickshaws. This is a trade that goes from father to son. We may sometimes see a tiny brown tot, who staggers rather uncertainly as he runs, following his father on some open, grassy space. The man dodges this way and that, encouraging his little son. When he thinks the child has had enough he stops awhile to let him get his breath, and then begins again.

### *Heaps of Glittering Gems*

The open-fronted shops of Colombo are filled with richly coloured silks and fine embroideries, copper and brass and ivory ware, and some show jewels like those that dazzled the eyes of Aladdin. Here are stones which have been discovered in the island, lying in glistening piles. Moonstones are found chiefly in Ceylon and

in very few other places. The sapphires gleam deep blue like the sea in a tropical zone, or else are the faint, pure blue that we in England see sometimes in our rain-washed skies. Close against them are the gorgeous topazes, and beyond them again, piles of clear but light coloured rubies. As a rule the rubies of Ceylon are not so good as those of Burma. There are many other stones to be seen here—beryls, catseyes, zircons and jacinths.

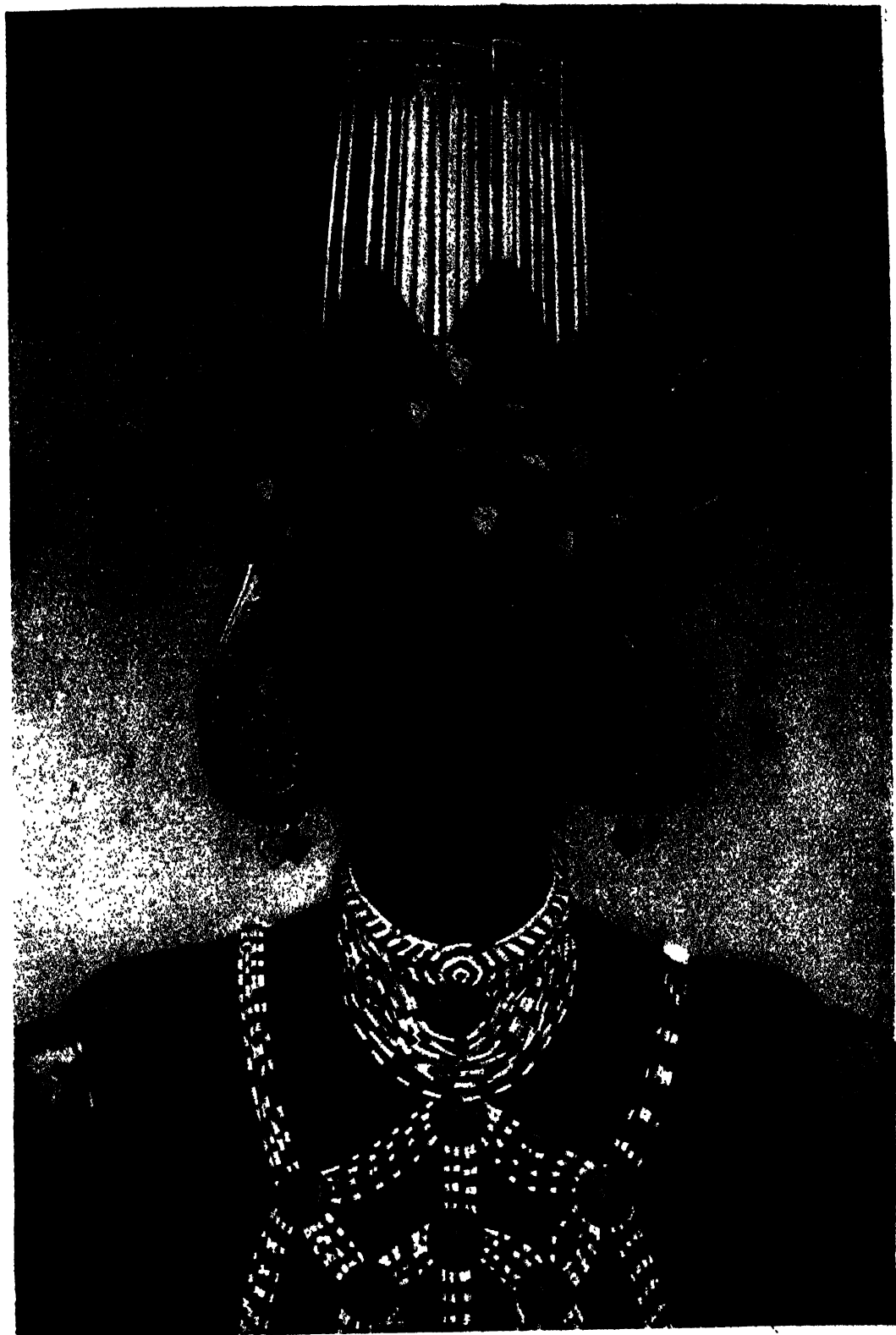
But the pearls of Ceylon are the finest of her jewels. The odd thing is that the fishing season lasts only from one to two months in the early spring. The main pearl fisheries were formerly over on the east side by Trincomalce, but the pearl oyster is changeable in its ways, and year by year the catch declined in value until it dropped to nothing at all. At the same time this particular kind of oyster appeared, as once before, on the west side, in the sand of the Gulf of Manaar, close under the shelter of the chain of islets known as Adam's Bridge, which links Ceylon to India.

### *Divers and Devil-Dancers*

Experts knew that pearl oysters would never thrive on sand, so, as there are long, rocky ledges covered by the warm sea water farther south, they carefully collected some of the "spat," as the young oysters are called, and, keeping them sprayed with sea-water all the while, transferred them there. This was in 1921, and now the experiment has proved successful. Hundreds of boats, rigged with the primitive, square sails of the East, make their way there early in the year.

Many Tamils and Moormen earn a good living as divers, making enough in the short season to keep them all the year round. They dive as many times as they can during the morning, for by midday diving ceases. Then the bags of oysters are sealed by a government inspector and taken ashore, where they are counted, the government taking two-thirds and the men one-third of the catch.

Ceylon devil-dancers are well known to everyone who has been in the East. Their amazing costumes and astonishing antics



**THIS "DEVIL DANCER"** of Kandy, with his marvellous jingling head-dress of brass, thinks that, by dancing himself into a frenzy with other queerly dressed men, he will frighten away the devil that possesses a sick man. At least, the Tamils used once to believe that, but now they often dance in the hope of collecting money from interested travellers.



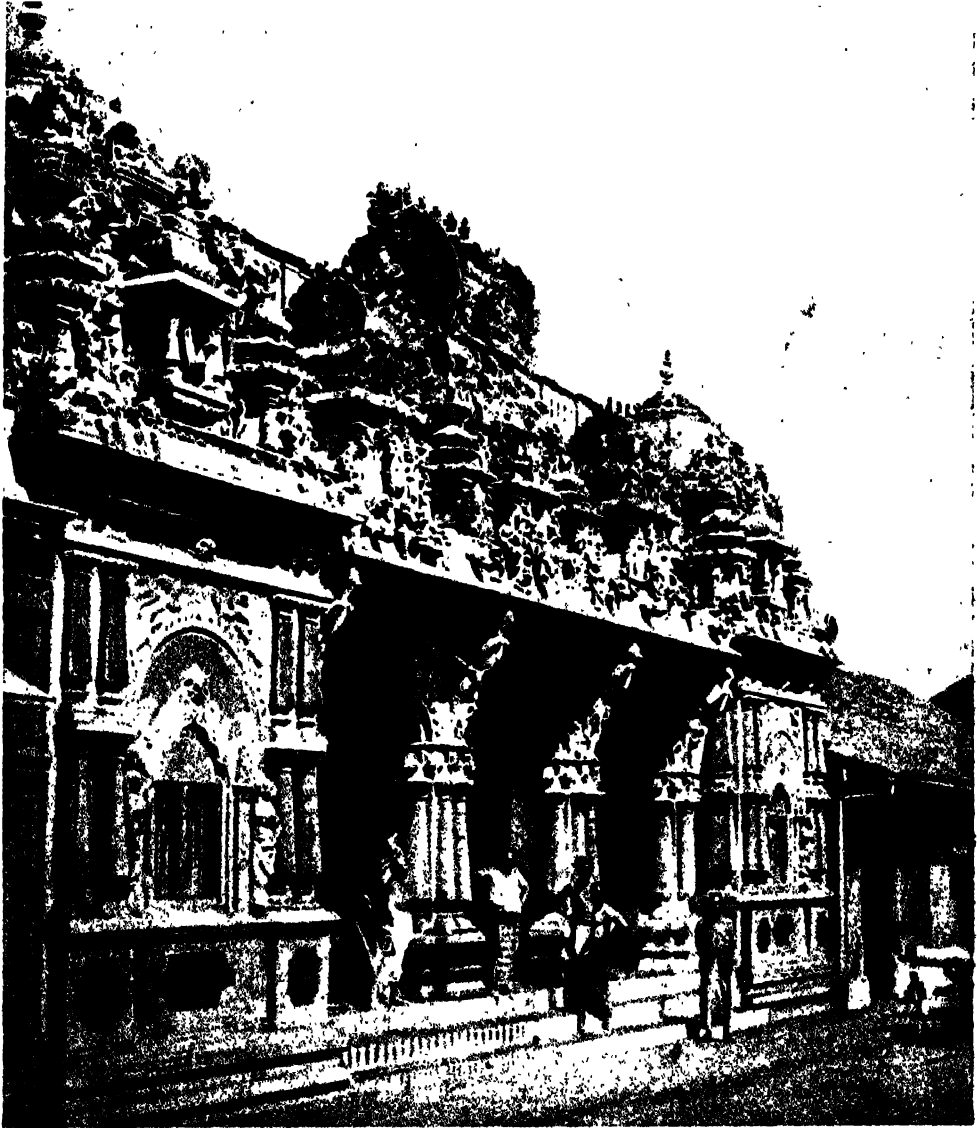
## CEYLON THE ISLE OF JEWELS

thrill the onlookers. In the old days they claimed to be able to heal the sick by driving out devils, but now their performance is merely for money. To tempt money from the pockets of visitors, jugglers also do incredible feats, but the snake-charmers are always the greatest attraction. These men train their pets until the snakes seem mesmerised, and do whatever they wish.

Huge cobras, seven or eight feet long, fix their wicked, flickering, little eyes on their

master, and, rising from their coils, sway to and fro in tune to his piping. Finally they coil round his neck and nestle against his cheek, meek and obedient. These men really have some secret power not known to everyone, and they can call forth wild snakes from holes most mysteriously.

We must leave Colombo and go up-country. There are many ways of doing this. The railways are very good as far as they go, though naturally there are



**HINDU TEMPLE IN COLOMBO, CAPITAL OF CEYLON**

The native quarter of Colombo is known as the Pettah, and in Sea Street, leading out of its market place, are two curious Hindu temples. They are both elaborately decorated with figures of gods and goddesses, elephants and various beasts. In Sea Street live the dealers in cotton and rice, mostly Tamils, and therefore Hindus.



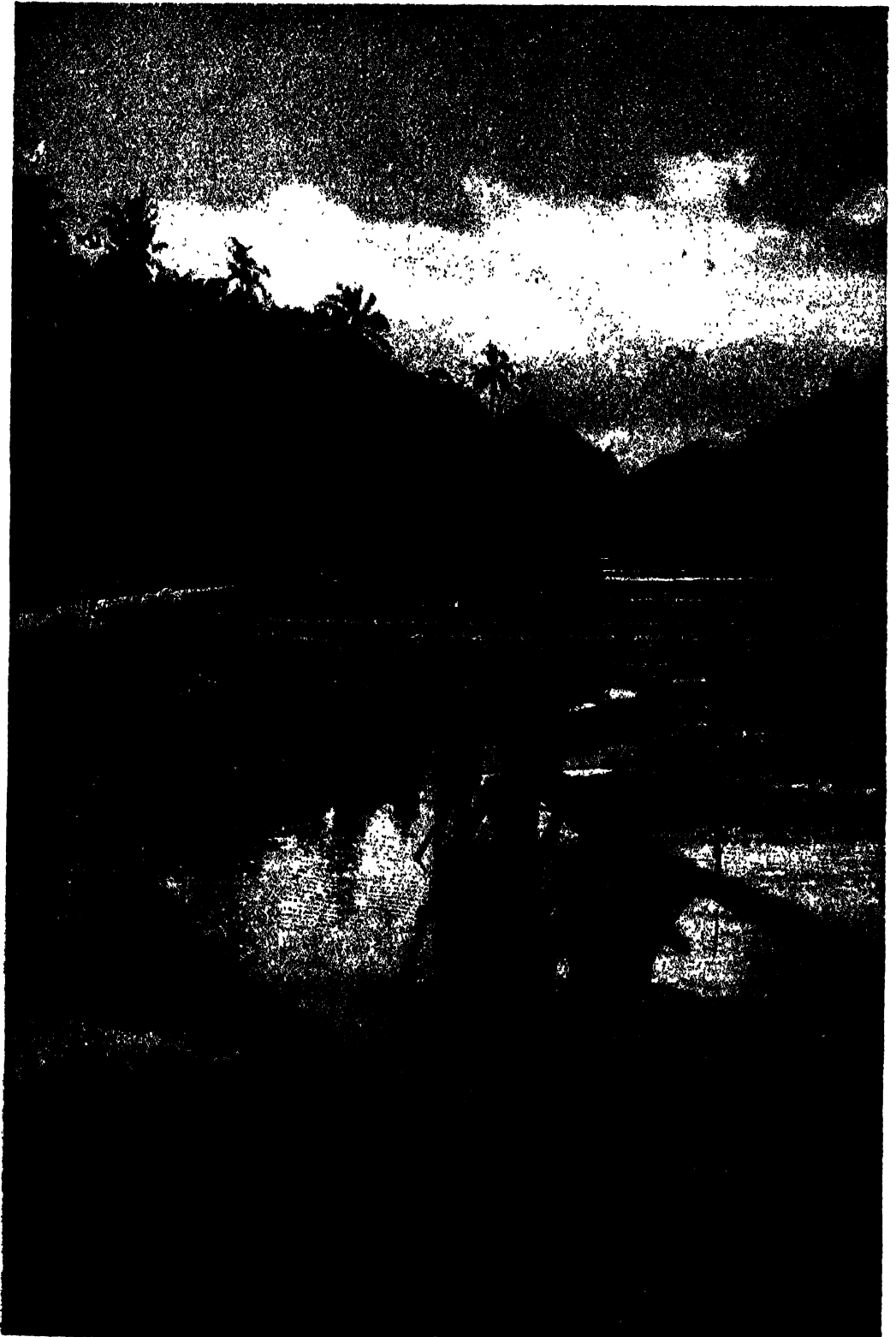
#### **COLOMBO'S BUSINESS QUARTER HAS FINE MODERN BUILDINGS**

The business part of Colombo lies near the harbour, on its south side. A fort was built here by the Portuguese four hundred years ago and rebuilt by the Dutch, and so the whole quarter is still known as The Fort. This photograph shows us some of the great modern business houses that have been erected in Prince Street.

not many branch lines. The roads are excellent; they were begun in the beginning of the nineteenth century by a boy named Thomas Skinner, who came out when he was only fourteen as an ensign in the Army. He was told by his commanding officer to go off up country and make roads. He had not the faintest idea how to begin; but he set to work and found out. The roads, when he started work upon them, were mere jungle tracks, but he gave them such sound foundations that they have remained good ever since.

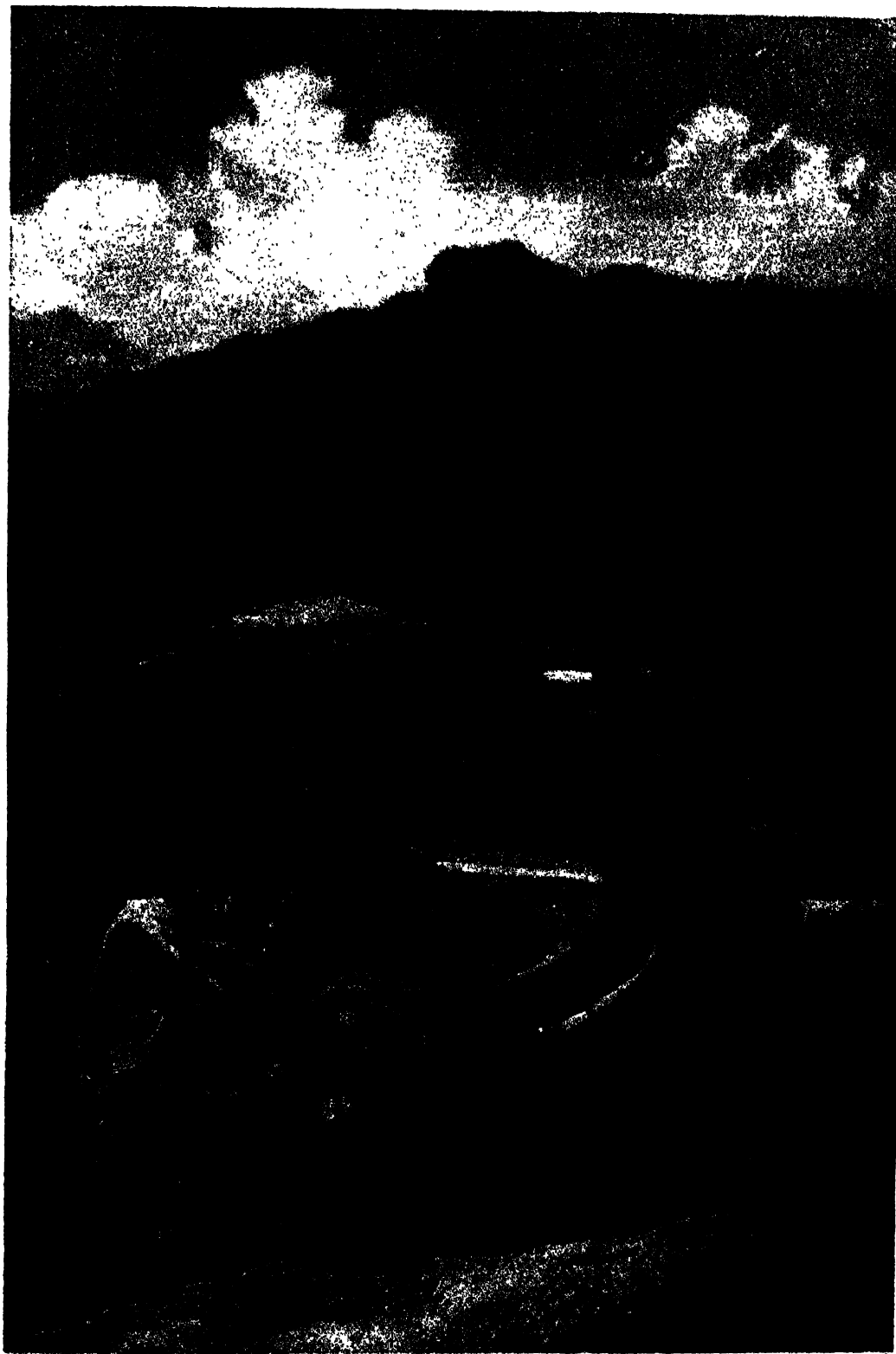
We might go about the island by native boat, for Ceylon is so cut up by waterways, especially near the coast, and has so many fine rivers that we might travel far this way. It was the way people went before railways were made. The bamboo and thatch boats, the pretty villages, the growth of flowering shrubs by the water-courses, the many different birds and animals on the banks make this method very pleasant. But it takes a long time.

The railways are wonderfully built, running in places on terraces cut out of



Underwood

**RICE FIELDS** are found in all Eastern countries, for rice is a very popular native food. Ceylon, however, cannot grow all that she needs because she does not everywhere get enough rain to feed such thirsty plants. Much of her water comes from a wonderful system of irrigation tanks that was installed centuries ago by a long dead civilization.



Underwood

**THE TEA GARDENS** of Ceylon are now the island's chief source of wealth, and those we illustrate here in the Dimbula district, near Nuwara Eliya, are some of the finest. Only fifty or sixty years ago, however, coffee was grown on these fertile hillsides, but then a fungus attacked and killed all the coffee plants, and so the tea industry was started instead.



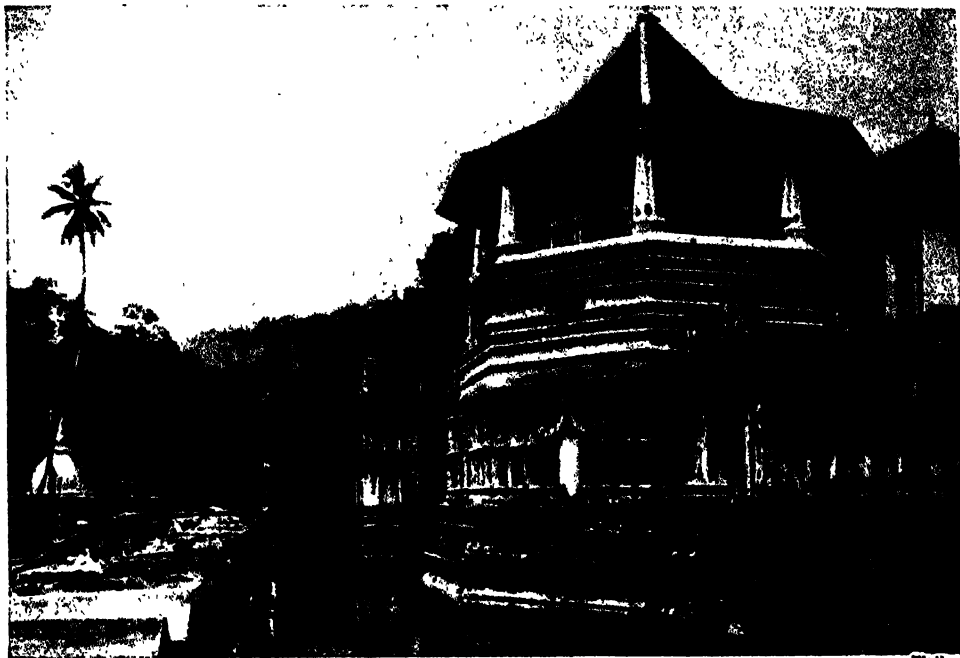
# **A FORTRESS-PALACE ONCE CROWNED THE GREAT ROCK OF SIGIRI**

In the fifth century A.D. Kasyapa, a wicked king of Ceylon, made this great rock into a stronghold by building a palace on its summit, which was reached by a spiral gallery. Parts of this gallery still remain, and adventurous people have climbed the dangerous path to the top, and cleared away the earth that covered the wonderful ruins.



# **WHERE BUDDHA TROD TWO THOUSAND FIVE HUNDRED YEARS AGO**

This little wooden canopy, built high on the top of a precipitous mountain called Sumana, or Adam's Peak, is visited every year by a great stream of Buddhist pilgrims. For in the rock sheltered beneath it is a mark like the imprint of a human foot, which is believed by all true Buddhists to be the footprint of the Lord Buddha himself.



Walker

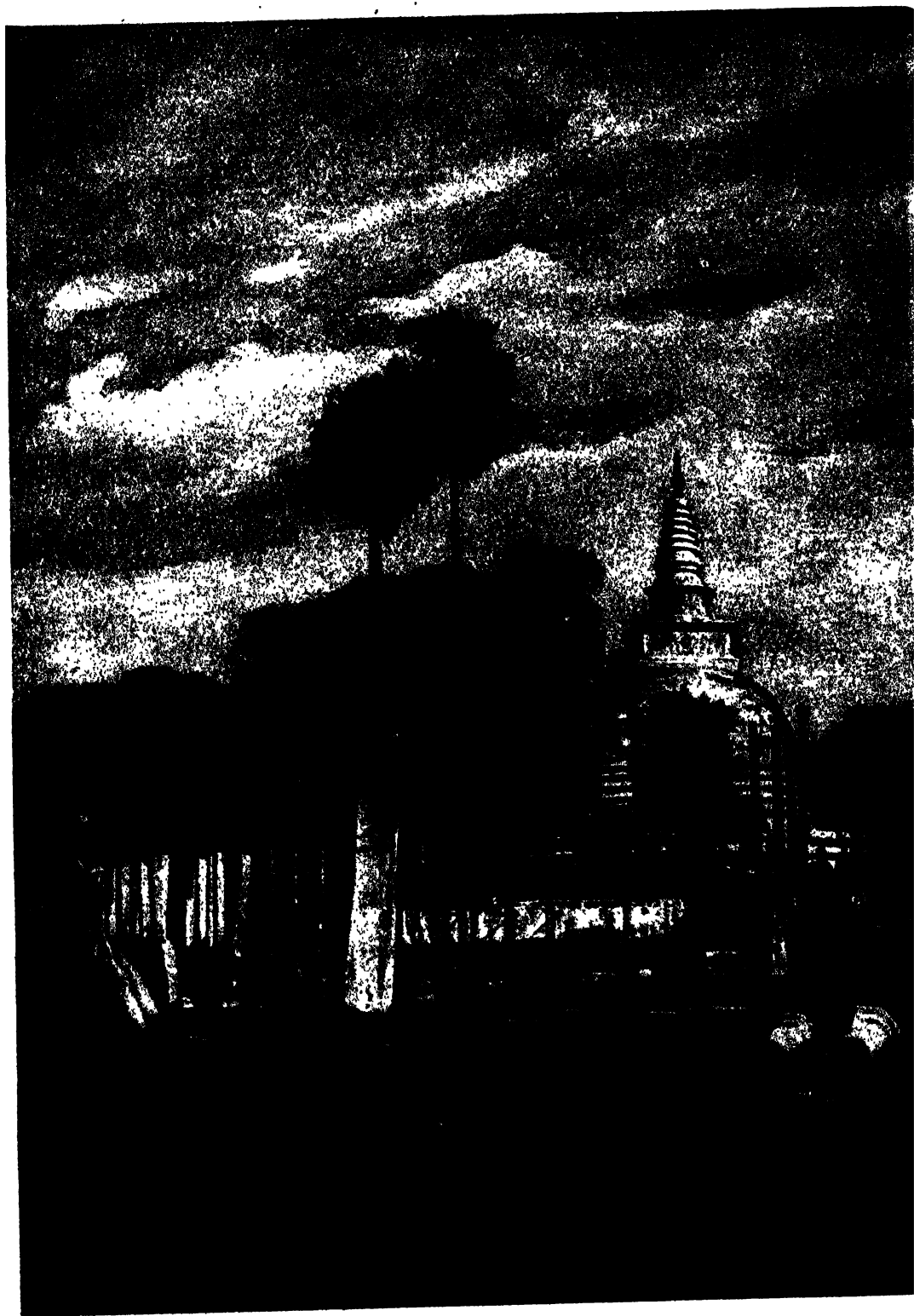
#### **A FAMOUS BUDDHIST SHRINE: THE TEMPLE OF THE TOOTH**

The Daladá Maligáwá, or Temple of the Tooth, a shrine held in great veneration by Buddha's followers because it is said to contain one of his teeth, is in Kandy, Ceylon's old capital, which is built high in the mountains round an artificial lake. Tortoises thrive in the moat of the temple, for no Buddhist will hurt a living creature.

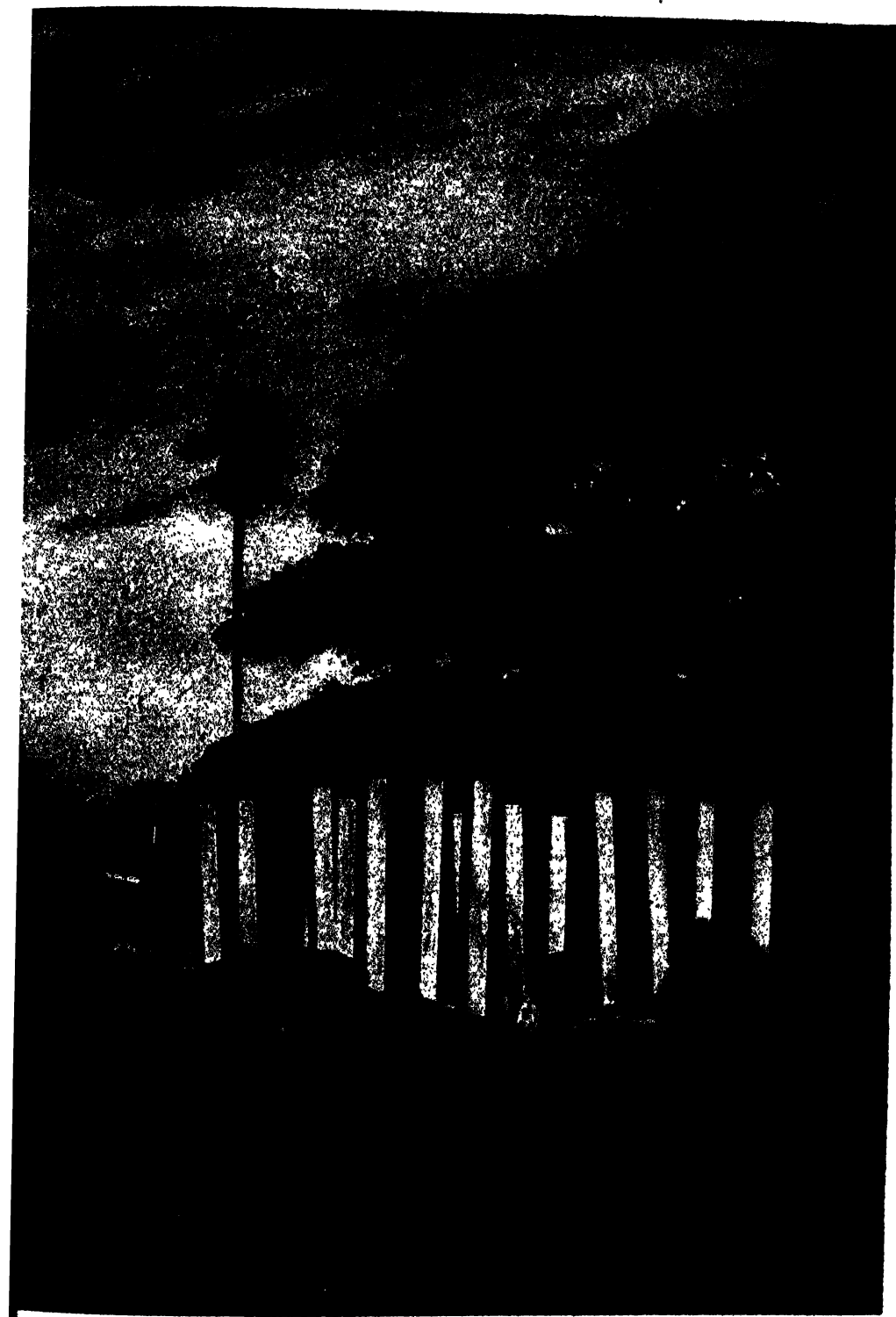


#### **KANDY'S RELIC ATTRACTS A CONSTANT STREAM OF PILGRIMS**

The sacred tooth of Buddha was brought to Ceylon, in A.D. 311, concealed in the hair of a fugitive princess, and a wonderful temple was built to receive it at Anuradhapura. In the fourteenth century Indian invaders carried it off, but it was ransomed. History says that later the Portuguese destroyed it, but Buddhists declare it is safe in its shrine.



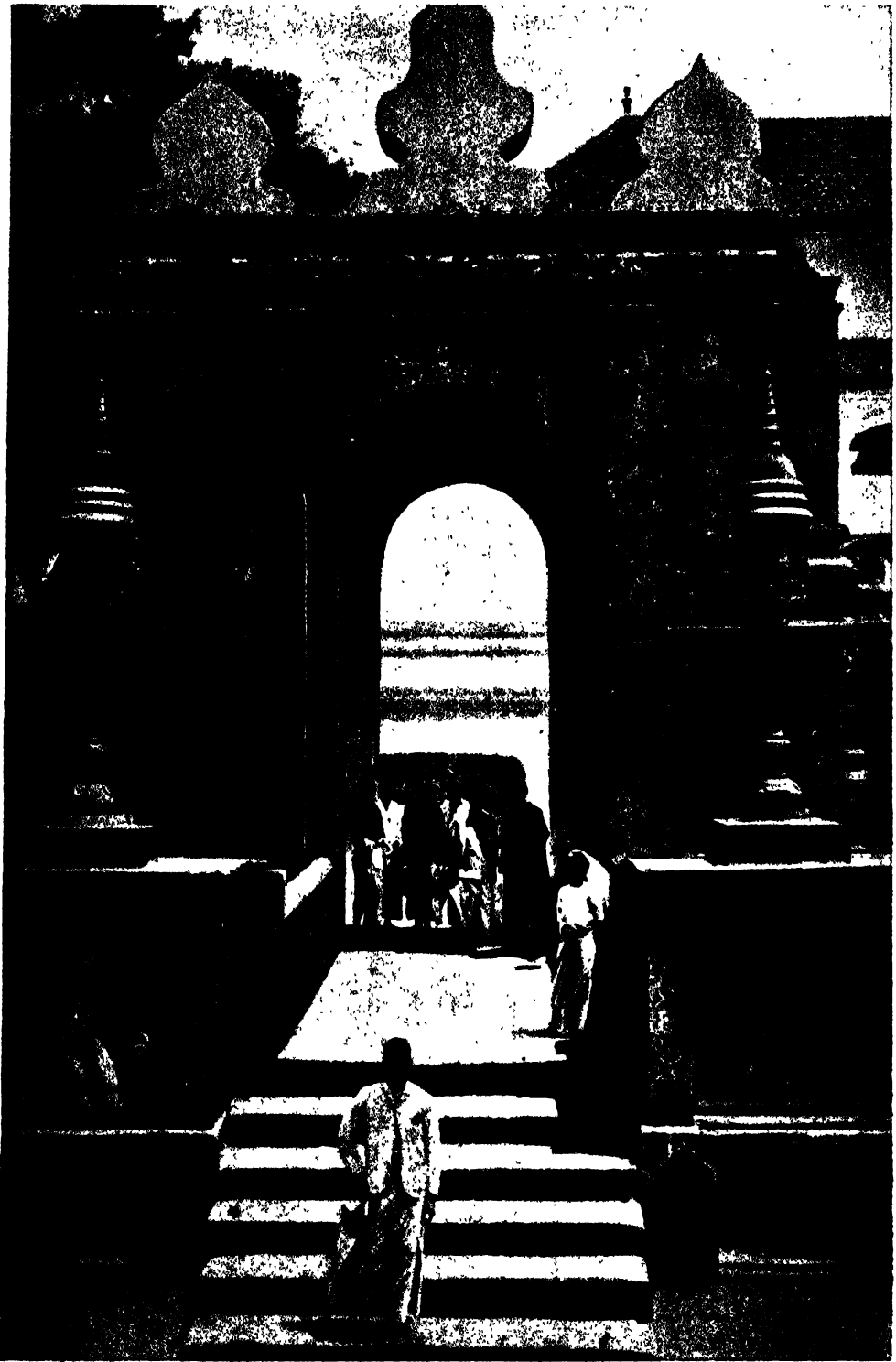
**THE CITY OF ANURADHAPURA** covered 250 square miles of land when Buddhism came to Ceylon about 307 B.C. It is now in ruins, and the Sinhalese civilization that founded it has disappeared. But it was once so rich in gold work and gems that it was often sacked by Tamils from India. At last, the Sinhalese deserted it for Polonnaruwa.



E. S. A.

The temple, or dagoba, shown here is the Thuparama, built by King Tissa to contain the collarbone of Buddha. It is small compared with the other ancient dagobas, but is 65 feet high, and is made of solid brick covered by a marble-like plaster. On the platform round it were 176 beautifully carved columns, though now there are only thirty-one.





E.N.A.

#### **GATEWAY THROUGH WHICH PASS MANY THOUSANDS OF PILGRIMS**

The Temple of the Tooth, the Daladā Maligawā, though it is so famous a shrine, is not specially remarkable as a building. Indeed, its old gateway with elaborate stone carvings is usually considered its greatest beauty. In this temple are preserved some very ancient manuscripts, some written in the Pali language and some in Sanskrit.



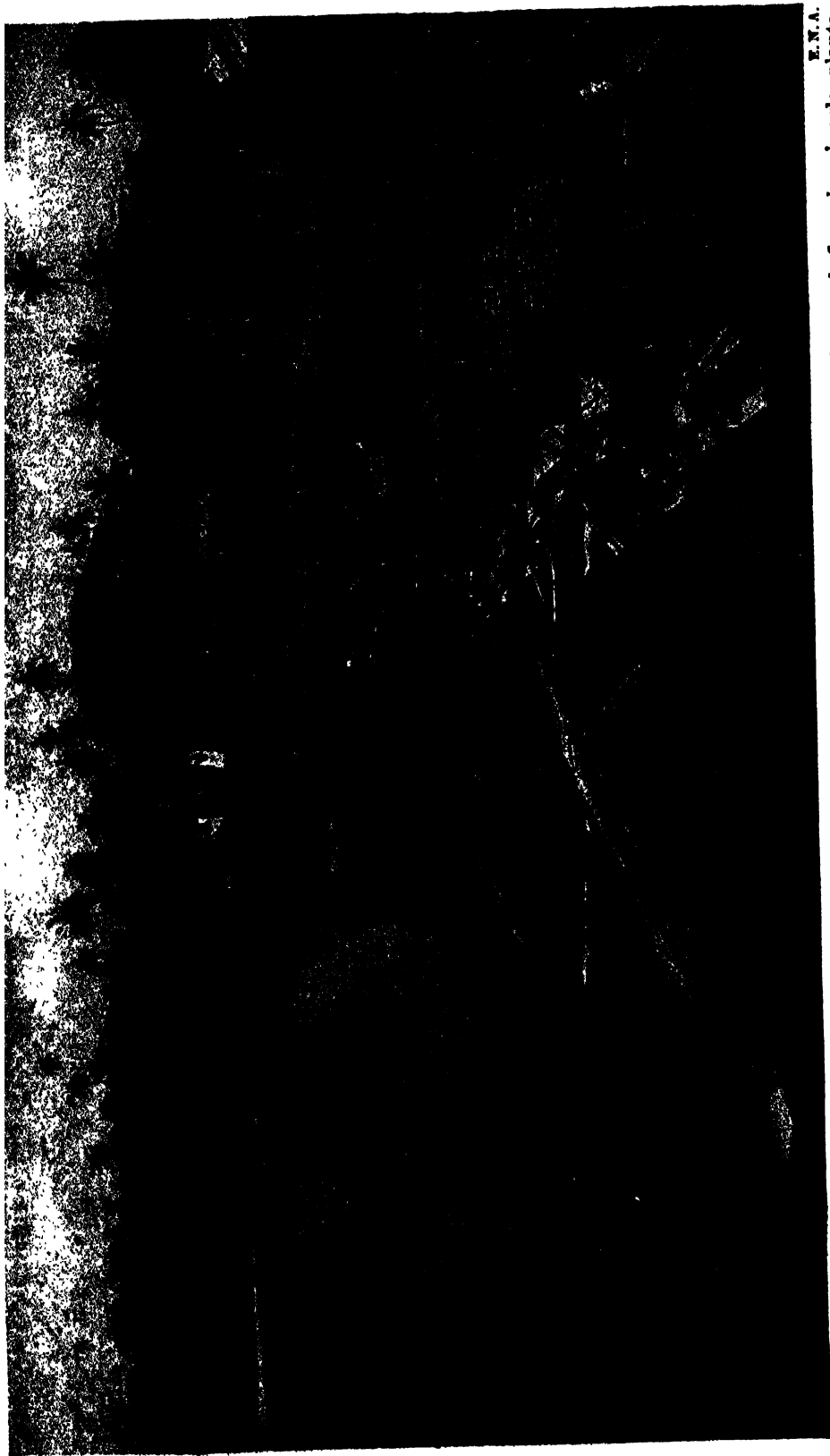
### **CURIOUS CARRIAGE SEEN IN THE STREETS OF KANDY**

The wealthy little island of Ceylon has at least as much wild jungle as cultivated land. Her roads are very good, and even some of those that run through the deepest jungle are used by motor-cars and motor-buses. The native, however, when he goes driving, prefers his two-wheeled carriage, drawn by a pair of strong, but slow, little bullocks.



### **CROUCHING SINHALESE WOMEN POUNDING PLUMBAGO TO POWDER**

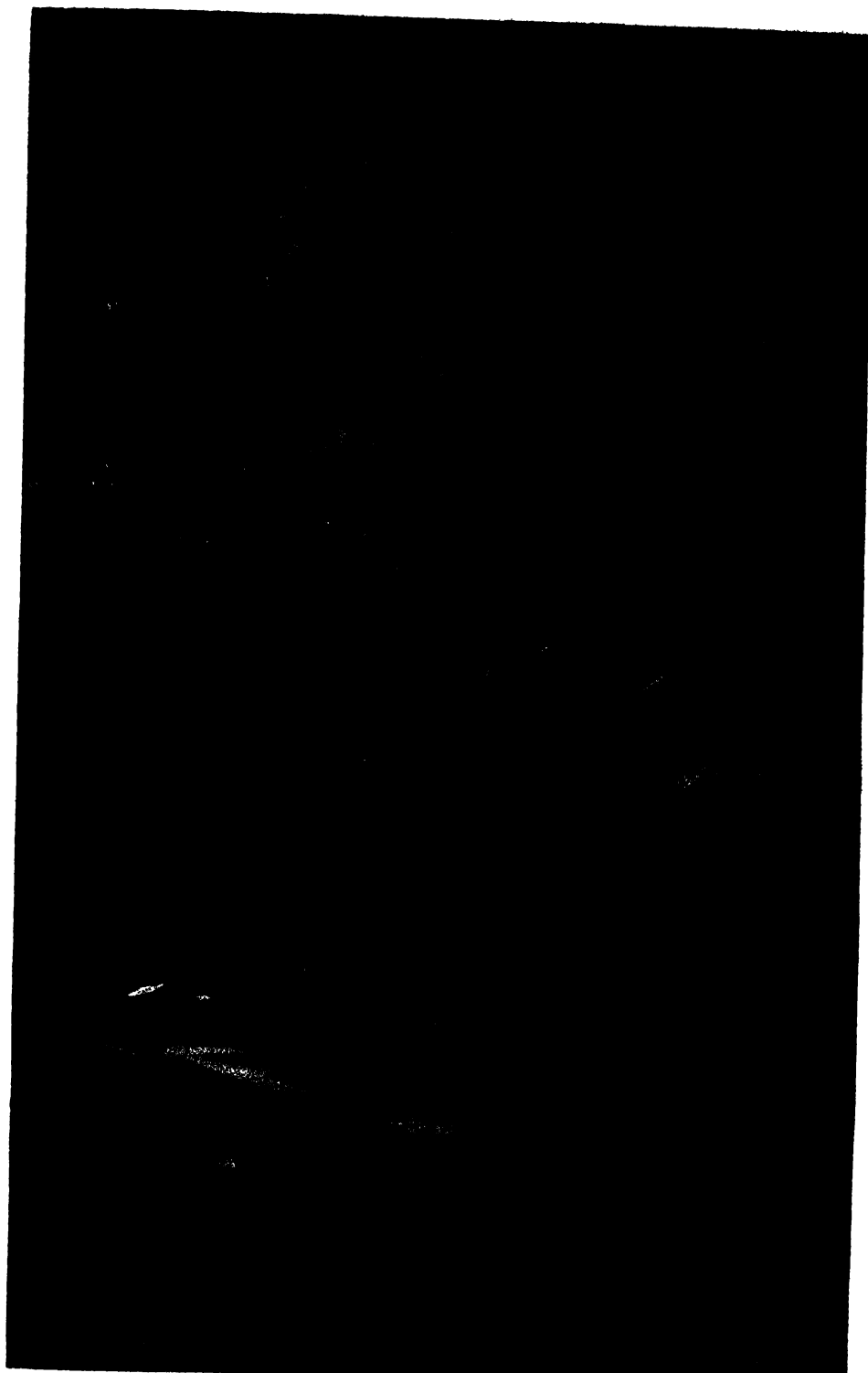
In Ceylon there are many places where the mineral called blacklead or plumbago or graphite is mined. It is of the highest quality and is used for making pencils, stove polish and crucibles. The only other mineral products are salt and gems. The jewels of Ceylon first drew traders to its shores thousands of years ago.



E. N. A.

with their banks overgrown by palms and flowering jungle plants, but with great crocodiles living in their waters. Many native boats like these, thatched to give shelter from sun and rain, drift loaded down to the ports, and toil back empty against the swift stream.

**THE RIVERS OF CEYLON** are not very large and they generally have sandbanks at their mouths, so they are not used by big ships; but, as many of them are connected with each other by canals, they are very useful for native transport. They are very beautiful, too,



**AN IMAGE OF BUDDHA** meditating sits to-day deep in the jungle, just where it sat more than a thousand years ago, in an enormous city. This granite figure, eight feet in height, is another of the signs of a vanished civilization that have been discovered in Anuradhapura. Another statue, 146 feet long, of Buddha sleeping, is at Polonnaruwa.

E. N. A.



E. N. A.

#### HOW LIVE CHICKENS ARE CARRIED TO COLOMBO'S MARKET

Along one of the broad, well-made roads that lead to Colombo comes a dark-skinned Tamil man carrying his produce to market. Chicken is nearly always found on the menu of the country hotels, or rest-houses, of Ceylon—indeed, some travellers there have found that chicken may be served up in six different ways to form a single meal.

shelving rock ; sometimes the line doubles on itself, so that the engine passes the back carriages on a higher level, going the opposite way. The first thing we notice as we leave the plains is the cultivation of paddy, or rice. It is grown on terraces built up in such a way that they can be flooded by the water without which the rice will not grow. Ceylon does not produce enough rice even for its own needs, so it cannot export any, but has to buy from Burma and other countries.

Higher up still we see the tea-bushes growing in regular lines, rather like gooseberry

bushes, but much thicker. Tea forms one of the largest exports of Ceylon, and about five-sixths of it are sent to England. Men work at plucking the leaf as well as women, but it is the latter who look most picturesque with their red head-cloths, gaudy ear-rings, anklets and smiling faces. Tamils do this work for the main part ; they are more industrious than the Sinhalese.

With tea-growing planters combine other things, such as rubber. Also, on some roads we see the great, reddish-brown cocoa pods hanging from the trees, like Chinese lanterns. Then there are



#### **OXEN INSTEAD OF HORSES AND THATCH TO COVER A WAGON**

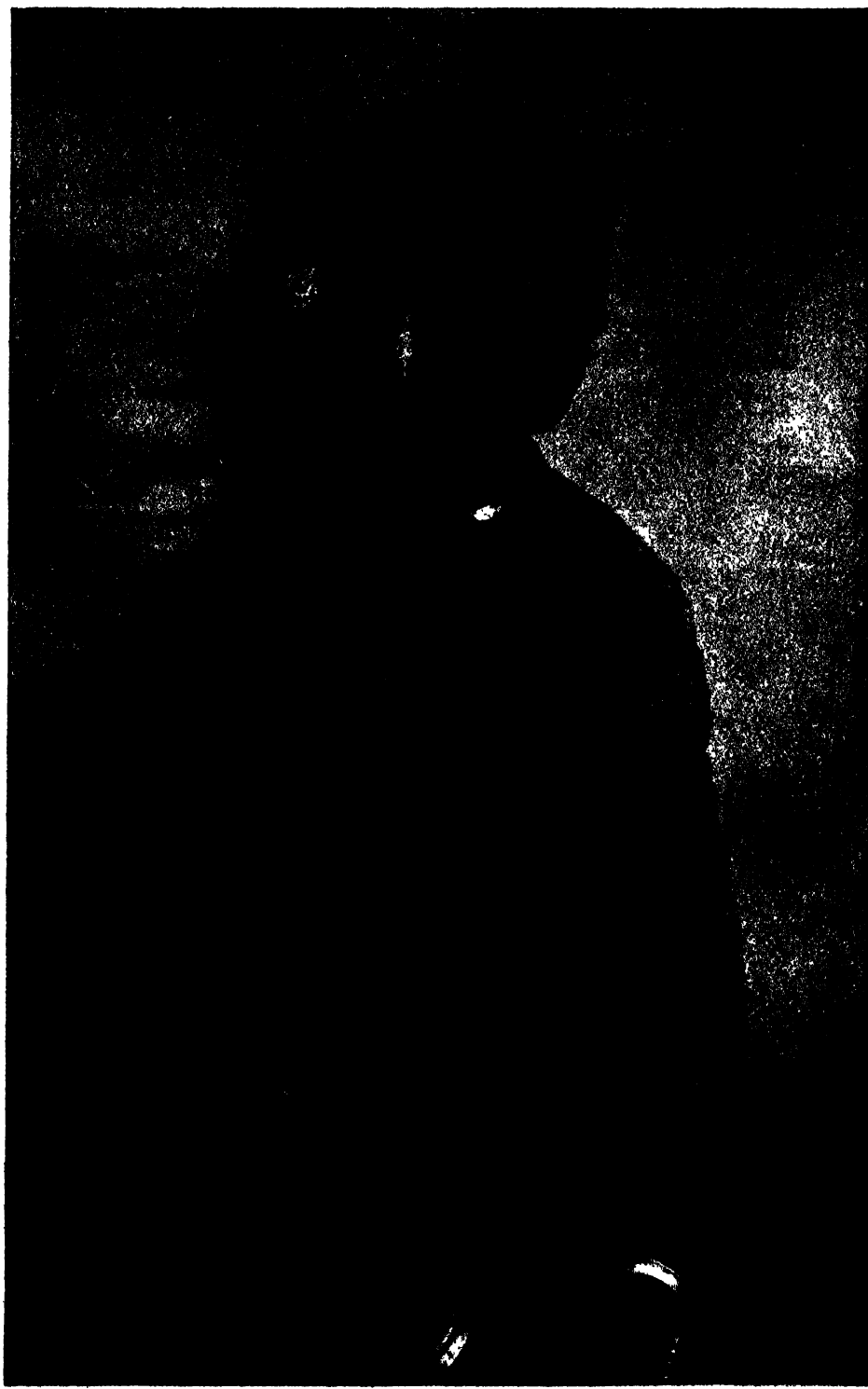
In very many countries of the world bullocks, not horses, are used to draw the carts and wagons. We saw in page 338 that this was done in Czechoslovakia and we will see many more in other lands. The oxen used in Ceylon are called zebus, the Indian, humped cattle. They are small but very strong and almost tireless.



Publishers' Photo Service

#### **THE SINHALESE NOBILITY OF KANDY DRESS TO SUIT THEIR RANK**

This photograph would seem to contradict the statement that the average Sinhalese is slenderly built, but then the slimmest man would look stout had he a hundred yards or more of silk wound round his waist. The belts and pin-cushion shaped hats of these Kandyan chiefs are rich with gold and gems, and their trousers end in a little frill.



Shoen & Co.

**THIS SINHALESE GIRL** has the beauty, typical of her race, of clear skin, regular features, large eyes and silky hair. Boys of this people are said to be more beautiful, generally speaking, than the girls. Both men and women dispose of their long, jet black hair in a knot at the back of the head, and wear similar loose robes.



Plaid, Ltd.

### MUSIC THAT CHARMS THE POISONOUS, HOODED COBRA

The Tamils, and also the wild gypsies that roam over part of Ceylon, fashion pipes, or flutes, from a little narrow-necked gourd, wax and two reeds. With these they make very sweet, low melodies that cause the venomous cobras to raise their heads, spread open their hoods and sway from side to side, enchanted as long as the music lasts.

the shrubs that yield pepper, spices, cardamoms and other commodities.

The wealth of Ceylon is, however, largely natural and not cultivated. First in importance come the palms, which fringe every sandy coast and love to send their roots right out under the salt water. Everywhere we see coconuts and find houses thatched with palm-leaves. There is also the palmyra, which flowers only once in forty years, bursting upward in an enormous nosegay of millions and millions of tiny flowers, looking at a distance like a froth of coffee and cream. From this palm are made the "olas" or palm-leaf books used by the priests, who write on them with a sharp point.

Then there is the talipot palm, with long leaves which fold up, so that people use them as umbrellas; a rough sort of brown sugar called "jaggery" is made from another palm. In fact, it is not too much to say that the palm, like the bamboo, enters into the daily lives of the people at every moment of the day.

Every village has its bamboos growing alongside the houses with jointed stalks and feathery foliage. The forest trees, carefully tended by the Government Forest Department, include such valuable woods as ebony, satinwood and teak, the last being largely used in the construction of ships, even nowadays when there are so many steel vessels.

Plenty of fruit and vegetables are at hand for the villagers. Bananas, or plantains as they are called here, are a staple part of their diet; there are also limes, oranges, mangosteens, custard apples, the great papaw, which is like a melon, and the jack-fruit, growing on a small stem straight from the trunk of a tree. It is something like a pumpkin to look at. It has a green skin enclosing a clotted, yellow substance in which are embedded a number of kernels like large nuts. Only very hungry people eat jack-fruit, but it is used for feeding cattle.

Cattle form the chief beasts of burden out here, some drawing the heavy carts





#### VERY EARLY STAGE IN THE LIFE OF A TEA PLANT

Tea, which is cultivated all over Ceylon, is a very hardy shrub that will grow equally well in sheltered valleys or on lofty mountain slopes. Here we see a Tamil coolie planting out the young shrubs that he has taken from the nursery, into the ground prepared for them.

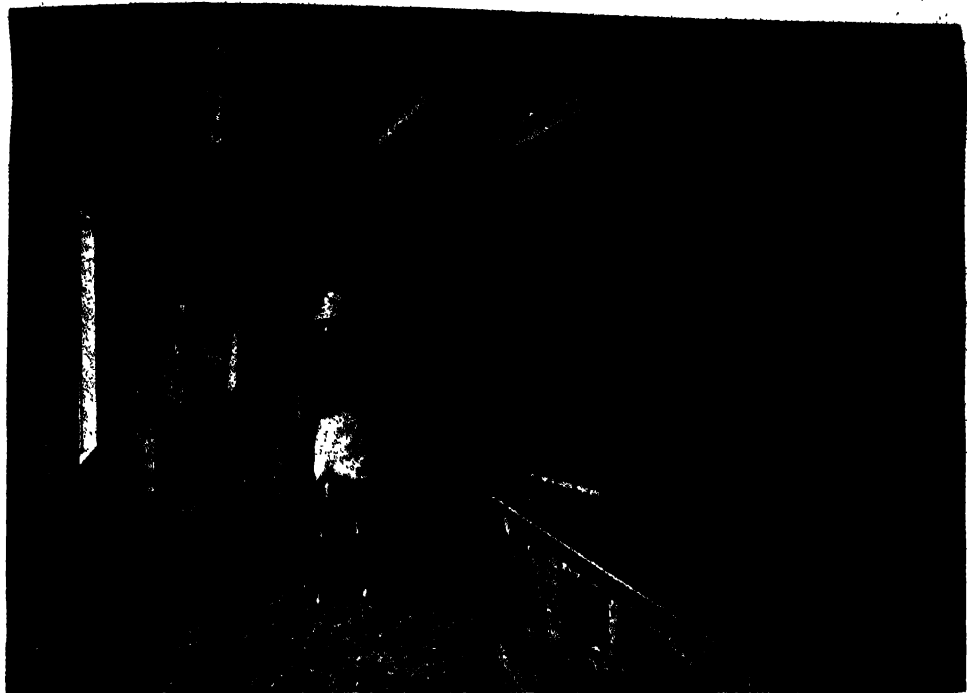
In about three years the young leaf shoots, or "flush," will be ready for plucking.



Stevens

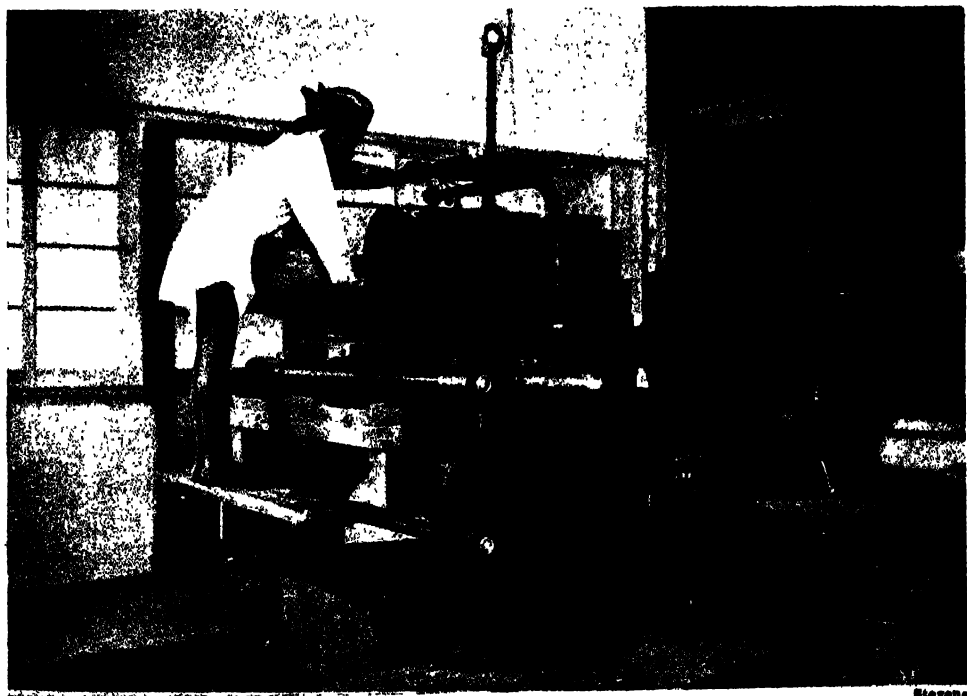
#### TEA SHRUBS REQUIRE PRUNING FROM TIME TO TIME

In page 461 we see women at work plucking the tender leaf buds. This is done all the year round at intervals of about twelve days. Pruning is done to make the "flush" more abundant, and also, because the tea plant, left to itself, might grow into a small tree, and it would then be very difficult for the women to reach the leaves.



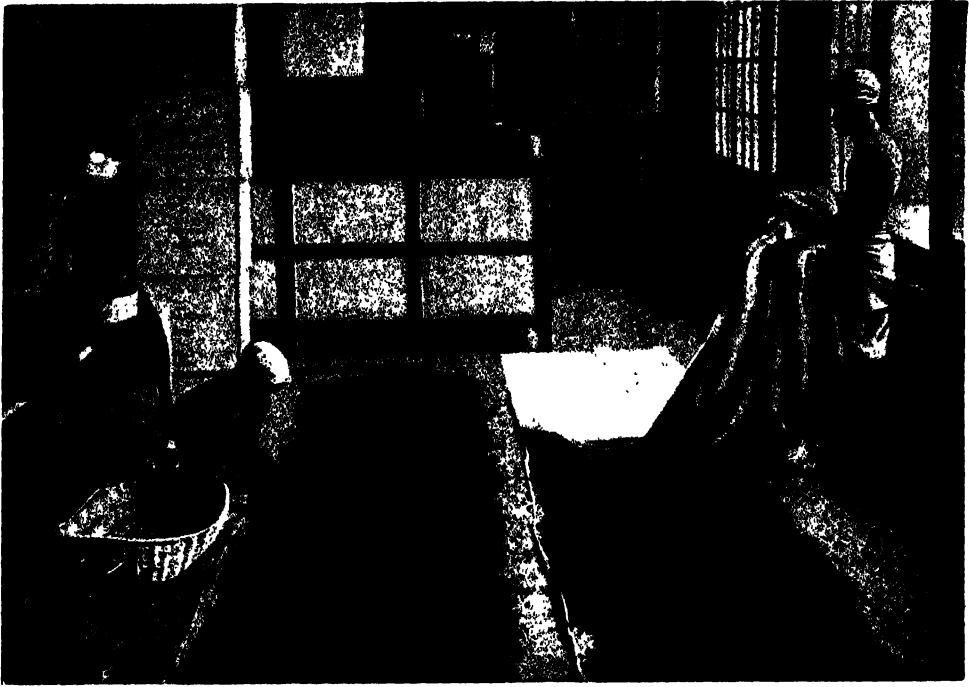
#### **WHERE THE FRESH GREEN LEAVES ARE PUT TO WITHER**

When the women have filled the baskets, which they bear on their backs supported by a strap round their heads, they carry them to the factory to be weighed. Next, the leaves are spread out upon shelves of canvas or wire in an upper storey of the building and are left there, in a warm, dry atmosphere, from about seventeen to twenty hours.



#### **THE LEAVES MUST THEN GO THROUGH THE ROLLING MILL**

The withered leaves, all soft and flabby, are then sent along chutes down to the rolling machine, which bruises them and so lets out the juices in them. It also curls the leaves up. After about an hour the tea is dropped out in yellow clinging lumps, and these are put into another machine, called the roll breaker, which separates the leaves again.



#### **FERMENTATION OF THE LEAVES IS THE NEXT PROCESS**

The leaves are spread out on mats and are left to ferment, or oxidise, for about two hours, the time depending on the weather. The air acts upon them by changing their colour to coppery-brown; they also at this stage have a strange smell. Fermentation is very important, because on it depends the quality of the finished tea.



#### **ANOTHER WAY IN WHICH THE TEA IS FERMENTED**

The tea is sometimes put into shallow drawers, piled above each other, while it ferments. Green tea, which was once so popular, does not come from a different plant, but is just tea that is not fermented. The leaves are next rolled again, and then "fired" or heated for twenty minutes to remove the moisture and make them black and crisp.



**NEXT, IN THE SORTING-ROOM, THE TEA IS SIFTED AND GRADED**  
Most tea factories have now a machine for sifting the tea to grade it, but it is still sometimes done by hand through sieves of different mesh. The first sifting yields the best teas, the "unbroken" teas, the leaves passing through the smallest mesh being best of all. Very big leaves are broken up in "breaking machines" and then sifted again



**THE LAST STAGE: COOLIES WEIGHING AND PACKING THE TEA**  
The graded tea has next to be packed ready for export. It is carefully weighed and packed tightly into square wooden cases lined with lead to keep out air and moisture, or into small lead packets. The cases are stamped with the name of the grower, and are then loaded into bullock wagons, like those in page 471, and carried off to the nearest port.



SINHALESE

**IN A VILLAGE THAT LIES DEEP IN THE BEAUTIFUL JUNGLE OF THE HAPPY AND PEACEFUL ISLAND OF CEYLON**  
The houses of this Sinhalese village are stoutly built of mud and roofed with tiles ; the jungle trees hedge them round, but a good hard road connects them with a busy town. The natives of Ceylon are very cheerful, contented people. The Sinhalese are gentle and engaging, though very lazy ; on the other hand, the Tamils are always ready for any work that will bring a little money. In the jungles are many elephants and leopards, boars and bears, deer and porcupines, crocodiles and cobras, and also savages, but very gentle, timid ones.

## CEYLON THE ISLE OF JEWELS

and some pulling the lighter two-wheeled ones. These latter are the trotting bullocks, but they cover very little ground for all their trotting; they may do four miles an hour, and the heavier beasts in the agricultural carts possibly two, so that we can see the native population does not bother about rapid conveyances.

In the deep recesses of the forests, by the jungle tracks that can only be traversed on foot or at best by a slow ox-wagon, you may still find wild elephants, leopards, buffaloes, Sambhur deer and sloth bears, the mongoose and the shy, night-feeding porcupine.

The monkeys and flying foxes, the snakes and the jackals, as well as the crocodiles and tortoises in the great irrigation tanks, can be seen without taking much trouble; so, too, can the birds, including all the kingfisher tribe and the long-tailed birds of Paradise.

After such a long journey we must arrive somewhere, and at what better place can we arrive than one of the famous Lost Cities? These were built in the times of the ancient kings, and were lost for ages in the jungle after they had been deserted by the Sinhalese, who fled from the attacks of the Tamils. There are magnificent ruins in many parts of the island, but the two principal cities, which are visited by people from all parts of the world, are Anuradhapura and Polonnaruwa.

The first is the older, and was the capital from about 500 B.C. to A.D. 800. Here granite ruins of beautiful design are found on all sides. Many of the giant blocks have been carved in quaint and interesting scenes by skilful hands long since dead. Huge dagobas, or great mounds like rounded hills, composed of uncountable numbers of bricks, rise from the jungle. Granite columns fallen

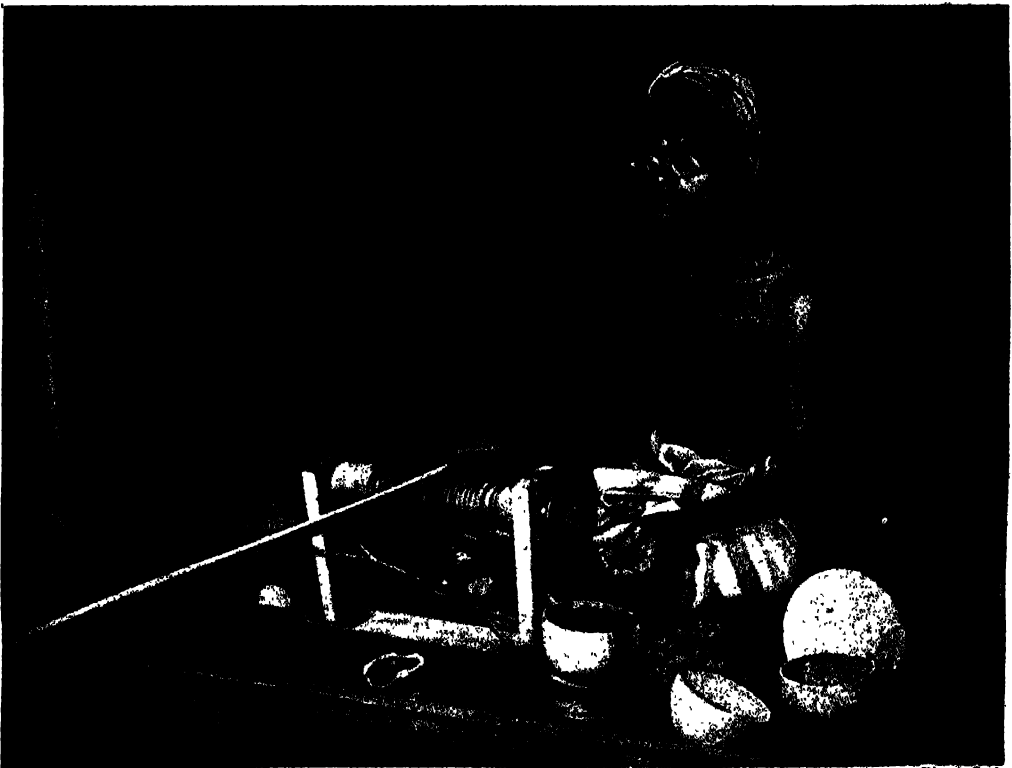
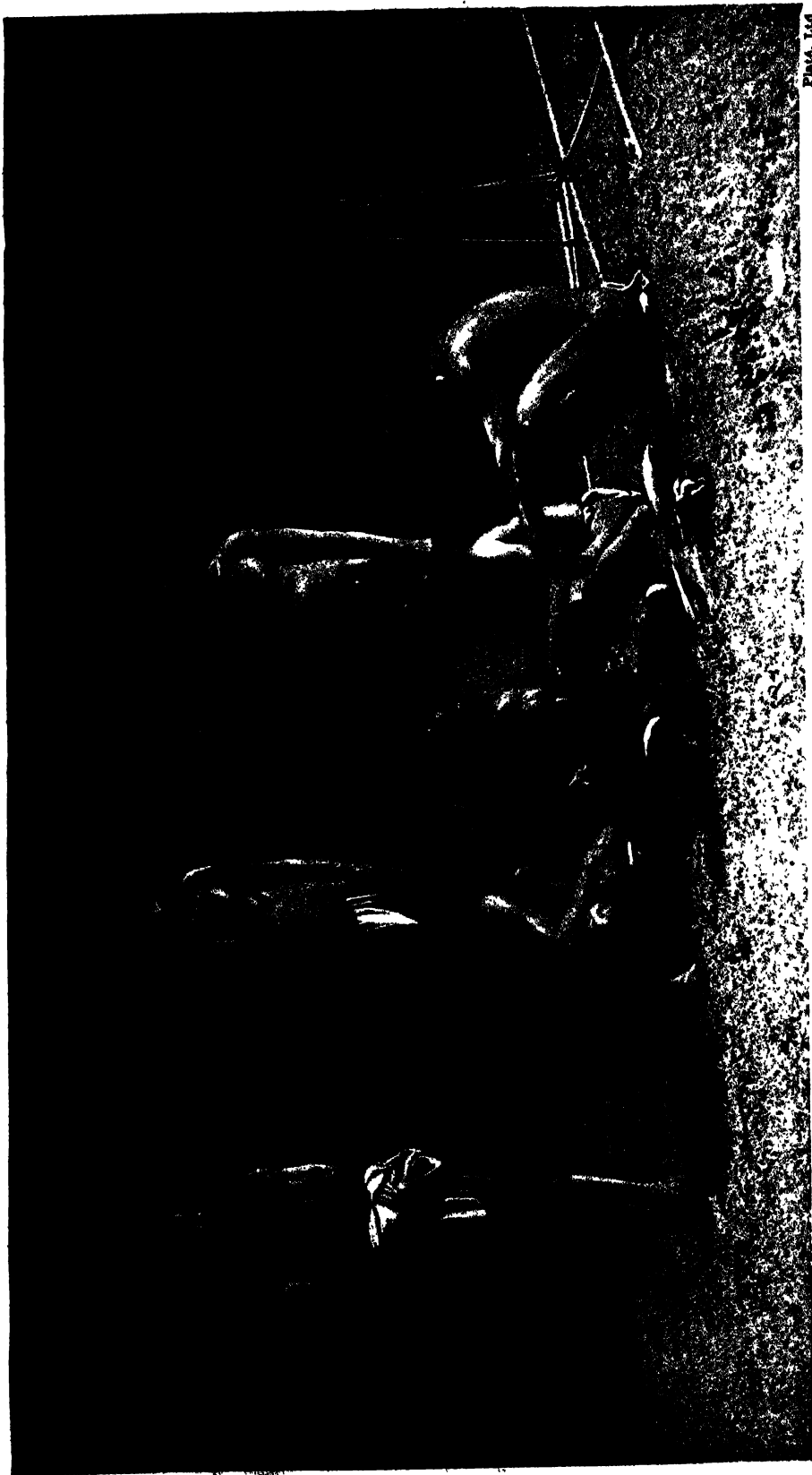


PLATE 144

### CUTTING AND POLISHING GEMS IS WORK A MOORMAN LOVES

Besides the Tamils and Sinhalese, the gypsies and aborigines, representatives of other races dwell in Ceylon. There are descendants of the ancient Portuguese and Dutch invaders, mostly clerks and merchants, and also the Moormen whose ancestors were Arab traders of centuries ago. These are nearly all craftsmen and dealers in precious gems.



Photo, Ltd.

### THE VEDDAS, SAVAGE PEOPLE WHO HAVE LIVED IN CEYLON'S JUNGLES SINCE HISTORY BEGAN

The shy and savage Veddass live their wild life in the jungles of eastern Ceylon much as they did thousands of years ago. They dwell sometimes in caves and sometimes in rude huts, and live by hunting and by collecting edible birds' nests and honey, which they barter with their

Tamil or Sinhalese neighbours. To get the honey of the big rock bees a Vedda may hang on a swinging ladder of split cane over a precipice and poke out the comb with a stick. He protects himself by the smoke of torches, for several stings from these bees might kill him.



Plata, Ltd.

#### LITTLE WILD HUNTERS OF CEYLON'S EASTERN JUNGLES

The Veddas—their name means hunter—used formerly to do all their hunting with bows and arrows, and were very skilful archers, but now they make the weapons chiefly to sell to visitors, and themselves use old guns. Unfortunately, the simplicity of the Veddas has become spoilt by the interest the antiquity of their race has excited.

this way and that remain in their hundreds. One might spend many days exploring. At Polonnaruwa also there are many splendid temples, built mostly of brick.

About midway between these two cities is to be found one of the strangest places in any country in the world. The huge rock of Sigiri, composed of red granite, thrusts itself up out of the surrounding jungle like a gigantic mushroom. This rock is 400 feet in height, and its steep sides make it look yet greater.

In the fifth century A.D. King Kasyapa, having killed his father and seized the throne, fled here from the wrath of his elder brother. He ruled Ceylon from the top of this rock for eighteen years. He had galleries carried up the sides of the rock and a palace constructed on the top, within which was a great red granite throne. This remains there to this day, though the brick palace lies in ruins. In the end Kasyapa was conquered by his brother and, in despair, killed himself.

There is still so much to be seen that we cannot linger even here. We will next go to Kandy, in the centre of the island, where reigned the last of Ceylon's kings. His throne, made of silver gilt and supported by dragons of cut crystal with amethyst eyes, was carried to Windsor, where it is to this day. Many of the Kandyan nobles descended from the ancient royal house are still living, and on festival occasions appear in their quaint native dress with flat hats and voluminous skirts, caught up by gorgeous jewel-studded belts.

The centre of interest at Kandy, however, is the Temple of the Tooth, not far from the circular lake. This contains a curious relic which has always accompanied the royal house of Ceylon in all its changing fortunes. The original tooth, whether of Buddha or not, was brought over from India ages ago hidden in the hair of a princess. Whether this identical tooth is still there, or, as some say, was



## CEYLON THE ISLE OF JEWELS

stolen by the Portuguese and has been replaced, matters little. It is enclosed in many caskets, some of pure gold, and is in charge of the Buddhist priests. Once a year it is carried in procession on the back of an elephant, and all the Buddhist population regards it with reverence.

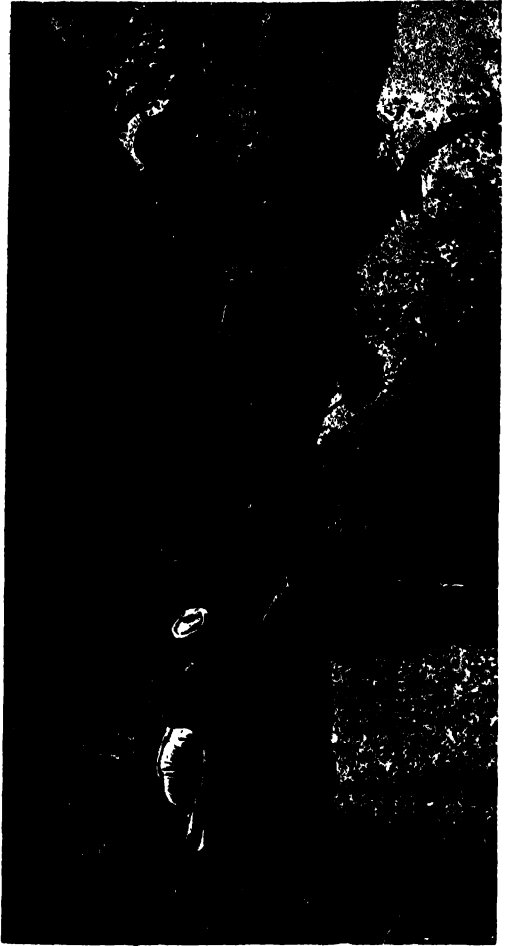
From here we may go to Adam's Peak, many miles away to the south. This, though not the loftiest mountain, is the most venerated, for here is guarded a great imprint in stone, said by Buddhists to be the impression of the foot of the Buddha and by the Mahomedans to be the footmark of Adam. Of one thing there can be no question at all—it is not the impression of any human foot, for it is six feet long!

We have only seen a few of the



### TEMPLE ELEPHANT OF KANDY

This elephant is one of forty which belong to the Temple of the Tooth at Kandy. They play an important part in the Perahera, the great annual festival of Buddha.



### QUEER FRUIT TREE OF CEYLON

The jack fruit, though the natives sometimes eat it, has not a pleasant taste. It is more often used for feeding cattle. The tree is a relative of the bread-fruit tree.

wonders of Ceylon, for the rest there is no time. It would take too long to visit the Pool of the Five-Headed Cobra, the Lion Bath, the Sacred Hill of Mihintale—with its immense open-air staircases—Ratnapura, the "City of Gems," the Pettah—the native quarter of Colombo—and the spacious gardens of Peradeniya, where are to be found specimens of almost every plant and tree known to man. We have no time even to visit the salt pans of the north, or the mines in the Western Province, from which the world's best graphite is obtained.

We must be content with this hasty survey and hope to see one day for ourselves this glorious Island of Jewels.

# Life Among the Maoris

## NEW ZEALAND'S SPLENDID WARRIOR RACE

When we think of New Zealand we are most likely to think of our own British folk who have settled in the beautiful islands of the far south that are known by that name. There they have built homes and townships very like those of our own land. But in this chapter we are to be introduced to the native inhabitants of those far islands—the Maoris. Of all the savage races whose lands have been dominated by the British, none showed higher intelligence or greater capacity for accepting European culture. According to their traditions the Maoris came from some Polynesian island about 1350, voyaging across the South Pacific in their great canoes. They settled chiefly in North Island and fought bravely for their country when the first white colonists arrived; but now they are loyal subjects of the Crown, and gave their services freely to the Empire during the Great War.

[ANY, many thousands of years ago, in the South Seas, there was a hero named Maui. We do not know from what particular island he came, but he put out to sea with his brothers and cast his line into deep waters. His fish-hook was an enchanted one, for it was made from the jawbone of a famous ancestor. Now, when Maui dropped his hook overboard, it caught in the house of Tonganui, who was the grandson of Tongaroa, the fish-god.

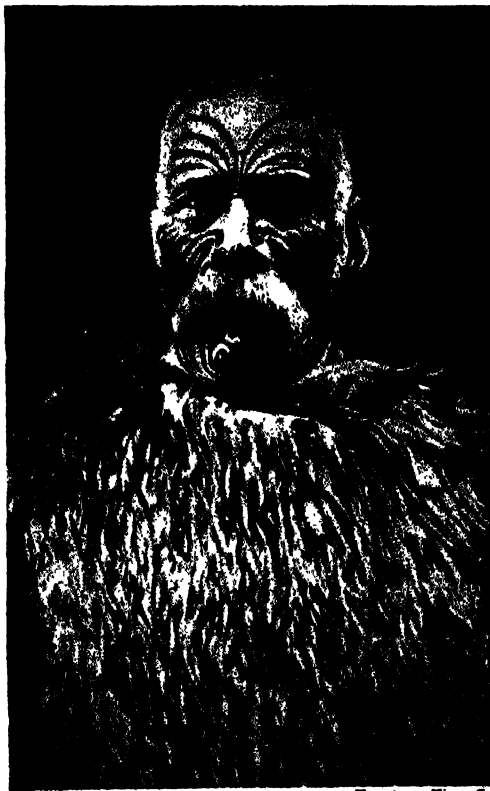
Only a great hero like Maui could pull up such a "catch." His brothers were frightened at the huge waves which were thus created. But Maui was not to be dissuaded from his purpose. He pulled and pulled and pulled, and eventually hauled up not only Tonganui's house but the land on which it stood. And this land—at first called "The Fish of Maui"—was the beautiful country we now know as the dominion of New Zealand. That is the curious story which

the Maoris, the natives of the country, have had handed down to them by their forefathers to explain their origin.

The great Maui is their national hero. He was a chief and a magician. It was he, they say, who snared the sun with a rope of flax, and, by preventing it from travelling too fast, lengthened out the days. It was he who, to punish his quarrelsome kindred, put his hand out before the moon and so at times caused darkness to come.

The legends about Maui are numerous. The oldest ones explain how the hero came from Hawaiki with nine canoes, the names of which are still preserved as tribal names. Just where Hawaiki was we cannot say; but learned men believe it to have been an island near Samoa.

It is clear, however, that the Maoris are very closely related to the Polynesian race who inhabit Samoa, Tahiti and other islands of the South Seas. They are similarly brown-



Keystone View Co.

### MAORI FACE ARTISTICALLY LINED

This fierce, grizzled old chief, wrapped in his feather cloak, is old enough to remember the second war against the settlers which was fought between 1861 and 1871.



American Museum of Natural History

### YOUNG MAORI WARRIOR AND HIS GREAT WOODEN SPEAR

Fighting between the colonisers of New Zealand and the Maoris did not finally cease until 1871. In these wars the Maoris proved themselves to be very brave and skilful fighters, even when they were opposed by regular troops. All able-bodied men were soldiers, and their arms consisted chiefly of old muskets, tomahawks, clubs and wooden spears.



La Voy

**A GOOD JOKE IS EVIDENTLY APPRECIATED BY A MAORI GIRL**

Jolly and contented, the Maoris live upon the land which has been granted to them by the New Zealand government. The girl and man in the photograph are wearing their native, flaxen dress, but European clothes are steadily taking the place of these more suitable garments. The beautiful carving on the house is a favourite form of decoration.

## LIFE AMONG THE MAORIS

skinned, and there is a great resemblance between their languages. They have also the same custom of "tapu," the law of prohibition, which has been explained in the chapter Sunshine Isles and Savages. There was no written language among the Maoris until early in the last century.

Of these early inhabitants of New Zealand we have the first accounts from Captain Cook. Both France and Spain claim that some of their sea-captains actually discovered the islands. In 1642 Abel Tasman, the Dutch voyager, reached the land and sailed away because the natives proved hostile. But it was Captain

Cook who, in 1769, made his famous voyage to the Pacific, rediscovered New Zealand and brought home a full description of the Maoris and their customs.

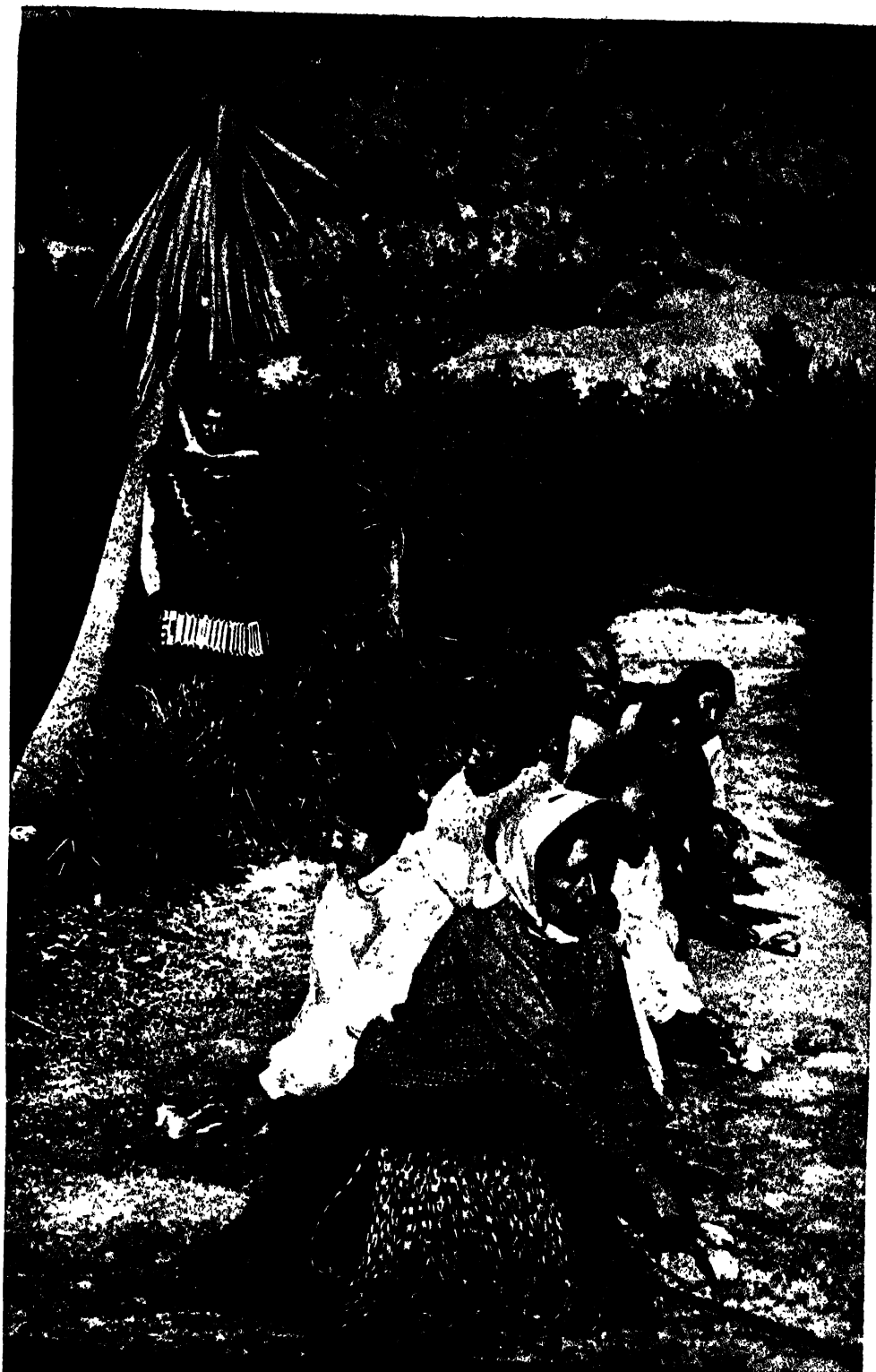
He told of their inclination to cannibalism. In the Polynesian islands, as we have seen, this horrible practice was common, the general belief being that by eating a notable enemy certain of his qualities, such as courage and cunning, were acquired by the conqueror. Many scientists, however, hold the view that the custom was merely followed as a method of casting disgrace upon the slain man and his people. Whatever may have



Topical

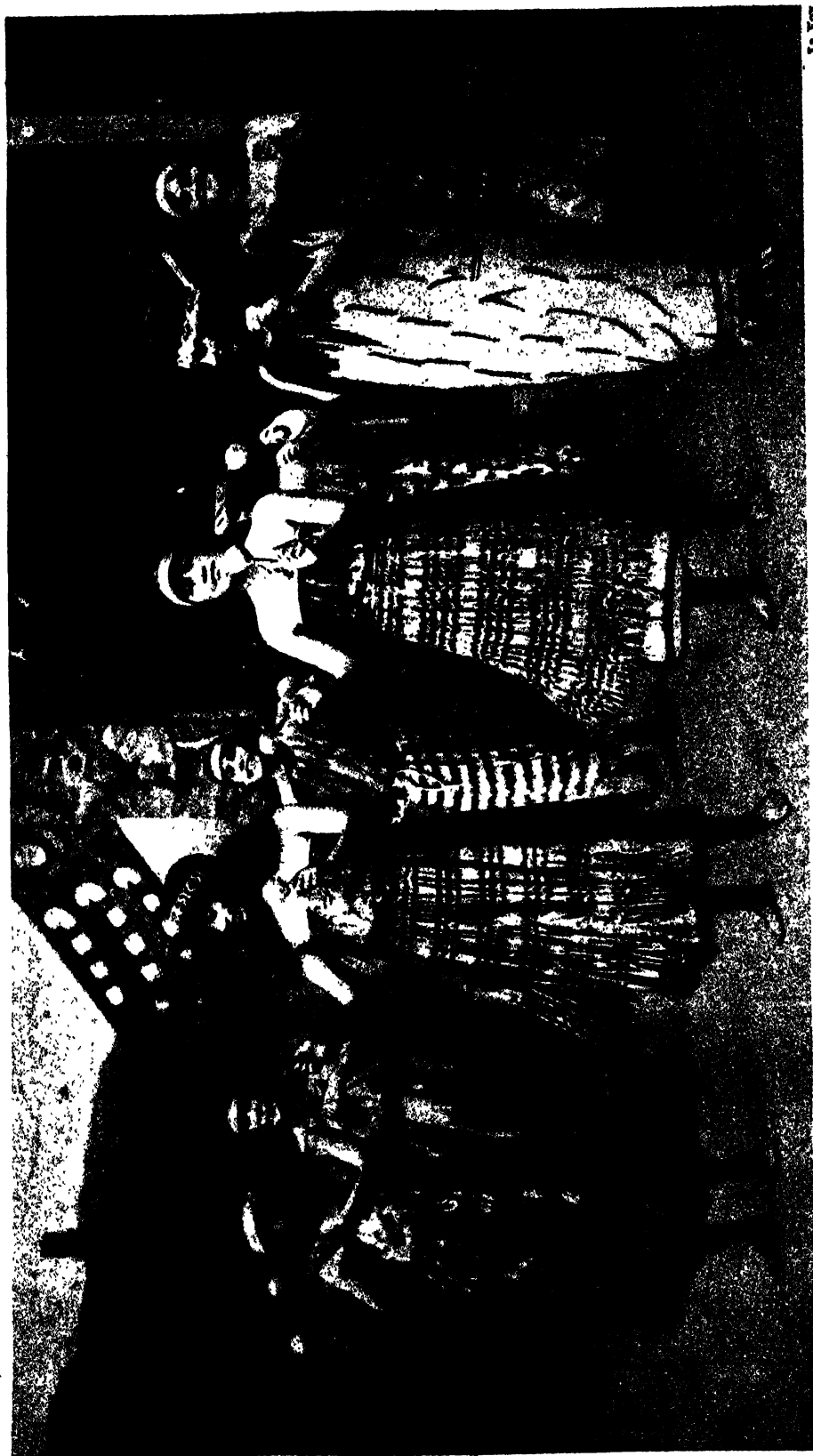
### OLD MAORI WOMAN ENGAGED IN MAKING A MAT OF FLAX

Here we have an aged Maori lady dressed in ugly European clothes, and in page 489 are two girls in their native costume, which is much more suitable and becoming. New Zealand flax is a very useful plant to the Maoris, who make mats and carpets as well as clothes with it. The marks on the woman's chin have been done by tattooing.



Underwood

**PERFORMING THE POI DANCE TO THE MUSIC OF AN ACCORDION**  
One of the oldest dances of the Maoris is the "poi," which we should hardly call a dance at all, as, instead of moving about and executing various steps, the performers sit or stand in a row, keeping their places throughout the dance. They turn from side to side and twirl between the fingers balls of dried raupo leaves, which they knock together.



La Toi

#### A MERRY PARTY OF PERFORMERS READY TO BEGIN ONE OF THE GRACEFUL NATIONAL DANCES

The dancers provide their own music by singing a song with a strongly marked rhythm. The performers do not move from their ranks, but make great play with their arms and the little balls of raupo leaves that they carry. The dance itself is wonderfully dignified, not only when compared with the majority of barbaric dances, but also with those of other islands of the Pacific. This is probably explained by the fact that, even before they came into contact with white people, the Maoris were possessed of a certain culture and artistic genius.



Keystone View Co.

## TWO MAORI GIRLS ENVELOPED IN THEIR ROBES OF FLAX

Originally the Maoris had very little clothing, the women wearing a sort of kilt. But they are very clever at weaving enormous blankets, such as the girls are wrapped in here; smaller kinds are also made to be worn on the shoulders or round the waist.

The feathers of the kiwi—a wingless bird—are sometimes used as ornaments.

been the reasons, it is certain that the New Zealand natives, like many other savage races, were addicted to cannibalism in the past. The coming of the "pakeha," as they call the white man, into their country, with the influence of the missionaries especially, gradually forced them to give up the practice.

Following the custom of the Polynesians, the Maoris tattooed themselves freely. In Tahiti, the Marquesas Islands and elsewhere in the South Seas, tattooing was done but lightly, a mere surface pricking. In New Zealand the natives who underwent the ordeal of "moko," as it was termed, did the thing

more thoroughly. The designs on face and body were actually chiselled into the flesh, the instruments used being made of the bones of birds, the teeth of sharks or stone. With the natives, tattooing was a mark of identification as well as an ornament, and there are instances on record in which a chief, unable to write, has drawn his personal "moko" as a signature to a document.

Tattooing is dying out as a practice. Only on the faces of older men nowadays is tattooing usually to be seen; among the young male Maoris, who wish to copy the white man's ways, it is a fashion that has become unpopular. The women of



## LIFE AMONG THE MAORIS

the tribes, however, have been more reluctant to give it up. They still decorate themselves on the lips and chin.

In regarding the Maori as a kinsman of other South Sea peoples, we must note his fondness for dancing. In weaving and carving he was far in advance of other tribes, and he has shown the same progress in the matter of the dance. This form of recreation is not simply a way of amusing himself, or a means of working up the young warriors to a pitch of excitement. The dances are ceremonial, illustrating, as a rule, an actual story; often they are a record of events in Maori history.

A popular dance is that of the canoes. A number of girls—from thirty to forty, say—perform this. Some are seated to represent the paddlers; others, standing behind them, sway their bodies in the motions of waves rising and falling. In addition to the regular movements

of the actors in this dance there is the effect given by the flax dancing skirts worn by the girls, the sound of these being something like the swish of water against the sides of a canoe. The girls carry what are called poi balls in their hands. These are small balls of raupo leaves attached to a flax cord. When they are struck one against the other the spectator can imagine that he hears the paddle strokes.

The native who has adopted civilized conditions wears the ordinary dress of the white man—he is to be seen in coat, trousers, hat and boots. The one who



**MAORI READY FOR WAR**

An elaborately tattooed brave strikes a ferocious attitude, and imagines that his grimace is so horrible that it will be a weapon in itself.

clings to the dress of his ancestors is content with little clothing—a woven and fringed single garment is the rule, with a larger cloak reaching from shoulder to knee.

The most elaborate and costly article of dress is the feather cape or cloak. It was in this that the native weaver excelled, for this was a work which called for great skill. Feathers from the kiwi and other birds were woven in, or sometimes fastened to the threads by means of the gum of the flax; one row of feathers overlapped another, and the result was always effective.

Just as, with the decline in population, weaving is becoming a thing of the past, so is the art of wood-carving. Old Maori carvings display considerable artistic skill and taste. There is no doubt that the native New Zealanders were extraordinarily skillful in this direction. The carving of pillars in houses, the decoration of temples, of "patakas,"

or tribal store-houses, and of boxes wherein were kept cloaks and other garments, were very elaborately and carefully done.

Such carving was frequently the work of more than one generation. It was carried on by a son who had been taught the art by his father, and years of patient toil were devoted to the task.

The Maori, it must be remembered, belongs to a warrior race. He was ever a fighting man. In recent times there were the Maori wars of 1861 to 1871, when the natives felt they were unjustly treated in the matter of their lands and rose in



La Voy

### HIGH WOODEN TOWER TO ACT AS FORTRESS AND SENTRY-BOX

Before the British ruled New Zealand there was almost constant warfare among the Maori tribes. Trenches, palisades and towers such as this protected the villages against sudden invasion. The towers were kept stocked with provisions and were very difficult to storm. On this tower we see a Maori watcher signalling with his plumed spear.



Underwood

#### PUBLIC BATH FED BY HOT SPRINGS IN A MAORI VILLAGE

In the hot springs district of the North Island of New Zealand the children have no excuse for dirtiness, since they have hot baths all the year round in the open air. Certain pools are used for washing clothes and others for cooking; some, filled with hot mud, have long been held to have a strong curative effect in certain diseases.

arms. In the olden days the Maori made himself feared in his terrible war canoe. These boats were often eighty feet in length, being built of kauri pine, the stately tree which is New Zealand's pride.

A Maori war canoe was a handsome craft, for here again the art of carving was displayed at its best. All the boat, from stem to stern, was beautifully ornamented with designs. The prevailing colour was red, this being the sacred hue, and, with a plentiful inlaying of shells and feathers,

the general effect was striking. A carving of a human figure was at the prow, while other similar figures might be placed at intervals along the sides and at the stern. Feathers were favourite ornaments, these being tied together in bunches, and floated airily in the wind as the craft was driven through the water by the paddlers.

The majority of the Maoris are now Christians, but many still retain the old belief in spirits and enchantment, in "tapu" and the meaning of dreams.



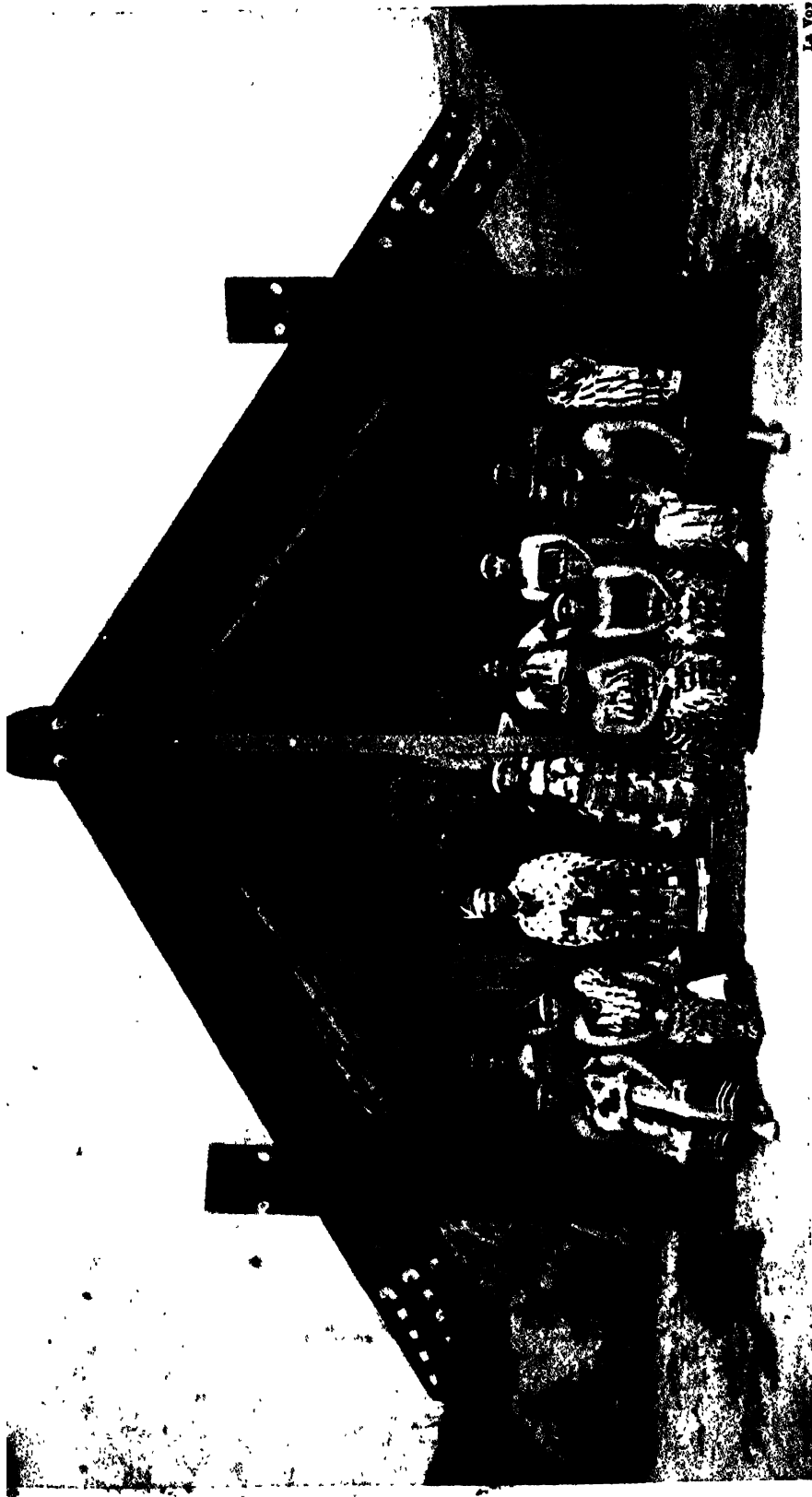
#### MAORI HOUSEWIFE MAKES USE OF A NATURAL WASH-TUB

The Maori washerwoman need not worry over hot water, since she has an unfailing supply from the earth. All round her steam is rising from the boiling springs and cracks in the ground; and if she does not immediately find water of a suitable temperature she has only to try another of the many pools of varying degrees of warmth.



#### WEARING THEIR FLAXEN CLOAKS, WOMEN STIR THE FAMILY BOWL

At one time the Maoris lived on the flesh of the "moa," a giant bird long since extinct, on dogs, fish, human beings, and such vegetables as the sweet potato and the taro. They have long lost their cannibal appetites, and have now a diet which, if somewhat monotonous, is not very different from that of the white inhabitants.



La Vo

# VILLAGE HALL DECORATED WITH THE GROTESQUELY CARVEN HEROES OF THE MAORIS

In Maori villages there is usually a large house, ornamented like this splendid singer of his own melodies, which are pleasing even to our one, serving as a common dormitory, a guest-house, council-chamber ears, and a clever weaver. Although the Maori has no written or concert-room. The Maori's skill in wood-carving is only one of his language, he has a store of poems, fairy-tales and folk legends that many artistic accomplishments; he is a born poet and orator, a are passed down by word of mouth from one generation to another.



#### **COUNTRY DANCE TO THE CLAPPING OF HANDS AND LAUGHTER**

Lines of Maori girls and women are beating time with their hands while they dance. Their rustling flax dresses are in accordance with the gala spirit, and show, in their bold, well-arranged patterns, the artistic skill that the Maoris have attained. Some of the dancers are also wearing very elaborately worked head-bands.



#### **THREE LAZY MAORI GIRLS BASK IN THE STRONG SUNLIGHT**

Although they are capable of energetic work and enterprise, the Maoris are by nature inclined to be an indolent people. They do a little farming and a good deal of shearing for their white neighbours, but they much prefer to do nothing. This easy-going, pleasure-loving spirit is one of the reasons for their decrease in numbers.



Norton

#### A MAORI GIRL'S GREETING: NOSE IS PRESSED TO NOSE

Where English girls would have kissed, these Maori maids hold hands in a formal manner, press nose to nose in greeting, and utter a strange, melancholy cry. This seems to us a silly way of saluting a friend, but to the Maori, as to people of certain other primitive races, our habit of kissing appears to be both meaningless and disgusting.



Keystone View Co.

# **VENERABLE CHIEF WHO PROUDLY BEARS INSIGNIA OF RANK**

The greenstone club, polished and sharpened, is the sceptre of the Maori chief. He stands beside a pillar of his house that is carved with two grotesque faces. One figure grasps a club similar to the one held by the chief. As seen in page 494, there is one of these posts at each side of the entrance and a carved face at the apex of the porch.



## LIFE AMONG THE MAORIS

Just as the mythical Maui has figured in their folklore as the hero of many marvellous deeds, so various spirits were invented by them to account for the creation of the earth, the sky, the sun, moon and other natural wonders. It was the fairies, they said, who taught them how to make fish nets of flax leaves. In these fanciful ways Maori children were taught the why and wherefore of the common things around them.

In their games Maori boys and girls find much the same recreation as do their white neighbours. The string game of "cat's cradle" is popular among them; they fly kites, they skip, play with tops and hoops and even knew the game of draughts long before the "pakeha" came into their midst. In one of their games the players sit in a group and proceed to make the most horrible grimaces they can. At the same time they writhe and squirm with their bodies and give vent to deep groans. He who succeeds in making the ugliest face becomes the winner. With games like this, the telling of stories and the asking of riddles, both young and old people pass many hours of leisure at home.

The native name for a Maori house is "wharé," and originally a tribe would have one or more large wooden houses for general use and to accommodate guests. There were separate sleeping "wharés," in which the furniture was but scanty. Reed mats and couches made of grass and fern served the purpose. A Maori village,

such as was found by the first white voyagers to New Zealand, was protected by stockades and was known as a "pah." These were built upon hills to give them greater security from enemies, and usually had high watch-towers from which the villagers could survey the surrounding countryside, and in which they could offer a strong defence against such enemies as might attack them. To-day the Maori "pah" is to be encountered only in the low-lying districts, such as about the region of the hot springs in North Island, where geysers and boiling water are found. The springs of Lake Rotorua are among the best known; near by are the villages of Ohinemotu and Whakarewarewa.

The glory of the Maoris is the glory of the past. Once a powerful, warlike race, hundreds of thousands strong, they have now dwindled in numbers to about

fifty thousand. The spread of consumption and other diseases has helped materially to reduce the population. That they are a race superior to most other South Sea peoples is shown by their readiness to adapt themselves to the white man's civilization. Educated Maoris hold many public positions in their country, even being elected to the legislative assembly. As, since the census of 1896, their numbers have been slowly on the increase, there is reason to hope that this fine people will not suffer the extinction that has been the fate of some other native races.



**OLD-FASHIONED TATTOO MARKING**

Now fallen into disfavour, tattoo ornamentation was once a very popular adornment among Maori men. Indeed, tattooing was one of the Maori fine arts.

# The Land of the Dragon

## SOME GLIMPSES OF CHINA AND MANCHURIA

Among the legends of ancient times there is one that tells how Cadmus, a Phœnician, slew a dragon and, taking out its teeth, sowed them in the ground, from which as many armed men suddenly rose up and began fighting among themselves. The legend might be applied to the China of to-day, where for about fifteen years civil war has raged, as though some modern Cadmus had sowed dragons' teeth in the Land of the Dragon. China has been called by that name because the dragon is a favourite symbol in Chinese art and decoration. A writhing dragon was the arms of the old Empire and a dragon also figures in the arms of the Republic. In this chapter Manchuria is included with the vast country of China, and this is only natural, since it forms part of the Republic, and out of it came the Manchus, the conquerors of China proper.

**C**HINA! What a wonderland of mystery throughout the centuries!

The Chinese call their country "The Flowery Kingdom." To Europeans, during the Middle Ages, it was known as "far Cathay," and many tales of its wonders and magnificence were told by the few travellers who had managed to get a glimpse of the land itself. The Chinese cannot forget that they were civilized long, long ago, while the British, and indeed all northern Europeans, were savages, so they have always regarded themselves as heavenly people—"Celestials" and the rest of the world as barbarians. As far as possible they have kept foreigners out of their country.

### *Opening the Doors of China*

In spite of this, Portuguese sailors reached here in 1517, and in 1557 were allowed to put up factories on the end of a peninsula at the mouth of the Canton River, the Chinese building a wall across it to keep the barbarians from mixing with the Celestials. This place, Macao, became a Portuguese colony, and has remained one ever since.

English traders followed a century later, but it has always needed a war to open a door in China, and it was not till after war with Britain that, in 1842, Hong Kong, an island off the Canton River, became a British Crown Colony, and various coastal towns, including two famous ones, Shanghai and Canton, were opened to foreign traders. These are known as the Treaty Ports. Further wars have given Korea and the

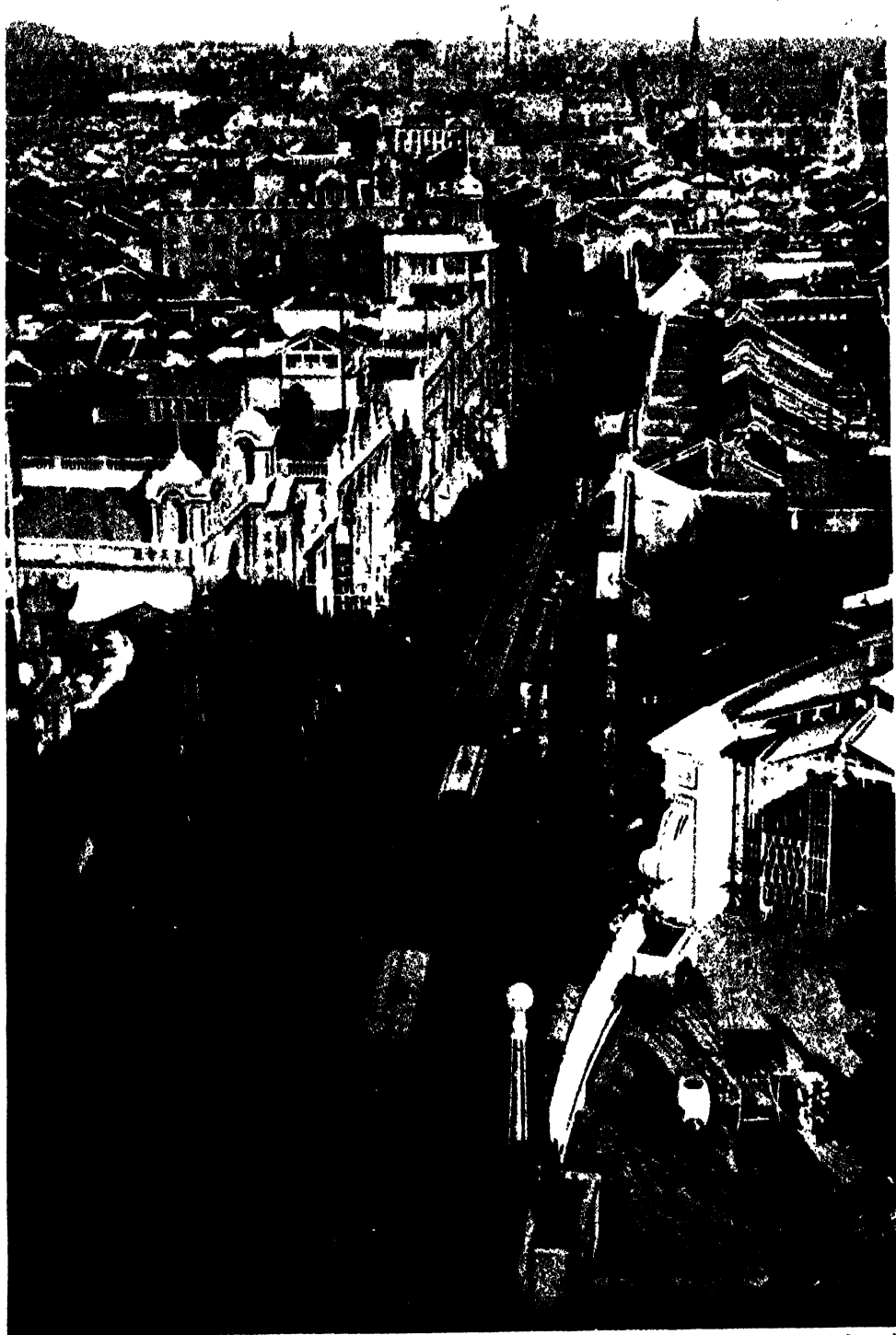
island of Formosa to Japan, while both the Japanese and Russians have interests in Manchuria. The number of the Treaty Ports has been increased, and all the inland waterways are open to foreign traders.

Who are these exclusive people, the Chinese, and what is the land they guard so carefully? The size of the Chinese Empire varied as new lands were conquered or old ones taken from it. Much the same might be said of the Chinese Republic, for Mongolia has become an independent state and various other portions of the old empire are in a semi-independent condition. The area under consideration consists of the eighteen provinces of China proper and the three provinces of Manchuria. The population is nearly as large as that of Europe. Sze-Chuen, the largest province, is as big as France; Che-kiang, the smallest, is larger than Ireland.

### *Mysterious Origin of the Race*

The Chinese belong to the great yellow race of mankind. They are small in stature, their eyes are almond-shaped and frequently slanting, their skin is yellowish and their hair black and straight. They came into China about 4000 years ago, though nobody knows whence they came, and drove the people already living there to the mountains of the western provinces, especially Yun-nan, where about twenty millions of them still exist.

Early Chinese history is that of a number of scattered feudal states, more or less under an Emperor, but about 220 B.C. all these were welded together under the



Camell

### TRAMCAR BELLS DROWN THE TEMPLE BELLS IN SHANGHAI

We do not see much that is Oriental in this view of the Nanking Road, which runs through the European part of Shanghai; but not far away there is a teeming native city with temples instead of great stores and hotels, and man-drawn rickshaws instead of trams. European residents are protected by their own police and army.

## THE LAND OF THE DRAGON

firm rule of the Emperor Shih, who, in addition to making canals and roads, started to build the Great Wall, stretching 1,700 miles along the northern boundary of China, to keep back the barbarians.

In spite of this, Jenghiz Khan and his Mongols over-ran northern China early in the thirteenth century, and his grandson, Kublai Khan, overthrew the Chinese rulers and made himself emperor, reigning with great splendour at Peking. His successors were displaced in 1368 by a Chinese ruler who founded the Ming dynasty, which lasted for nearly three centuries.

Then again came an invading force from the north, Manchu Tartars, some of whom had been living in northern China for centuries. Their leader ascended the throne at Peking in 1644, and that was the date when the Chinaman got his pigtail, for this emperor made all his Chinese subjects shave the front of their heads and wear their hair in a queue as a badge of subjection. This Manchu dynasty continued until 1912, when the Chinese Empire became a republic.

Along the coast, in the Treaty Ports and those towns where Europeans dwell and trade, the people are changing rapidly. They are adopting European dress and education, and with these they are absorbing Western ideas, and are welcoming improved methods of business and transport. But this is only the fringe of China; four-fifths of the nation are artisans and agriculturists, living in the country towns and villages, or on the small farms of the vast interior. These people change but little. They keep to the customs which have been handed down to them through the centuries, and



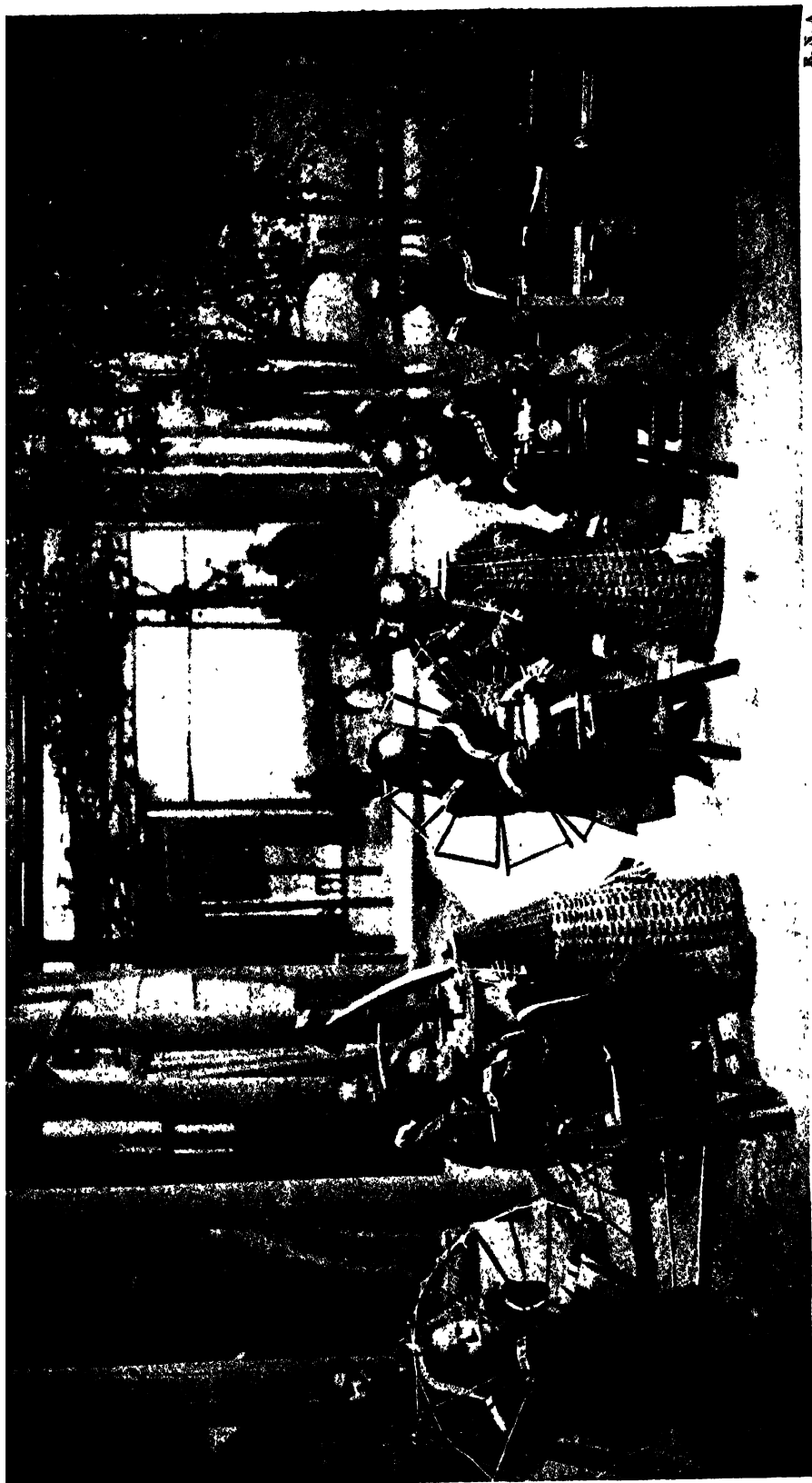
Camera Craft, Peking

### BENIGN CHINESE GENTLEMAN TAKES HIS EASE

To the Chinaman time is of no account. He is convinced that his unchanging civilization is the best, and is content to let the turmoil of Western progress pass him by, while he drinks his tea and smokes his pipe.

they work the land as their ancestors did 2,000 years ago.

Manchuria, the country over which the Japanese and Russians went to war in 1904-5, is a land of contrasts. Hot in summer, it is icebound for four months of winter, so it has the products and animals of both hot and cold countries, from rice to barley, from tigers to sables and wolves. The country is rich in minerals, especially gold and coal. It abounds in bird life, including such edible birds as pheasants, partridges and quails,



E. N. A.

### QUICK, YOUTHFUL FINGERS BUSY WITH BASKETS THAT WILL BE HAWKED IN HONG KONG MARKETS

In Hong Kong there is a great Chinese population, attracted to the island by the advantages of British rule and thriving trade conditions. The young Chinaman early becomes a breadwinner and works hard for an astonishingly low wage. He is usually deft and occasionally

becomes a craftsman of genius. We might be inclined to envy these young people in their sunny, open-air surroundings when we think of our school-rooms; but most Chinese children are ignorant, growing into citizens who are incapable of improving their conditions.



#### THE HARBOUR OF MACAO: A GAILY PAINTED PORTUGUESE HOLIDAY RESORT IN THE CHINA SEAS

Situated on a narrow peninsula in the mouth of the Canton River, a sheltered position, open to breezes from the sea, Macao has become a popular watering place, with brightly painted houses, fine gardens and entertainments. Like all the ports of China that are governed by Europeans, Macao has a very large Chinese population. Since, however, it has but to-day its importance has greatly shrunk.

## THE LAND OF THE DRAGON

and in the mountains and on the steppes are found bears, antelopes, deer of many kinds, hares, squirrels and foxes.

The Manchus have small farms where dogs are bred for their thick winter coats, and a Manchu girl will often have six dogs for her dowry. This dog is the Chow, which we keep as a pet, just as we do the Pekingese. The latter is in China a very tiny animal, and is called the "sleeve dog," because it is kept warm by being carried in the wide sleeves of its owner's robe.

### *Salmon Skins as Clothes*

The rivers of Manchuria supply many kinds of fish, including sturgeon and trout and a variety of salmon called the tamara. The skin of this salmon is made into clothing and is worn by the people of a certain district, who are called, in consequence, the Fish Skin Tartars,

The Manchus are naturally a race of hunters, but when their country was united with China, Chinese settlers introduced agriculture. Maize, rice, wheat and barley are grown, but the principal grain cultivated is millet, which forms the staple food of the working people. The grain is boiled, put into bowls and eaten with chopsticks, vegetables fresh, cooked or pickled being added for flavour. From millet is distilled a spirit called "samshu," which is sold all over the country. Millet stalks are used for fencing and firewood, and the poorer people weave them together and plaster them with mud to make their houses.

### *What is Made from the Bean*

By far the most important article cultivated for export is the bean, of which many varieties are grown. Several of these yield an oil which is used all over China for lighting and heating, and the residue, known as "bean cake," is sent south to fertilise the sugar-cane fields. Some varieties are employed to make bean-flour and vermicelli, others are made into a strange sort of cheese called "bean curd," and from the soya bean is made the famous "soy" sauce.

As well as being joined by the Trans-Siberian Railway to Europe, Manchuria is connected by rail with the coast and with China. Much of the export trade, however, which goes principally to China, is by means of the rivers and the sea. There is a continual procession of rough, springless carts bumping along the bad roads from the interior to the various points for shipment, bearing grain, skins, furs, beans, bean-cake, bean-oil and samshu, the last two carried in willow baskets lined with waterproof paper.

In districts a long way from the coast, where it does not pay to transport millet for sale, this grain is used for samshu. When added to the refuse from the spirit-making, it forms the food of herds of pigs, which during the winter are killed and frozen and sent down to the coast.

### *Finger-Nails Two Inches Long*

In the warmest districts of Manchuria, as well as in certain provinces of China proper, wild silk is obtained from a caterpillar which feeds on oak leaves. Camel hair and sheep's wool are woven into rugs, but, curiously enough, neither here nor in China is wool used for clothing; padded garments of silk or cotton, costly furs or common skins, according to the rank of the wearer, are used to keep out the cold. For outdoor use in winter the working people wear shoes of tough oxhide stuffed with coarse grass to make them warmer.

The women do not bind their feet, but the rich, here as in China, frequently allow two or more finger-nails to grow two inches long and protect them with ornamental cases of gold or silver. The Manchus are taller than the Chinese, but have not such ability or intelligence. Mukden is the capital of the country, and Port Arthur, in the extreme south of Manchuria, was, until 1898, China's greatest naval station in the north.

There is much beautiful mountain scenery in Manchuria. A peak in the province of Kirin is known as the "Ever-White Mountain" on account of the white pumice stone at the summit. It is the



**A CHINESE ACTOR**, wearing the richest of clothes, plays the part of the heroine. In modern China, as in the England of Shakespeare's day, women do not appear on the stage, so that men and boys have to take the female parts. Some Chinese plays, usually the most popular, are long, and several days may be needed for their performance.



## THE LAND OF THE DRAGON

crater of an old volcano. This is said to be the birthplace of Nurhachu, the father of the first Manchu emperor of China, and as such was maintained as a sacred place by the imperial family until China became a republic.

The four northern provinces of China proper contain, like Manchuria, considerable mineral wealth, especially coal. It has been calculated that the province of Shansi alone has enough coal to supply the whole world for thousands of years. All north-west China is covered with a peculiar, yellowish-brown earth called loess. This loess is very fertile, and, given a sufficient rainfall, plentiful crops are



Prideaux

### YOUNG CHINA'S CHOPSTICKS

In China they have no knife, fork and spoon, but two sticks, which are used like pincers. As the principal Chinese food is rice, table manners must be difficult to learn.



Prideaux

### JUGGLERS OF THE STREETS

A young Chinese juggler is trying to attract an audience before he begins his tricks. His even tinier assistant carries the knives that will shortly be whirling in the air.

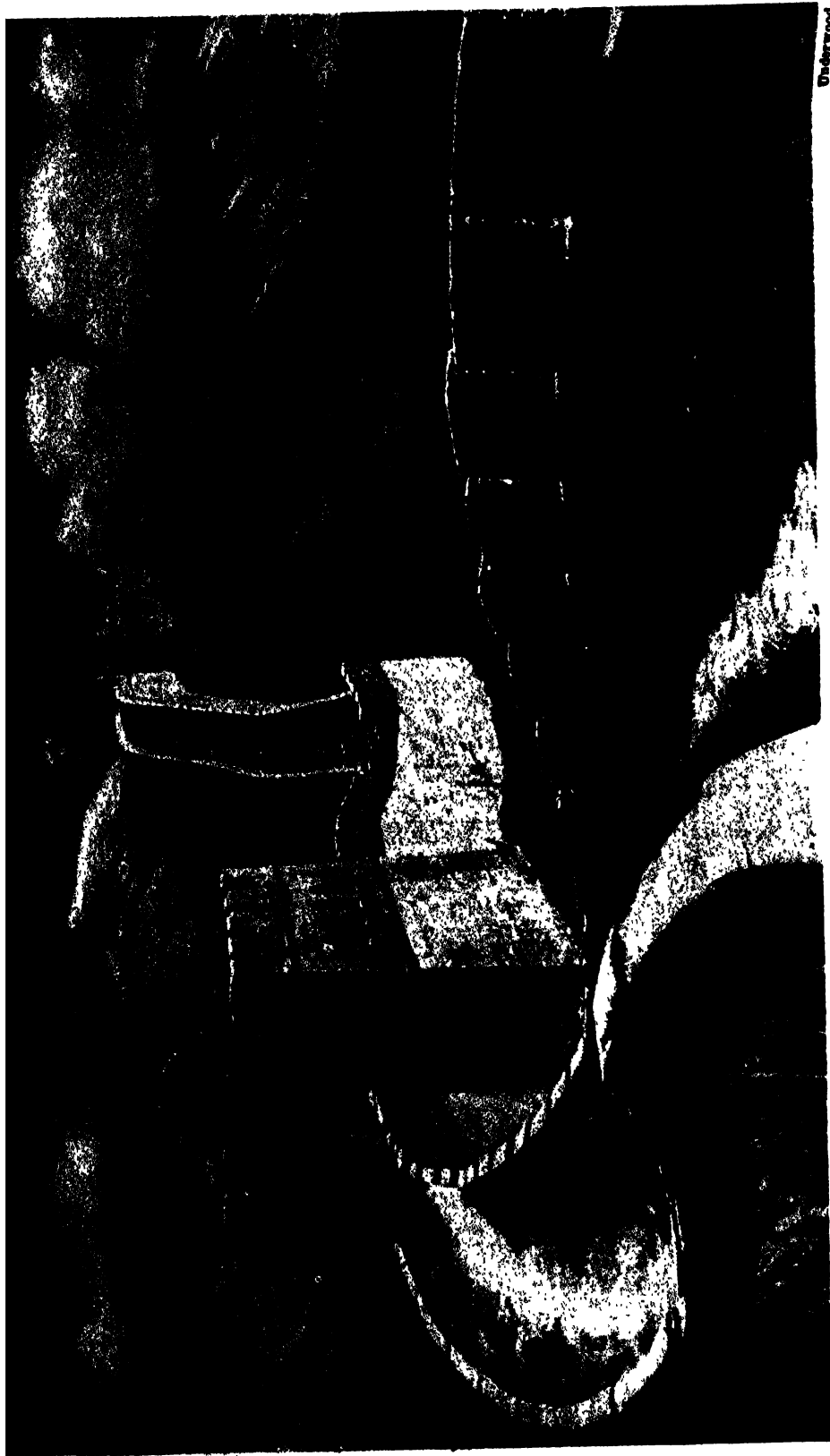
raised. Drought, however, means famine, and as transport is difficult, millions sometimes die before food can reach them.

It is believed that it is the loess which has caused yellow to be the national colour of China. The emperor's title meant "Ruler of the Yellow Lands"; the imperial flag was a dragon on a yellow ground; yellow porcelain was reserved for the emperor's use; while the order of the "Yellow Jacket" was one of the highest honours the emperor could bestow. Only two Europeans ever received this. One of them was General Gordon, who did so much for China that he was called "Chinese Gordon."



**LIFE-LONG BEGGING AS A PROFITABLE TRADE IN CHINA**

The Chinese are a kindly race in so far as beggars are concerned. The religions of the country preach the virtue of giving to others, and vast swarms of vagabonds shirk work to live on the pious offerings of their richer fellows. The young beggars that we see in this photograph, although their clothes are in tatters, do not seem ill-fed.



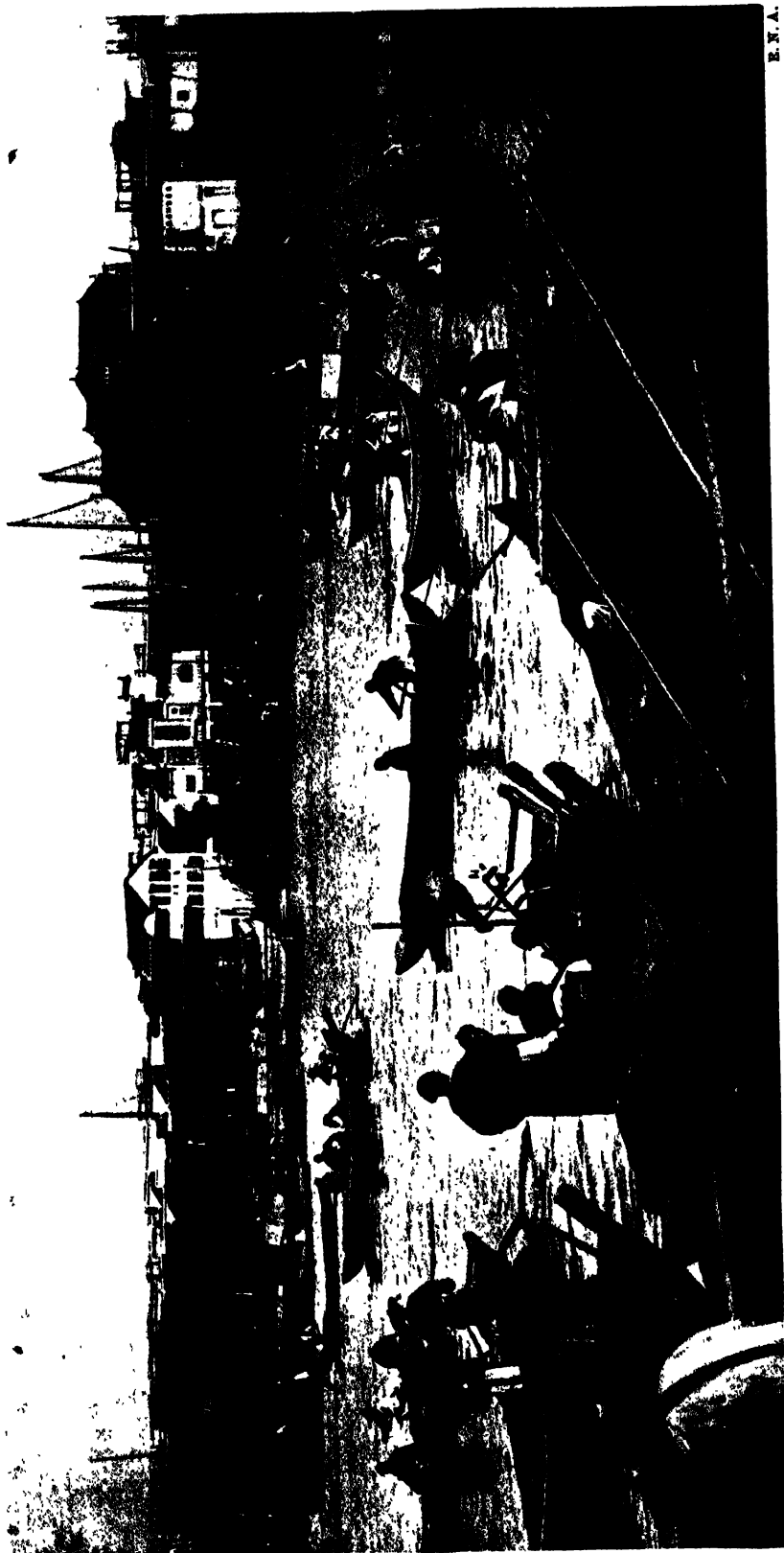
Underwood

the wall was most carefully and strongly built. The height of the wall is generally from 20 to 30 feet, and at intervals of about 200 yards towers were placed. The wall was built to protect China against savage invaders, but was not altogether successful as a means of defence.

**THE GREAT WALL OF CHINA** was begun in 214 B.C., and is 1,500 miles long. In this photograph, which shows the wall at the Nankow Pass, it seems still to be in good condition; this is due to the fact that, at passes and other routes that might be used by enemies,



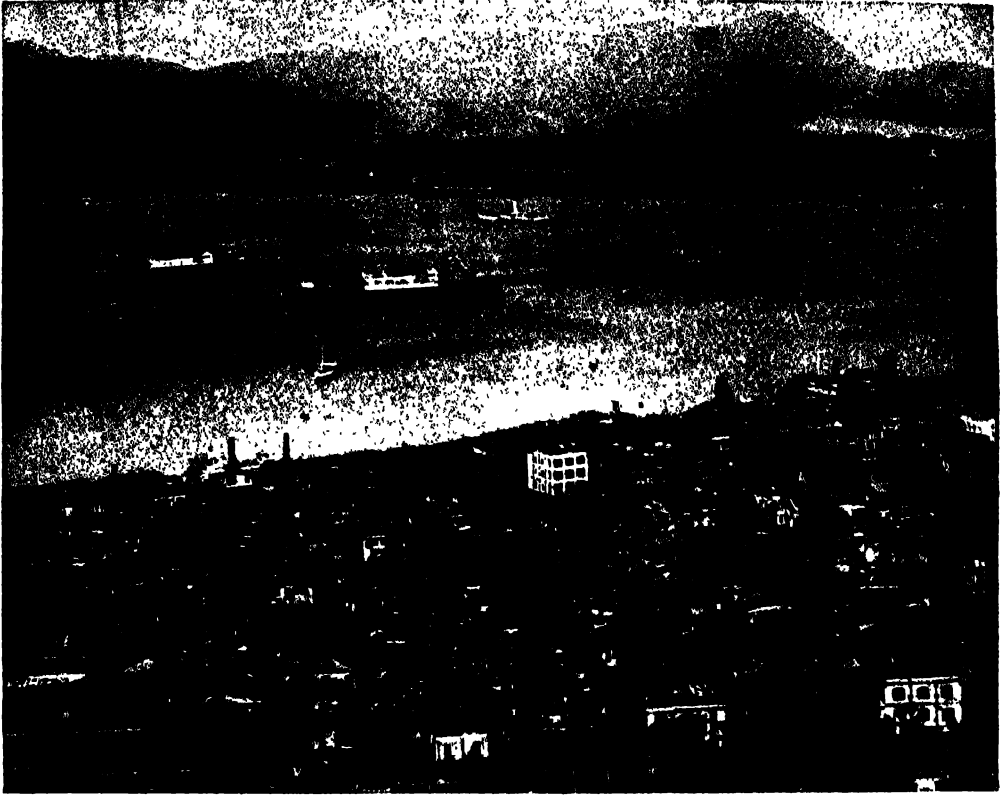
**CHINESE MONKS** find quiet in this tree-sheltered holy place, with its pagoda and graceful marble bridges. It is situated on the island of Pu Tu, on which only monks may dwell. The island is especially dedicated to the goddess of mercy, who is said to keep a close watch over sailors. As a large proportion of the Chinese earns a living on the sea and the rivers, the goddess is very popular, and many thousands of pilgrims visit the island. They may even come long distances in the hope of securing the safety of themselves and their relatives.



E. H. A.

#### AT HANKAU BUSY CHINESE FLIT ABOUT THE WATERS OF THE YANG-TSE-KIANG IN THEIR BOATS

Hankau is one of the most prosperous cities of China, having a large trade, mainly in tea. The city is conveniently near the districts which produce tea, cotton, silk and rice, and the Yang-tse-Kiang enables Hankau merchants to ship their goods cheaply and directly to Shanghai, a seaport centre of trade with Europe. At Hankau the river is thronged with natives in rowing boats, sampans and junks. Some people have no homes ashore, but live in house-boats like those seen in page 431 on the Shameen Canal in Canton.



#### THE HILLS OF THE CHINESE MAINLAND FROM HONG KONG

The island of Hong Kong is a British possession. We see its capital, Victoria, in the foreground of this photograph. The channel between the island and the mainland affords a safe anchorage for the many ships that take part in Hong Kong's trade, and for that part of the British Navy which guards the Empire's interests in the Far East.

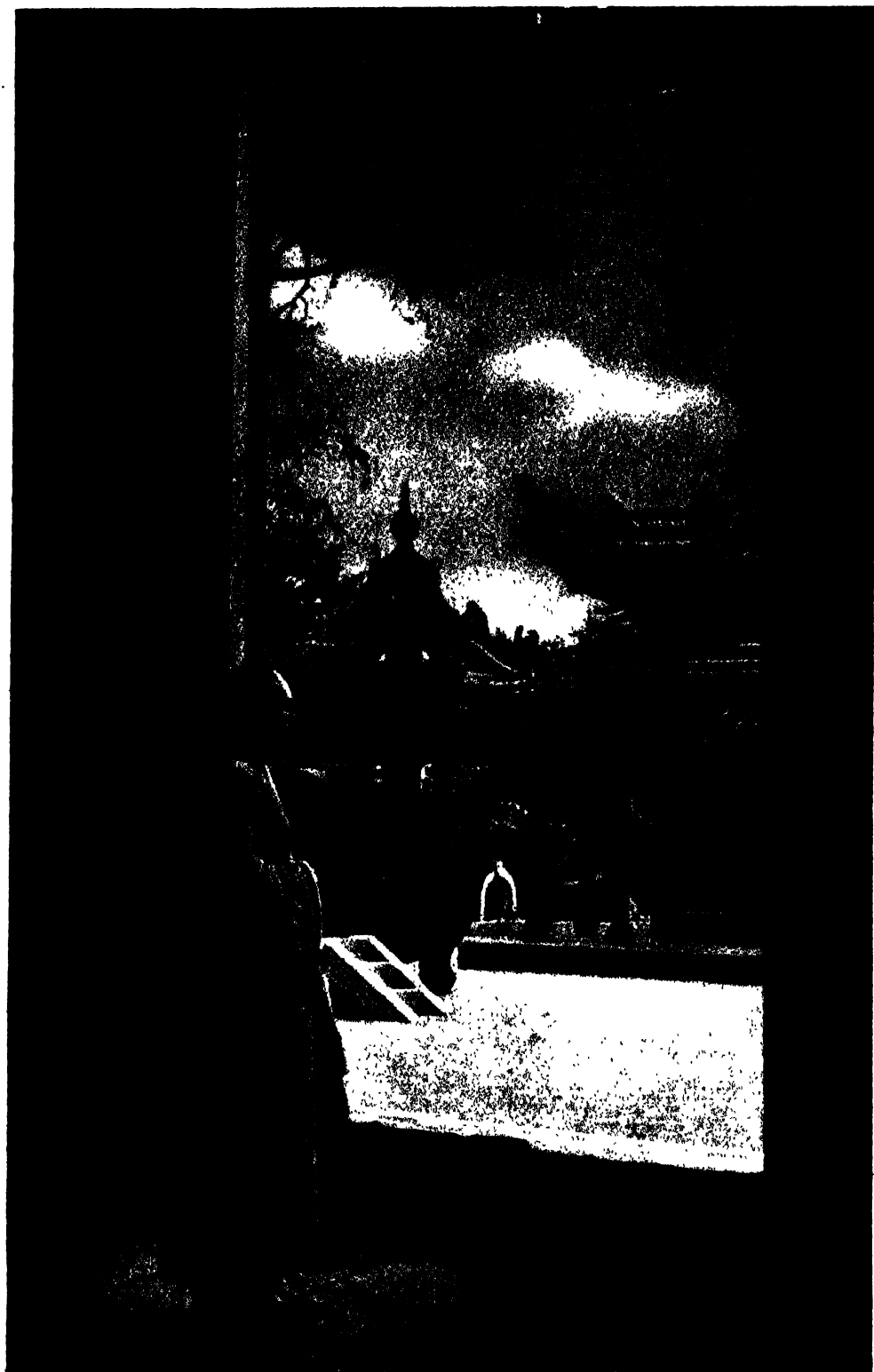
The big river of the north is the Hwang-ho or Yellow River, so called from the yellow earth it carries down to the sea. This river, which is so turbulent that it is of little use for transport, frequently overflows its banks. It has changed its course at least five times, sweeping away millions of homes. Far more useful is the Yang-tse-Kiang, which under one name or 'another runs through central China from west to east. This river, which is navigable by big steamers for about 1,000 miles, is so wide in parts that when a vessel is in midstream it is impossible for the people on it to see either bank.

Connecting these rivers is the Grand Canal, nearly 900 miles long. The coastal provinces of Kiang-su and Che-kiang, through which this important canal passes, are the chief silk producing districts of China; here thousands of looms are working all the year round.

Silk is one of the things we owe to China, and so anxious were the Chinese to keep the industry to themselves that it was death to anyone who tried to take silk-worm eggs or mulberry tree saplings out of the country. But about 550 A.D. two pilgrims succeeded in bringing to Europe some silk-worm eggs concealed in their bamboo walking staves.

In the valley of the Yang-tse-Kiang, and some of the provinces south of it, the rearing of silk-worms and the unwinding of the cocoons are carried on as household industries, for China is a land where everything that can be done is done in the home.

Side by side with the silk is another great industry, the cultivation of the tea plant. Tea also we owe to China, for, until someone brought the first tea leaves to England in 1645, we were drinking beer for breakfast. In China, tea-growing is a family concern. The plant is cultivated in small patches, and women and children



Frideaux

**A YELLOW-ROBED PRIEST** looks from his monastery on Pu Tu island at the bright, outside world. These priests of Buddha, who, though Indian in origin, is worshipped by a great part of the population of China, pass their lives in prayer and study, and depend on the offerings of religious people for food and clothing, and often for a place to sleep.



Prideaux

**THIS HOLY MAN** of China is very careful of his own comfort. As a priest, he ought to go barefoot and in rags ; instead, he wears thick felt slippers and an ample robe. This is made of patches sewn together to give it a slight appearance of a beggar's cloak, but being of padded silk it loses none of its power to keep the wearer warm.



## THE LAND OF THE DRAGON



Hunter

### CHINESE LADY'S NATIVE DRESS

As many Chinese women wear trousers, it is often difficult to distinguish between them and men. Women's feet used to be pressed to fit into such tiny shoes as these.

pick the leaves. Most households weave the cotton for the clothes they require, and in the agricultural districts each family tries to live on the food it can grow on its own little plot.

It is claimed that fine porcelain has been made in China for more than 2,000 years, and even in the Middle Ages "China" ware was celebrated. It is of all descriptions, from fine, ivory-white cups of egg-shell thinness to heavy bowls and dishes of a rich green made to imitate jade. There were many factories in China, the most famous being that of King-te-Chen in Kiang-si, which supplied the royal household. It was destroyed in the Taiping rebellion of 1850, but has

been rebuilt. The secret of the manufacture of the most celebrated variety of this Chinese porcelain is completely lost, so that the specimens remaining are of great value.

In the south we find that rice takes the place of millet. It is grown in small patches, flooded artificially with water from the nearest river. Some of these fields yield three crops a year, and as the Chinese make the most of everything, small fish are put into the flooded fields to fatten while the rice is growing.

Sugar-cane and cotton are cultivated, and fruit-growing is carried on to a considerable extent. Oranges, which Arabs are said to have brought to Europe,



Prideaux

### WESTERN MODES IN THE EAST

This lady wears a skirt cut in the Chinese style. Skirts have long been worn in China on ceremonial occasions. The Western shoes form a contrast to the other woman's.



Prideaux

#### MODERN FASHIONS ARE VIEWED DISAPPROVINGLY BY THE PRIEST

As two Chinese ladies who dress in modern style pass the temple, an old priest watches them with grave displeasure. He also does not like to see young women walking about without a chaperon. The majority of Chinamen find something extremely comic in our Western clothes, and will grin and chatter and otherwise show that they are amused.


are grown all over south China. Bananas are to be had nearly all the year round; pineapples, cape gooseberries, peaches and apricots are abundant, while palm trees supply several millions of palm leaf fans annually. But the most useful plant of south China is the bamboo. It supplies the material for the framework for the huts of matting which the poorer peasants call "home," and is also employed in the making of furniture of all kinds, umbrella frames, clothes-lines, tools, etc., and when it has been soaked and pulped it is made into paper. Its dried leaves are made into sun-hats and raincoats, and its young shoots are pickled for food.

With such a vast population everything that can be eaten is eaten. Birds'-nest soup, for instance, is a Chinese delicacy. The nests, which are small, and like thin cases of gelatine, are found in great numbers in caves by the sea. They are boiled until they make a thick white substance which is the first course at

every grand dinner. A seaweed called agar-agar, a sea-slug known in Europe as *bêche-de-mer*, sharks' fins and eggs that have been preserved for a long time, are all eaten and enjoyed, while among the poorer people, in times of scarcity, cats and dogs, rats, mice and even snakes form part of the diet.

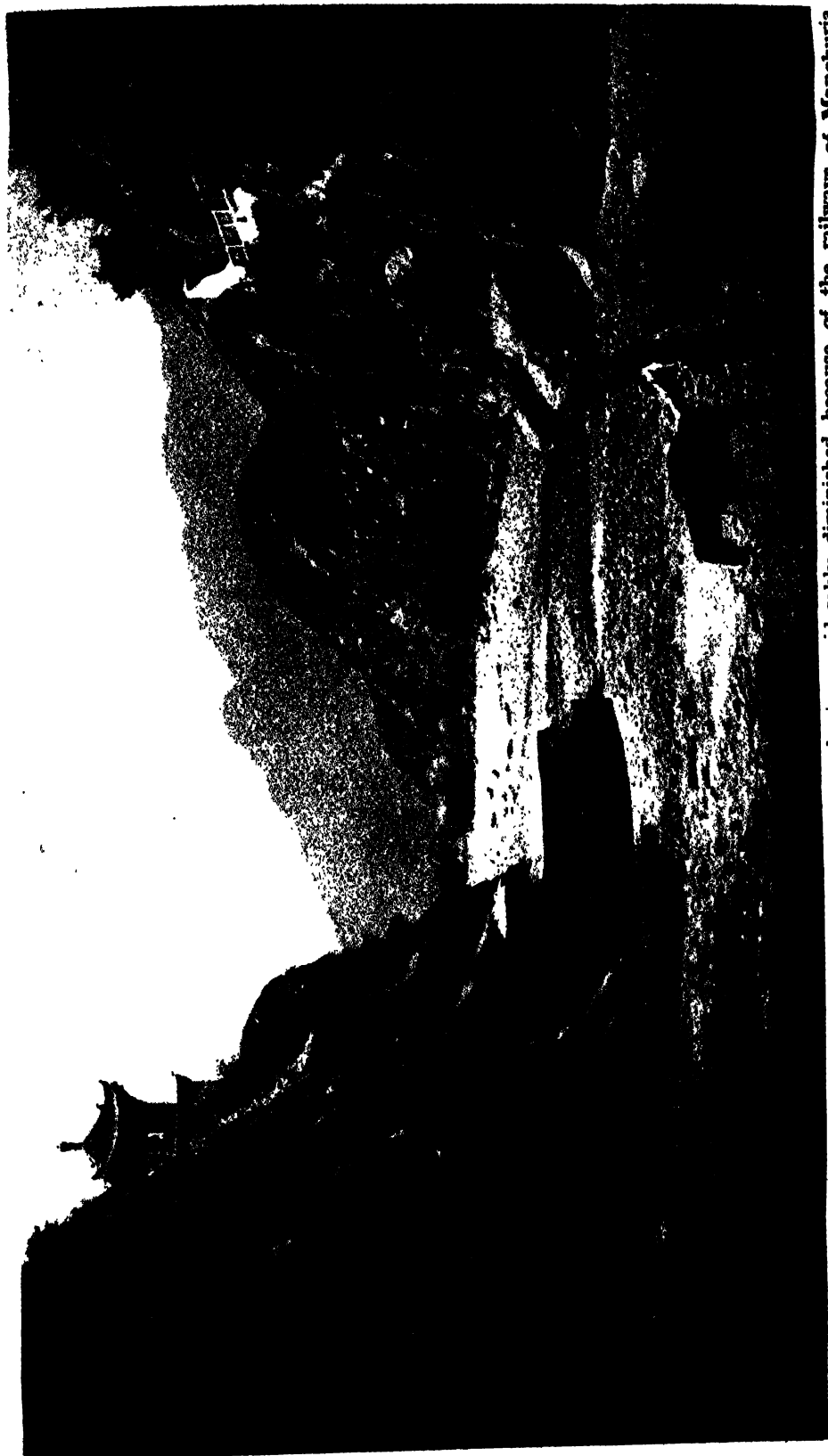
What sort of lives do these people live; what is their religion; what are their pleasures and amusements? There are three main religions in China—Confucianism, Taoism and Buddhism. Confucius was a wise man who was born in 551 B.C. and taught a beautiful rule of conduct, similar in some respects to that of Christ. There is at least one temple to Confucius in every city, and Confucianism is the state religion of this enormous country.

Lao-tse, the founder of Taoism, who lived at the same time as Confucius, taught the way by which mortals should in time become immortal. This teaching has



The Yang-tse-Kiang has many names. It is known officially to the Chinese as the Chang-Kiang, or Great River, popularly as the Blue River; in the districts near Tibet it is the River of Golden Sand; elsewhere it is the Piu-Shiu-Kiang and the Min. It is 3,000 miles long.

**THE YANG-TSE-KIANG**, on its way to the sea, flows through 400 miles of such magnificent mountain scenery as we see here, immediately above the town of Ichang. The river is not always so placid, however, for in places there are rapids that are very dangerous to shipping.



**THIS GREAT HIGHWAY**, unpaved, studded with rocks and crossed by streams, runs from Peking, the capital of China, to Kalgan. Thence tracks cross Mongolia, leading to Siberia and Russia. This is the road used by the tea-caravans for eastern Europe, although its importance

is considerably diminished because of the railways of Manchuria and the Trans-Siberian Railway. Another railway has now been built between Peking and Kalgan. In spite of this, however, the Chinaman, with his distrust of new things, still uses the old, rough way.

Private



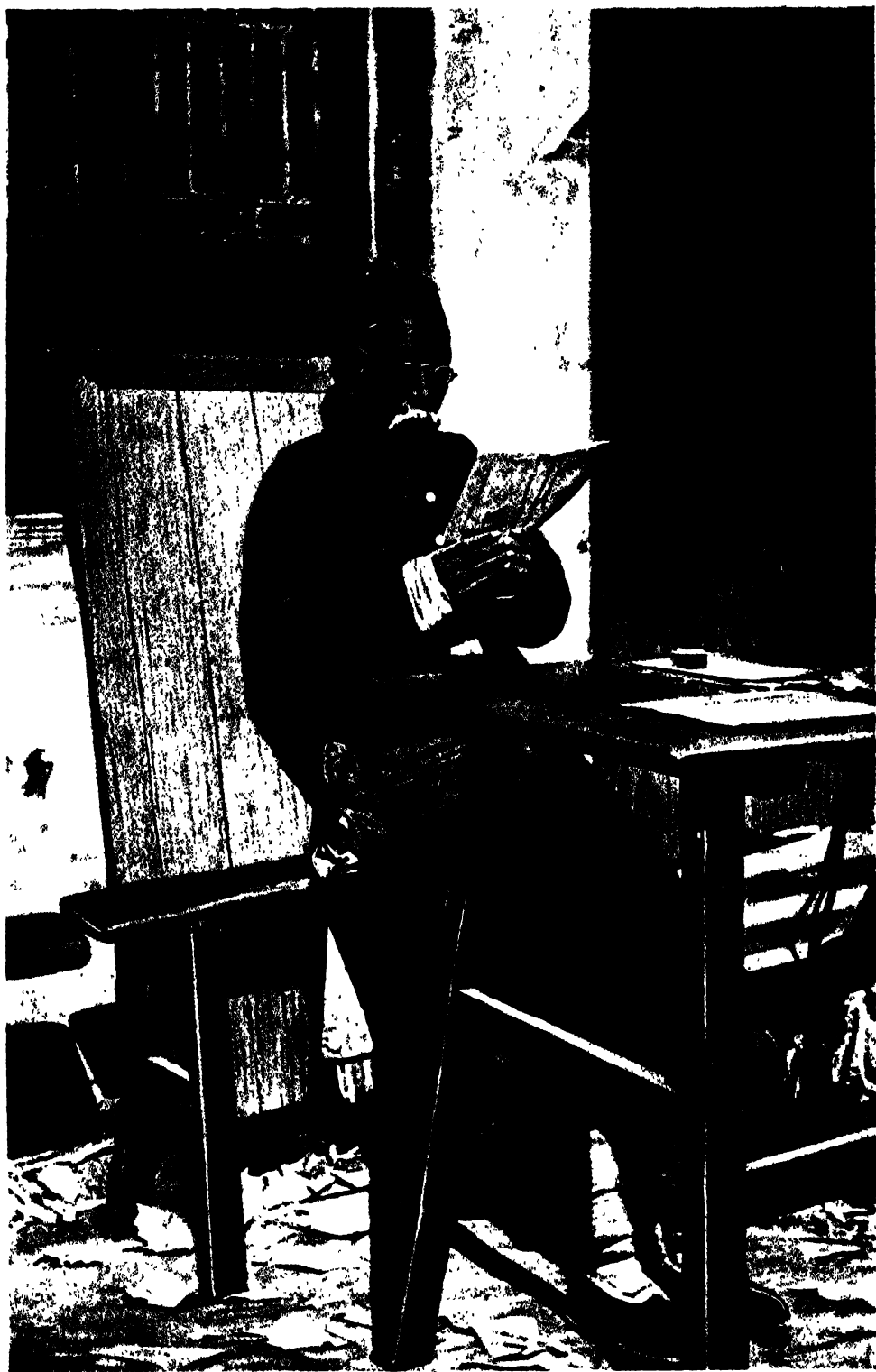
**FAMILY WASHING DAY IN CHINA: THE HOUSEHOLD GATHERS TO LEND MOTHER A HELPING HAND**  
Chinamen have set up laundries throughout the world ; but at home impossible to deny that it quickly wears out the material. Although their methods of washing are really very wasteful. Anxious to be modern machines, such as wringers, have been introduced into China, the native washerwoman regards them merely as clever toys, and will thorough, the Chinaman beats and rubs linen and clothes with stones. Whatever may be said for this treatment as a cleansing process, it is tell Europeans that the system of her grandmother is surely best.



James

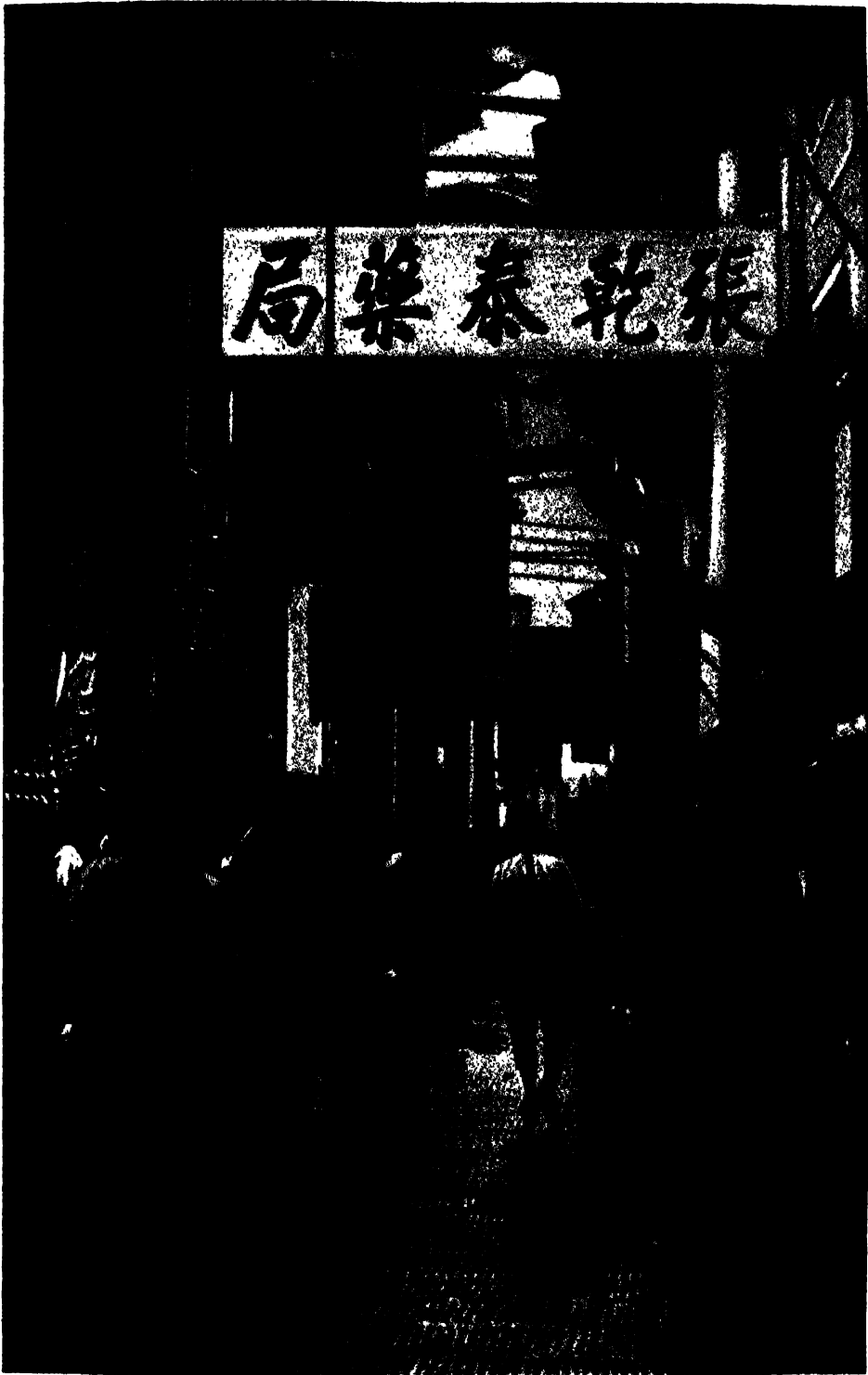
**NATIVES HURRY BY IN A BUSY TREE-BORDERED** Canton, which lies on the Pearl River, is the great port of southern China. For an Eastern city, even those parts in which the natives live are clean and well built. Many trees, temples and pagodas add greatly to Canton's appearance. Among the temples is one that

**STREET IN THE EUROPEAN QUARTER OF CANTON** contains five hundred gilt figures, each one different, which are supposed to represent genii, or spirits. The visitor is told, however, that one of them is Marco Polo, the Venetian traveller who came to China in 1271, and gained the respect of many great Chinamen of that time.



Carter

**A GENTLEMAN OF SHANGHAI** reads his paper in the open air. A Chinaman must be a scholar to be able to read at all. There are several varieties of the written language, all different from the one that is spoken. There is no alphabet; to write a word the Chinaman paints a figure, and the figure for each word is different from any other.



**KIU-KIANG** has several narrow streets, like this one, which cannot safely be used by the smallest of carriages. The numerous notices, which would be as uninteresting to the Chinaman as the name above an English shop to us, add strangeness to the scene. Kiu-Kiang, on the Yang-tse-Kiang, is a beautiful city with old, turreted walls.



## THE LAND OF THE DRAGON



Prideaux

### A STRONG MAN AT THE TILLER

On the Yang-tse-Kiang the man at the tiller cannot always enjoy his long pipe in peace as this steersman does. Many of the rapids have such fierce currents and whirlpools that even a swift steamship is in danger.

degenerated into a belief in omens and charms, in lucky days, soothsayers and magicians. It includes the worship of idols and of various spirits, such as the god of the city—for every city has its own god—the spirit of the household, the spirit of the mountains, etc.

The buildings called pagodas, of which there are nearly 2,000 in China, are believed to bring good luck to places nearby. The most famous of them all, the green and white Porcelain Tower of Nanking, had at its summit a gilt ball from which were hung on chains five large pearls,

each of which was supposed to protect the city from one of five disasters—floods, fires, dust-storms, tempests and disturbances amongst the citizens.

Buddhism, the third great religion, has its temples, wayside shrines, monasteries, nunneries and sacred mountains. Wu-tai in Shansi, up in the north of China, is a sacred mountain crowned with a Buddhist temple, in which is kept a golden lotus flower. From all parts of China and Tibet pilgrims come hoping to witness the reputed miraculous opening of this golden flower.

The really national religion of China, however, is the old heathen religion of "ancestor worship." When grandparents or parents die the names of the dead, with all particulars, are written on a piece of wood which is known as the ancestral tablet. This is put in a place of honour in the home by the eldest son, who burns incense before it and conducts family worship for the departed spirit. The coffin containing the body is covered with a pall—red for men, blue for women—and taken to the family grave. The family follows, led by the eldest son and accompanied by neighbours

and friends, the younger relatives being in white—the mourning colour.

The mourners take with them food, paper money and either models or paper cuttings of the chief objects needed in life and which it is believed the spirit will need in another world. They imagine that every dead person has three souls, each of which must be worshipped, at regular intervals, with offerings in the home, at the grave and in the temple of the city god. If this is not done they believe the spirit will be unhappy in the other world and that it will



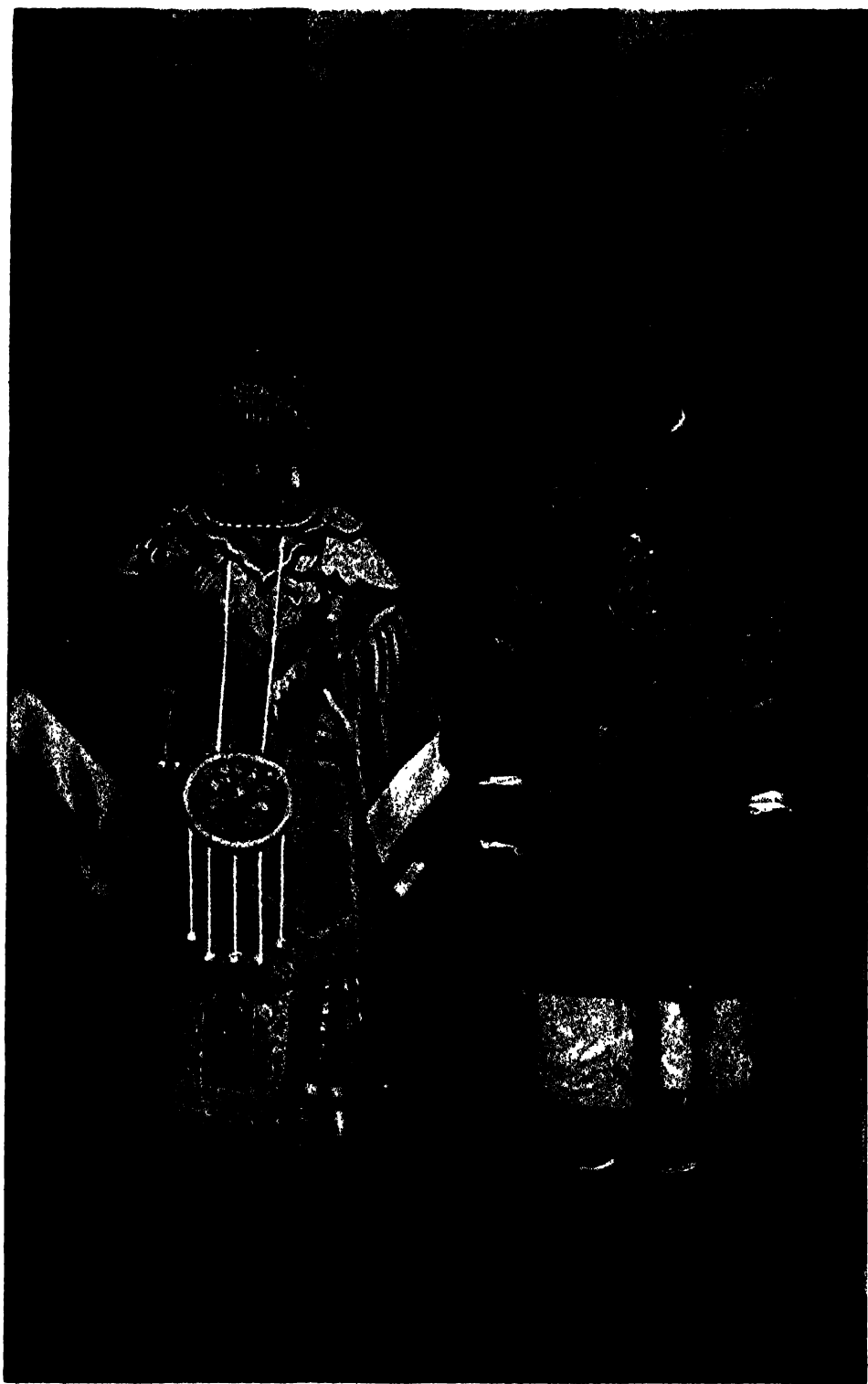
### POPULAR SHOW OF ACROBATIC STRENGTH AND AGILITY

The Chinaman is prepared to stop working at any moment to watch some interesting performance. The street is the usual stage, since the Chinese look upon it as being private rather than public property. They will act long plays, or establish barbers' or carpenters' shops in the highway, heedless of the fact that traffic is being blocked.



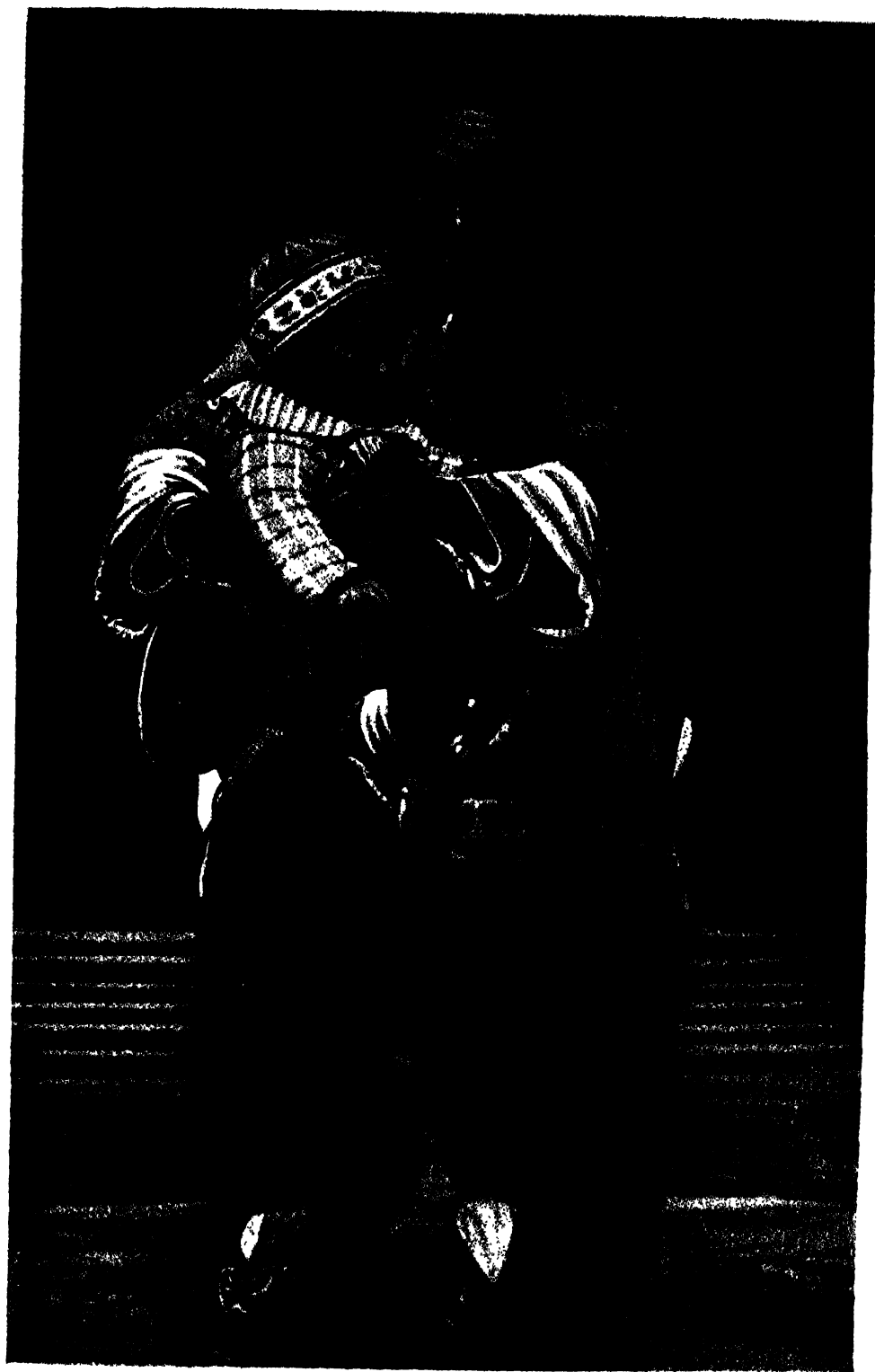
### WARLIKE, BUT NOTHING MORE TERRIBLE THAN A JUGGLER

Although this wild fellow with his two swords looks like a warrior about to charge, he is actually a juggler in the middle of one of his tricks, and "cash" and applause, instead of battles, are what he hopes to win. Notice the two children in the audience who are biding their faces from the camera lest it should cast an evil spell upon them.

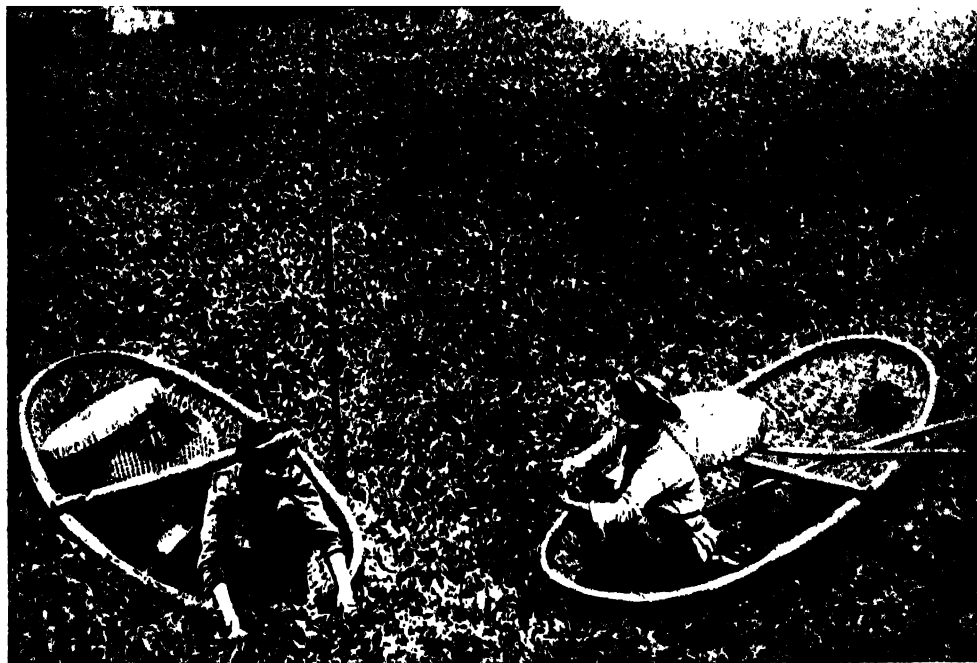


M. N. A.

**BRIDE AND BRIDEGROOM** alike dress in gorgeous costume for the wedding. The young man and his parents arrange the marriage with the parents of the future bride, and husband and wife do not usually meet until the wedding ceremony. The Chinese wife exchanges the life of a servant in her father's house for a similar life with her husband.

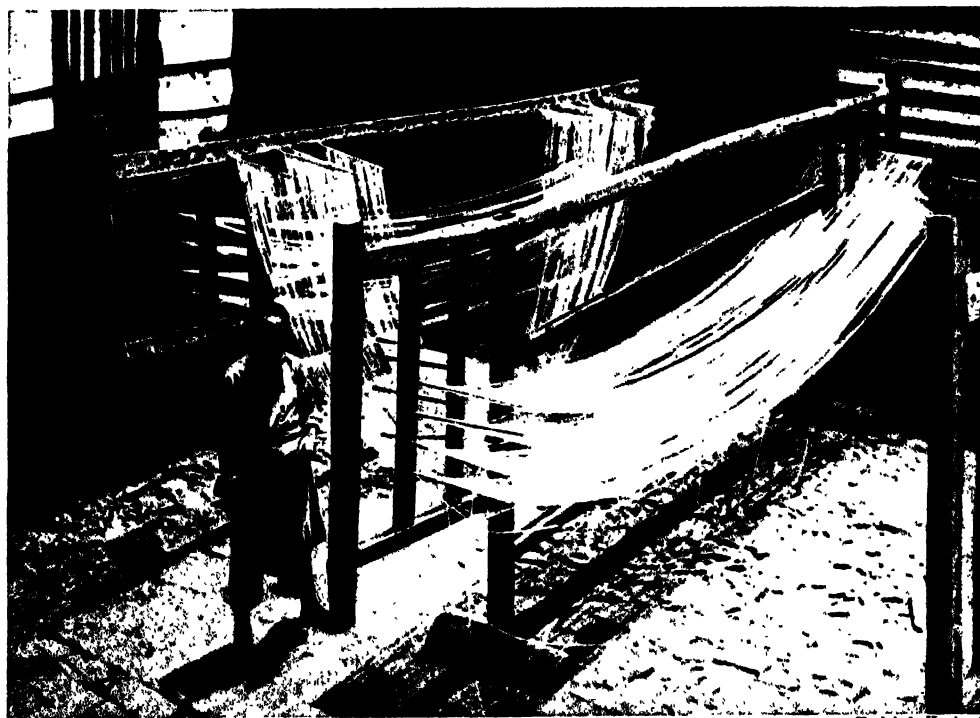


**GRANDMOTHER AND GRANDSON** enjoy the air together. The birth of a boy is always welcome in a Chinese family, and from his earliest days he has infinitely better treatment than a girl. It was once not uncommon for parents to kill a female child soon after she had been born, or to sell her as a slave after keeping her for a few years.



#### **WOMEN SPINACH GATHERERS IN THEIR BOATS OF BASKETWORK**

We do not usually associate the picking of vegetables with boats, but since spinach in China is grown in swamp-like fields with its roots in soft mud, the gatherers have to do their work afloat. Boats are also used in the rice-fields, because rice, to grow properly, needs to be entirely under water at certain times in the year.



Kadel & Herbert

#### **LENGTHS OF MACARONI HUNG DRYING IN THE SUN IN CHINA**

Macaroni is one of the principal Chinese foods, since it is cheap, being made of flour from grain that is grown in the country. Rice, beans, millet, eggs and fish are the other main foods of the people; but the rich have soup made of birds' nests, ducks' tongues, sea-slugs, sharks' fins and very old eggs. The usual drink is tea.

## THE LAND OF THE DRAGON

therefore make the descendants of the dead person miserable on earth.

As this worship must be conducted by a son, people without sons adopt boys, lest they should die with none to worship them. Rich families have an ancestral hall in which the tablets are stored and family records kept. Here in winter the Feast of Ancestors is held. Wine, fruit and other delicacies are offered at the shrine and are afterwards consumed by the family.

Let us now look into a Chinese home and see how the children pass their lives. At the birth of a son there is great rejoicing, and ginger is hung up at the street door to ward off evil spirits or strangers who might bring the child ill-luck. The new-born baby is wrapped in old clothes belonging to some grown-up, and is frequently made ill by being fed on a sweet, fine cake.

When the child is nearly a month old his head is shaved. This is a very important day in his life. He is given a name, dressed in fine new clothes, and carried by his father's mother to the temple, where offerings are made and the gods are thanked for the gift of a son. A feast known as the "ginger dinner" is given to friends and relatives, the invitation card being an egg coloured red. Men and women do not dine together in China, so the men are feasted at a restaurant, the women in the house. Pickled ginger and coloured eggs are always eaten at this feast, and every guest brings the baby a present.

As the boy grows up he is dressed like his elders in tiny coat and trousers—usually of red, the lucky colour. Children's birthdays are not kept up. A baby is



Gleason

### DAINTILY DRESSED MANCHURIAN LADIES TAKE TEA TOGETHER

In Manchuria, a great district in the north-east of China, men's clothes are very like those of a Chinaman, but the women wear long robes, whereas Chinese women wear trousers like their menfolk. We see that these ladies have not cramped their feet like the woman shown in page 514, since this practice was never followed in Manchuria.



Wynyard-Wright

**CANALS INSTEAD OF STREETS** enable the inhabitants of the town of Sung-Kiang to pass from place to place. A whole family, consisting of grandparents, children and grandchildren, frequently lives in a boat such as we see through the arch of this bridge. Chinese children, born and reared on a boat, can often swim before they can walk.



Peter Ky

**THIS GRACEFUL PAGODA**, which was built in 1583 at Suchau, is still in excellent condition, and with its delicate colours, perfect shape and lovely surroundings is probably the most beautiful in China. The Chinese have a saying that to be quite happy a man should be born in Suchau, live in Canton and die in Lien-Chow.





#### CAREFULLY CHAINED BRUIN GOES THROUGH HIS TRICKS BEFORE A CROWD IN A MANCHURIAN TOWN

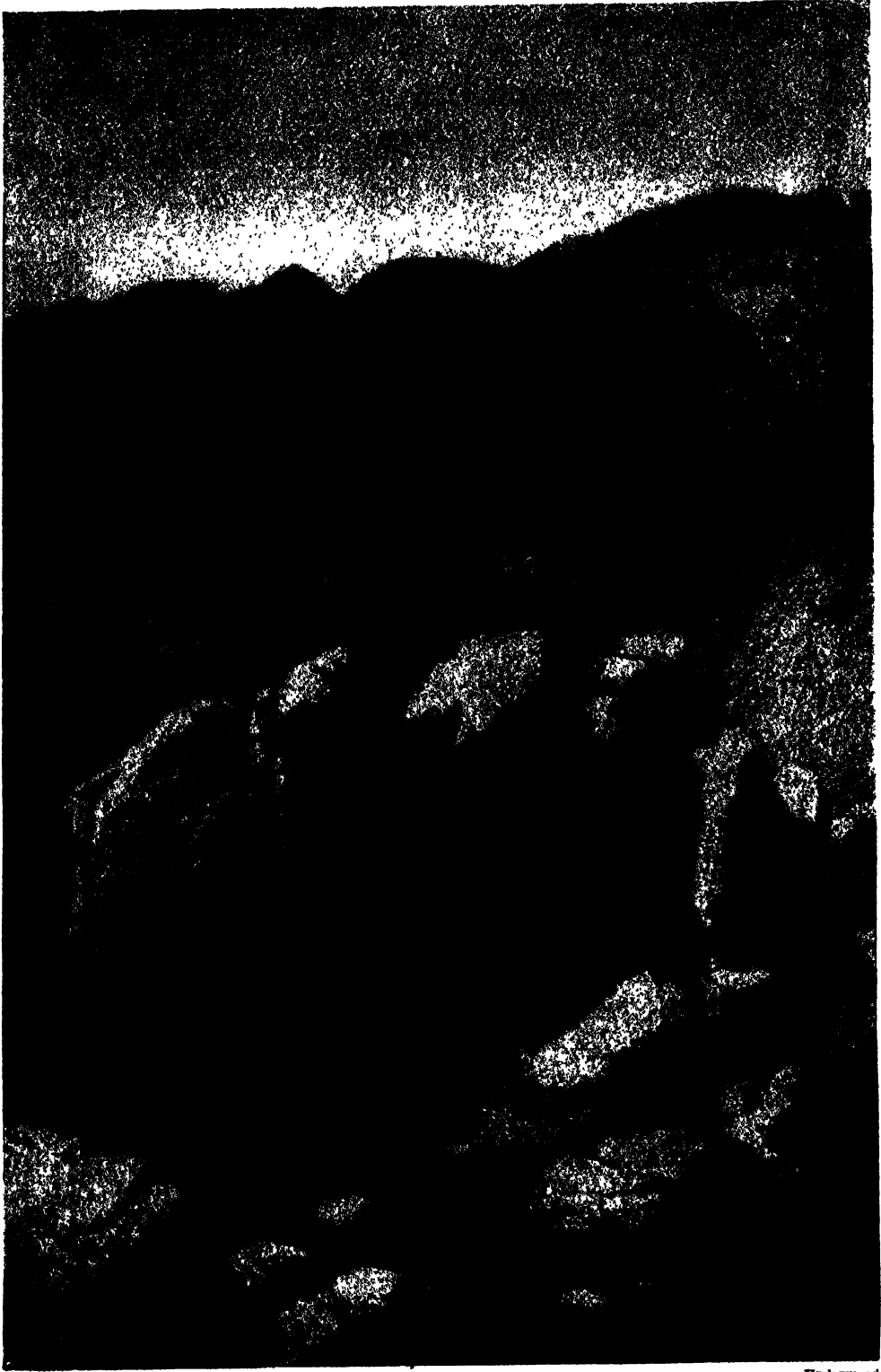
Many of the foreigners in Manchuria are Russians, which explains the Japan controls part of the Manchurian railway system. Manchuria has been coveted by many nations, since it has a good climate, very fertile soil and great mineral wealth. Only Russia and Japan, however, have succeeded in getting a strong hold on the Manchu provinces.



**PEEP-SHOWS ARE AS POPULAR IN MANCHURIA AS ARE PUNCH AND JUDY SHOWS IN ENGLAND**

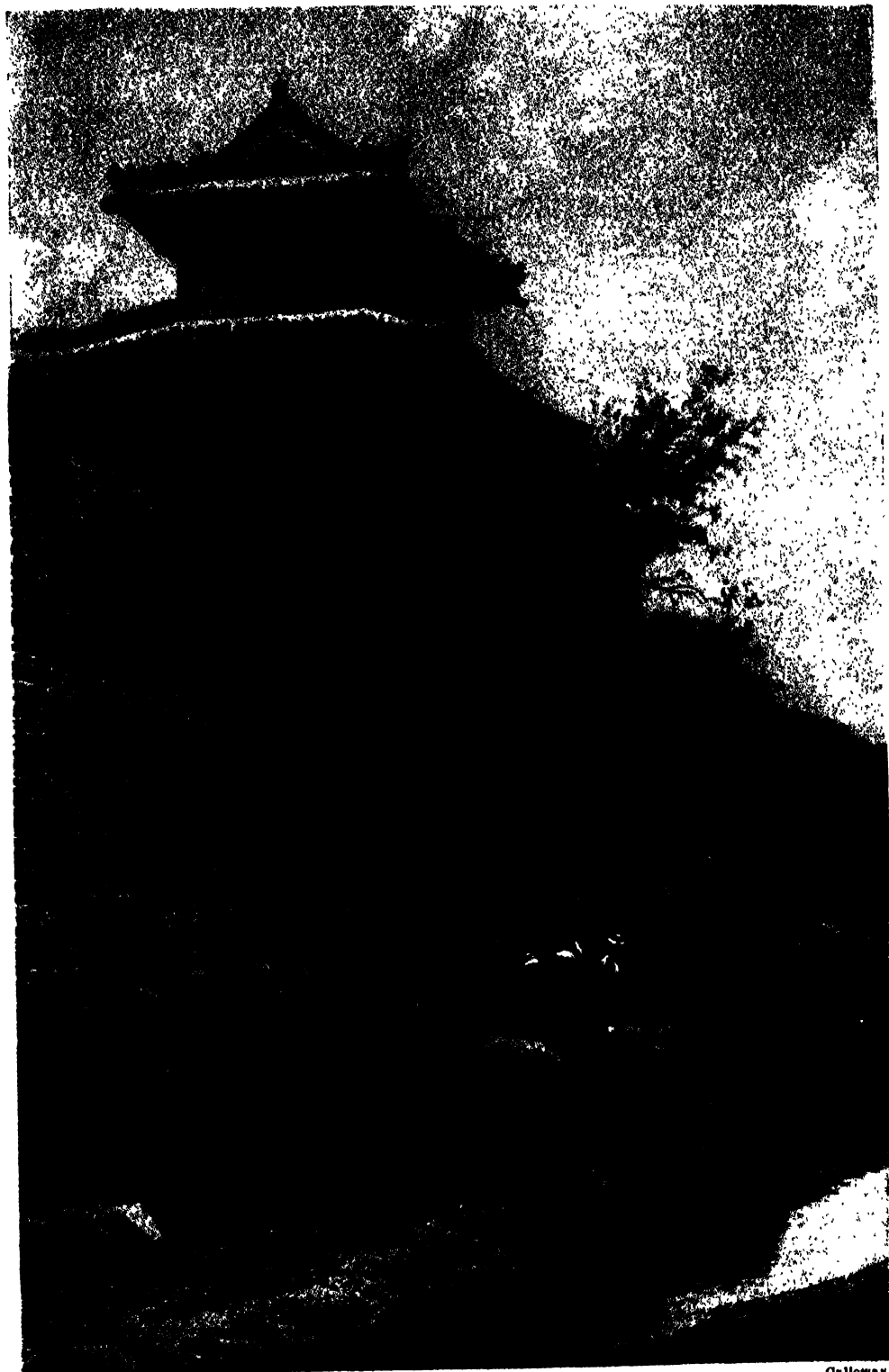
Amusements in the Far East are not so very different from those of the West. The young people of southern China enjoy performances very like our Punch and Judy shows, and appreciate the cinematograph. In Manchuria, which is less open to western European

influences than southern China, the peep-show is a very popular entertainment. Seats are provided for those who want to see the show, which takes place in the large boxes that we see in this photograph. These boxes are made to be carried from place to place.



Underwood

**BARREN MOUNTAIN SLOPES** stretch away from the town of Shanhaikuan, which is situated on the boundary between China proper and Manchuria. The Great Wall of China ended on the seashore near Shanhaikuan, but the part between the sea and the town has now disappeared. From Shanhaikuan the Wall runs in a westerly direction.



Galloway

**THE WALLS OF LIAO-YANG** in Manchuria were once mighty fortifications, but now seem to have been given over to the shrub and climbing plant. The town is in the centre of a rich, cotton-producing district, and has therefore a considerable trade. At the beginning of the Russo-Japanese War in 1904 there was fierce fighting round Liao-Yang.



**PINE TREES AND ANIMALS OF STONE GUARD THE TOMBS OF THE MANCHU EMPERORS NEAR MUKDEN**

P. N. A.  
In this neglected, weed-grown courtyard in Mukden, the capital of Manchuria, are the tombs of the Manchu rulers. In the city are preserved the boots and the pack of Nurhachu, a pedlar, who became the first emperor of Manchuria, and whose son, in 1644, became emperor of the whole of China. It is probable that the huge, stone animals were set up in imitation of the similar animals that form an avenue to the tombs of the Ming emperors whom the Manchus succeeded, since the new rulers would wish to have all the glories of the old.



Hunter

#### TELEGRAPH POLES AND CITY GATE IN MUKDEN'S MAIN STREET

Mukden is a walled city that was once the headquarters of the Manchu rulers, and round it they have built splendid temples and tombs. The town now has a railway station, and is the centre for trade and European enterprise throughout Manchuria. In the streets, however, the native dress and man-drawn carriage are still in evidence.

counted as being one year old at birth, and he adds on another year when the New Year comes in, so the Chinese New Year's Day, which, like our Easter, is a movable date, is everybody's birthday and a general holiday. Everybody who can puts on new clothes, fresh red paper mottoes are pasted on the doors, fruits and sweetmeats are placed on the tables and at night there are fireworks.

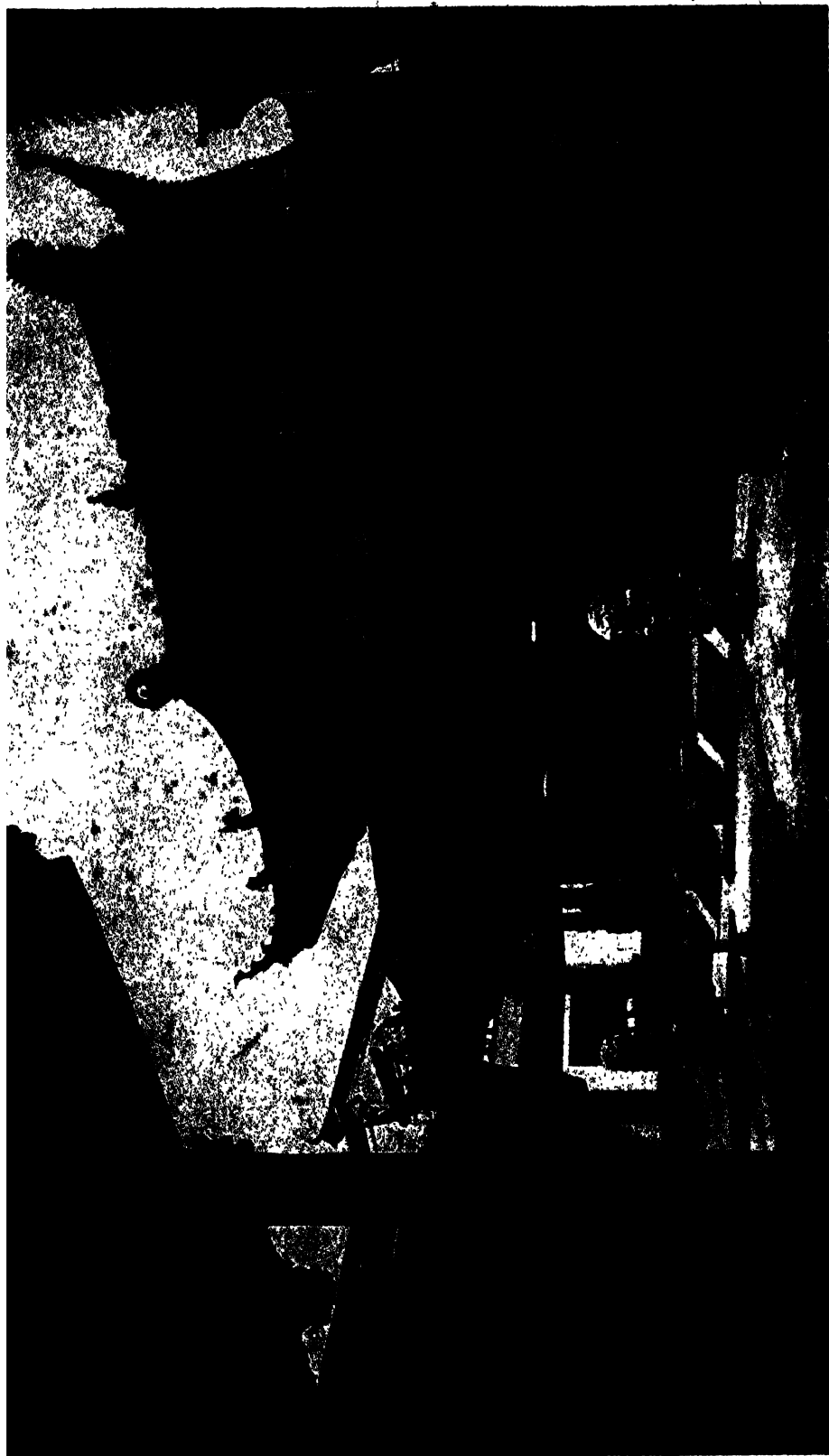
On the first full moon of the New Year comes the Feast of Lanterns; on that occasion lanterns of all sorts and sizes, lanterns in the shape of dragons and fishes, are hung up everywhere in the streets and over the doors. Another feast is celebrated by a family picnic, and in the summer comes a gala day on the water, the Dragon Boat Festival. All these and other feasts end up with crackers and fireworks.

When the boy is old enough he will begin his education. If he be the son of rich

people he will have tutors who will teach him the ancient literature of China; or he may go to a school, where, if intended for an official position, he will have to study hard. The ambition of many Chinese boys is to serve their country in some official capacity. Under the Republic, a new form of government, with a president as its head, has arisen and many changes in the official system have taken place.

All children are of age when they are 16. When a boy is about 20 his parents will find him a bride, but he will not see her till the wedding day, when she is brought to his parents' house, and even then his father—or, if his father be dead, his mother—will rule the household.

That is the life of a boy of the middle or upper classes. If, however, he belongs to poor people he will get little or no education—only a quarter of the people can read—and he will soon become a labourer



IN NINGPO is the great Tien-how-Kung, or "Queen of Heaven" temple. The roof is the main feature of a Chinese building, and to it, accordingly, the architect gives most attention. The double roof, such as we see in this photograph, with carved and lacquered eaves and ornamented with dragons and other figures, is held to be a very perfect artistic device. The town of Ningpo was visited by the Portuguese early in the sixteenth century, but they were soon driven out, and it did not really become open to European trade until 1842.

## THE LAND OF THE DRAGON

working in the fields or the factories, early and late, or a porter, carrying heavy burdens on his back or hung from each end of a bamboo pole, slung over his shoulders.

The baby girl gets a different reception from that of her brother. If the family is very poor, she may possibly be killed at birth, or later sold as a slave, so that there may be enough food for her brothers. At one time, when the girl babies were a few years old, their feet were bound so that they would never grow, as otherwise they would not be fashionable and would not get a husband. This cruel custom was supposed to have originated with an empress who had a deformed foot.

She will have to work hard, and one day her parents will sell her to the parents of some young man to be his wife. Then she receives presents and new clothes, and one day the best man comes from the bridegroom bringing with him a red sedan chair—"the wedding chair" it is called—and hands the bride an invitation on red paper.

The bride, dressed in her best, her face covered with red silk, enters the sedan chair. In this she is shut up tightly, no matter how hot the day, and taken in procession, with much rejoicing, to her new home. The bridegroom opens the door of the chair and the bride is carried into the house, when for the first time the red veil is removed.

Three days of feasting and rejoicing follow with many ceremonies, one being that the bride, who henceforth must obey her husband's parents, has to serve them with a meal and wait upon them.

It is curious that the Chinese should be so careless of women at one end of life and give them so much power at the other end. The famous Porcelain Tower was built by an emperor in honour of his mother.

China is changing now after many years of contact with Western civilization. Inch by inch old customs are being given up; the cruel custom of foot-binding is in many parts of the country dying out, the upper classes having rebelled against it, and in many of the schools foot-bound girls are not admitted. The missionaries, too, have

always been the enemies of the Chinese subjection of women. Girls educated in their schools are living a freer life. Apart, however, from these mission schools education is spreading in China, but the Government and other schools only provide for the education of a fraction of the population. In our chapter, "At School the World Over," we have fallen into an error in describing the method of Chinese writing. A Chinese scholar begins to write in the top right corner, writes down the page in columns of quaint characters, and these columns run from right to left.



**BANDIT CHIEF'S LIEUTENANT**

Manchuria is filled with bandits, who make trade and travelling dangerous. These criminals are so strong that it has been impossible to put a stop to their activities.





E. N. A.

# **CANADA HAS REASON TO BE PROUD OF HER MOUNTED POLICE FORCE**

His red tunic, gold-striped breeches and Stetson hat would make this man a noticeable figure even were he not a member of one of the most renowned police forces of the world. A full history of all that has been done by the Royal North-West Mounted Police, now the Royal Canadian Mounted Police, would be thrilling reading.

# Keepers of the Peace

## WITH THE POLICEMEN IN MANY LANDS

Visitors to Great Britain usually remark upon the efficiency and courtesy of the policemen in the large cities and especially in London. Years ago an American author wrote a charming fairy story about a man with a magic hand; he had but to raise it and he stopped the whole throbbing life of the main artery of the world's greatest city! He was a policeman at Ludgate Circus or the Bank. The policeman is not so respected in every land as he is in Great Britain, and we can be sure that wherever respect for the police is low it is bad for the peace and well-being of the community. In this chapter we are to glance at the police of other lands, and we shall find that in many countries there are two separate bodies of police, a town force and a country force, the latter being armed and trained like soldiers.

**I**N the old days in England the motto was "Every man his own policeman." The people were divided into tithings, which were composed of ten families, and the tithing as a whole was responsible for a crime committed by any one of the members. The chief member of a tithing was called a tithing-man. It was not very fair to the well-behaved folk, but as a police system it worked, considering the times, very well.

The Statute of Winchester, made in the reign of Edward I., created the first policemen in England. Their duties were to inspect the arms of such people as were compelled by law to be ready to take the field at any moment, and to preserve the peace, duties for which they got absolutely no pay at all.

As time went on, each town, as it grew larger, appointed watchmen to guard its streets by night. For the most part these watchmen were old, and of little

use for police work, and they seem to have grown steadily worse, for the "Charlies," as the London watchmen of the eighteenth century were called, were a mere joke not only to the criminals, but also to the wild young men who used to overturn the watch-boxes, leaving the unhappy watchmen caught beneath them like mice in a trap.

At last, in 1829, the Metropolitan Police were brought into existence by Sir Robert Peel, and for years afterwards the name "peeler" was applied to all policemen. To-day the Metropolitan Police look after a district which covers 700 square miles and has over 7,000,000 inhabitants. There are 20,436 officers and men in this force, which costs the country well over £7,000,000 a year. The strength of the whole police force of England and Wales is about 57,000, and of Scotland, 6,500.

When we think of the comfort and help which the police are so ready to give to



Galloway

**ONE OF CUBA'S MOTOR POLICE**  
Havana, in Cuba, besides ordinary constables and detectives, has a squad of policemen mounted on motor bicycles, who see that the laws are observed by motorists.

## KEEPERS OF THE PEACE

everybody, it is difficult to realise that when Sir Robert Peel first tried to establish a proper police force the whole country was against him. One newspaper said "it would be difficult to reconcile an effective police force with the freedom of action which is one of the privileges and blessings of society," and others accused poor Sir Robert of plotting to put the Duke of Wellington on the throne ! Yet in those days so great was the danger from criminals that at Whittlesea, near Ely, the people were forced to keep a pack of bloodhounds to hunt down the sheep-stealers who raided their flocks.

The duties of an English policeman go far beyond that of arresting evildoers and controlling the traffic. Here is one



Topical

### POLICEMAN OF BERLIN

Because of the floods, this traffic controller must stand on a raised platform. The German police are under military discipline.

year's work of the London police put as shortly as possible :

Of the 26,965 people reported missing, they restored 10,374 to their friends ; 708 people were prevented from committing suicide. The police were present at 2,914 fires, and extinguished 181 of them without the aid of the fire brigade. They noticed 27,250 doors or windows left open at night and had them shut ; they stopped 205 runaway horses, and billeted 348 soldiers. Of the 41,114 stray dogs that



### A FIGURE FAMILIAR TO ALL LONDONERS

The courtesy and efficiency of London's policemen, both of the Metropolitan force and of the City police, one of whom is shown here, have been remarked upon by visitors.

England has also borough and county police forces.

## KEEPERS OF THE PEACE

they seized, they restored 8,003 to their owners; 5,839 pedlars were granted certificates and 135 were refused, also 108 chimney-sweepers and 559 shoe-blacks were granted certificates, and 297 messengers were licensed. Over and above all these many different duties

which had to be carried out they managed to effect 109,787 arrests.

A small number of uniformed police-women also form part of the Metropolitan Police Force. Their duties are to look after women and children, and to keep female criminals under observation.



Nicholls

### DRESSED LIKE LONDON CONSTABLES EXCEPT FOR LEGS AND FEET

From 1913 to 1920 the Union of South Africa had two police forces, the South African Police and the South African Mounted Rifles, but in the latter year both were combined. About three-fifths of the policemen are Europeans; the rest, nearly four thousand men, are either natives, like the three men photographed here, or Indians.

## KEEPERS OF THE PEACE



### REGULATING THE TRAFFIC IN NEW YORK

New York has a very able and well organized police force. This officer has a little red light attached to his right hand. It is worked by an electric battery, and helps him to direct traffic in the night-time.

Someone has said of the English policeman that he is "a gallant adventurer in the service of the public," and it is safe to assert that there is no other police organization in the world which ranks higher than that of Britain. Other countries know this so well that they come to New Scotland Yard, which is the headquarters of the Metropolitan force, for advice in organizing their constabulary. It is an Englishman, Sir Frederick Halliday, who has done so much for the Greek police. He started a school for policemen, collected recruits between twenty-one and twenty-seven years old, and did wonderful work, especially in Athens, where, before his arrival, the

policeman's lot was far from being a happy one.

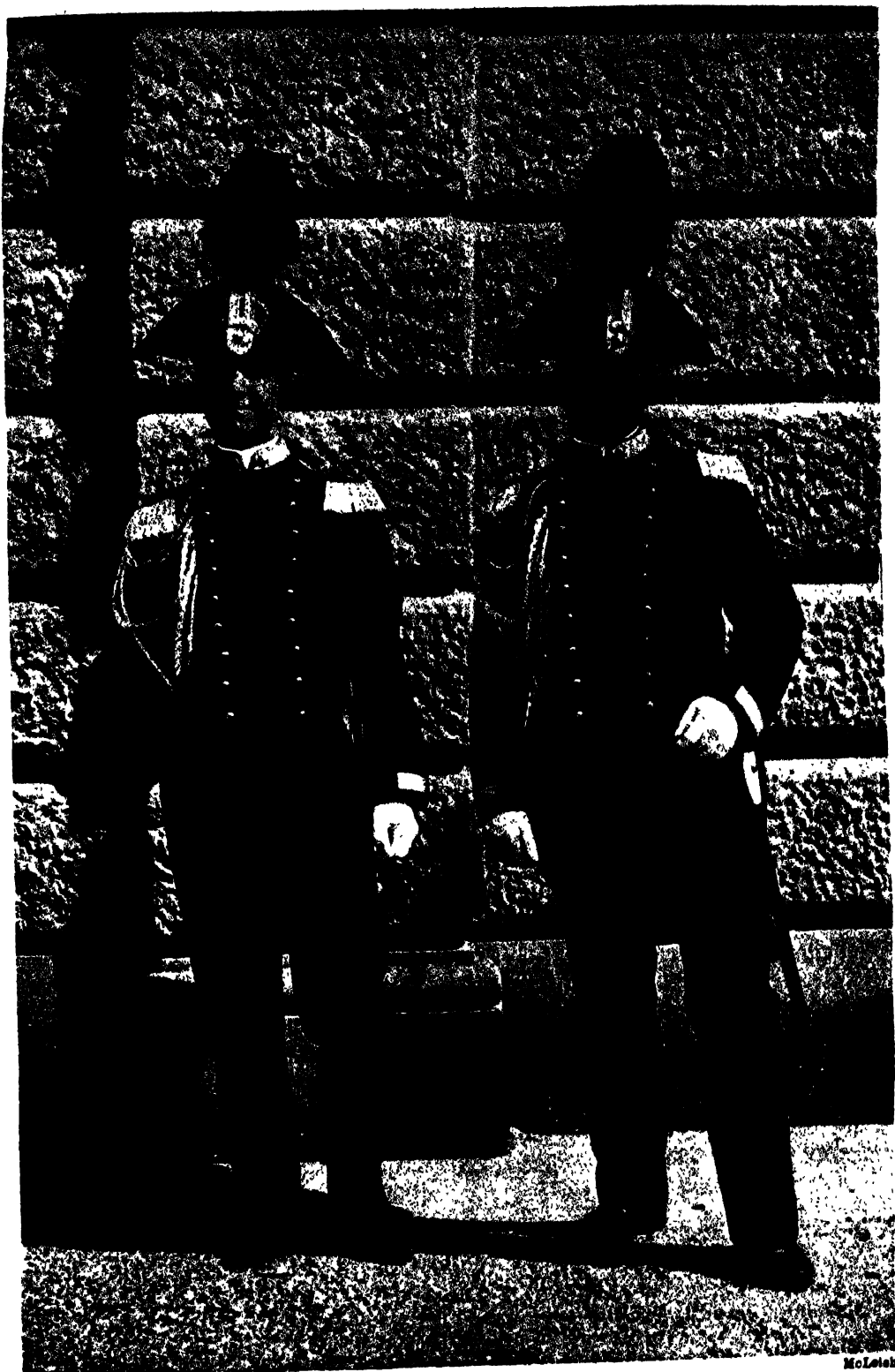
The French police system is quite different from the British, because it is more of a military force. In Paris there are two branches. The duty of one is to discover offenders, collect evidence against them, then hand them over to justice. The other, which is formed into brigades, maintains order in the streets and elsewhere. They have, however, other duties, such as inspecting food, controlling the markets and acting as a reserve force.

There are, too, the Gendarmerie, who are armed police organized in army fashion, some on foot, some mounted, and the Forest Guards and the Field Guards.

The gendarme often wears a light blue or khaki tunic, trousers of similar colours, and a cap called a képi. He is armed with an automatic pistol. The mounted men carry a sword and a carbine, and usually wear a steel helmet. The ordinary municipal or town policeman, like those of Paris, wears a darker and smarter, but plainer uniform than the

gendarme and does not always carry a pistol. In France the detective system is very good. The French detective is extremely clever at disguising himself, which he does by simply changing his walk, his voice and his dress.

M. Bourit, a famous French detective, used to make himself up as a professional strong man and visit country fairs in this dress. He never shaved or cut his hair or even dyed his skin, yet it is said that he was never once recognised. The still more celebrated M. Robert, who was sometimes called the French Sherlock Holmes, liked to turn himself into a hawker of vegetables, wearing a dirty overall and the wooden shoes called



**COURTEOUS MEN WHO MAINTAIN ORDER ALL OVER ITALY**  
Italy has five official police forces. The City Guards are a civil organization, and the Carabinieri, two of whom we show here in full dress uniform, belong to the Italian Army. The Carabinieri corps is said to be one of the finest police forces in the whole world. There are also Guards of the Forests and Fields and of Public Security.



E. N. A.

#### A BELGIAN POLICEMAN HOLDS UP A MILK ROUNDSWOMAN

This armed policeman has just taken a sample of milk for analysis, and is making a note of it. The police force of each Belgian municipality is directed by the Burgomaster and a Commissioner of Police appointed by him. The milk cart, drawn by a team of five splendid dogs, looks strange to British eyes, but in Belgium is an everyday sight.



#### A "DOGARI" DELIVERS A MESSAGE TO THE EMIR OF BAUCHI

Bauchi, in Northern Nigeria, has its own native administration under British supervision. This method of governing the province is on the whole very successful, which is rather remarkable, as there are very many different tribes in the district, all talking different languages. The "dogari," or native mounted policeman, is a dignified figure.



**MOUNTED AND UNMOUNTED MEMBERS OF SPAIN'S GUARDIA CIVIL.**  
 The Civil Guard, the state police of Spain, is a semi-military armed body of thoroughly trustworthy men, the pick of the Spanish police. There are both infantry and cavalry companies. They keep order in town and country districts, and can be called upon to help the soldiery in case of need. The officers have army rank, and can rise to be generals



**SPANISH GUARDIANS OF THE PEACE IN A BARCELONA STREET**  
 The City Police of Spain have not the authority of the Civil Guard, nor have they quite as high a reputation. Their influence is confined solely to the towns, where their duties are somewhat similar to those of our English constables. They regulate the traffic, watch suspected people, and take into custody any evil-doers they may catch in the act.





R. S. A.

#### BUGLERS AND DRUMMER BOYS OF NORTHERN RHODESIA'S POLICE FORCE BAND

Police work in Northern Rhodesia is done by about 750 native men commanded by British commissioned and non-commissioned officers. It is from Barotseland, a native reserve in the westernmost part of the territory, that these men are recruited, for of all the tribes of Northern

Rhodesia the Barotses are the most capable and dependable. Their uniform is very light, because of the hot climate; it includes a cap, very like the fez once worn by all Turks, with a long tassel. A headquarters of this police force is near the wonderful Victoria Falls.



#### **POLICEMEN NEED TO BE ARMED IN LAWLESS, REMOTE ALBANIA**

In Albania there are over three thousand gendarmes— that is to say, semi-military policemen. As this photograph shows, they wear no proper uniform, but each is armed with a serviceable rifle, for Albania is one of the most turbulent of European countries, whose people think it only right to kill anyone who has angered them.

sabots. He did not alter his face in any way, yet his voice, manner and walk were so different that even his best friends could not tell who he was.

The Guardias Civiles or Civil Guards of Spain form one of the finest police forces in Europe, and this is the more interesting because in some respects Spain is not so fully developed as other European countries. The force was originally copied in 1845 from the French gendarmerie, and has a military organization.

To-day, however, the Spanish Civil Guard is more like that splendid but now extinct body the Royal Irish Constabulary. It was formed to deal with the brigands who at that time made travelling in Spain not only dangerous but almost impossible, and their main

duty is still to patrol the high roads and to guard travellers.

They have greater powers than almost any other police force in the world, but it is very seldom that these powers are abused. Some 30,000 in number, the men are scattered all over the country in pairs and squads, and until lately there were always two of them on every train. Spain also has municipal police, such as those shown in page 545, who are supposed to control the traffic in the towns, which they generally do by allowing it to look after itself.

The Italian police are divided into five different bodies, of whom the most important are the Carabinieri, who wear a very smart, dark blue uniform with a red band down the side of the trousers. Then there are the Guardie di Pubblica



## AN ARMED POLICEMAN IN AUSTRIA'S CAPITAL

The uniformed police force of Vienna is under civil control, although it is organized on a military model. It is not so military as that of Berlin, however, for more of its officers are recruited from lawyers and university men than from the army.

Sicurreza (Guards of Public Safety) who, like the Carabinieri, belong to the military service. Besides these two forces, Italy has municipal police, and Forest and Field Guards. The Carabinieri form a body of over 30,000 men and are employed in the cities, towns and country districts. As a branch of the army the Carabinieri can be sent to the front in case of war.

German municipal police, like those of most Continental countries, are on a military footing. They wear a dark blue uniform and a helmet of shiny leather with

a nickel band. Except for the British Metropolitan Force, they handle traffic better than any other body of police, and the standard of German constabulary generally is a very high one.

The police system of the United States differs from those of other countries in that each State and each city has its own separate police force. If we take the police of America's greatest city, New York, we find that the organization is very like that of the London Metropolitan Police. Both forces are governed by a Commissioner, but whereas the London Police Commissioner is appointed by the Crown, the head of the New York police is appointed by the Mayor and then only for his term of office, which is two years.

The recruit to the New York police force begins as patrolman, and is then promoted to roundsman. He can rise from roundsman to

sergeant and from sergeant to police captain. Above the captains come the inspectors, while the head of the force is the Chief of Police. The New York policeman receives higher pay than the London one, but, on the other hand, has even more responsibility, for the number of police in New York is smaller compared with the population.

The equipment of the two forces is very different, for while the London policeman carries only a short truncheon and a whistle, the New York officer is armed with a club about a yard long and a revolver.



Hardie

**WHITE-ROBED GUARDIAN OF THE PEACE IN MOROCCAN MARKETS**  
Justice in Morocco is still administered in much the same way as in Bagdad in the time of the Arabian Nights. The *cadi* still holds his court, and delivers sentences that are at once just and witty. Western influences are apparent, however, in the police force, which is ever ready to detect wrong-doing in Morocco's streets and markets.

## KEEPERS OF THE PEACE

The truncheon of the London policeman is carried in a pocket in his trousers, and is so difficult to get at that the man may be overpowered before he can do so, while his whistle is sometimes taken from him before he can use it. On the other hand, the New York policeman is obliged by regulation to carry his club, or night-stick, ready for use in his hand, strapped by a thong to his wrist. He has no whistle, and if he needs assistance he summons it by rapping with his club on the pavement.

Except, however, in the case of a riot, he seldom needs assistance, for the New York hooligan, well aware that the club will be used without mercy in case of necessity, is very careful. He also knows that the policeman will not hesitate to shoot if need be, for he has the right to shoot a prisoner who refuses to stop.

The system works very well and there are plenty of men in the New York police force who can boast that in all their years of service they have never had to use either club or pistol. Some years ago when Mr. Thomas Byrnes became Chief of Police in New York he deprived the police of their clubs. Within the first week after the order had been issued, two policemen were killed by negroes in one of the most unruly districts, and public opinion forced Mr. Byrnes to restore the clubs.

One way in which the American police are trained to use their clubs is curious and interesting. Supposing a man is running away, the policeman, with a twist of his wrist, sends the truncheon spinning



**FRENCH POLICEMAN**

The badge on the arm of this city policeman of the French Republic shows that he is also an interpreter.

along the ground with such good aim that it becomes entangled with the legs of the fugitive, tripping him heavily and so allowing his pursuer to overtake him.

Women police were first appointed in New York in the year 1913 for the special purpose of looking after women and children. They wear a regular police uniform and receive the same pay as male members of the force.

The honour of being the finest police force in the world belongs, beyond question, to the Canadian Mounted Police, known as "The Riders of the Plains," and formerly called the Royal North-West Mounted Police. It is a regiment of mounted infantry divided into four troops, each of which controls an area larger than the whole of France. The original uniform, meant to impress the Red Indians, resembled that of the Dragoon Guards, the tunic being scarlet. The men wore white helmets and each carried a Winchester carbine, a Service revolver

and a belt filled with bright brass cartridges. The present uniform consists of a red tunic, gold-striped, blue breeches and a khaki, Stetson hat. The discipline is tremendously strict.

The mounted policeman sent to make an arrest was not allowed to shoot first, for he had no orders to bring in a prisoner "dead or alive." If he brought him in dead he was sentenced to three months imprisonment; if he failed to bring him in the punishment was the same. So the record of the force has been one long roll of wonderful achievements.



McMahon

### POLICE FORCE OF A FAR-AWAY ISLET NEAR THE EQUATOR

We can see from this photograph that even the little islands of the Pacific Ocean have their police. Here are the native guardians of the peace of Nauru, which used to belong to Germany, but is now British. Though this island is only twelve miles in circumference it is very rich, possessing a valuable mineral called phosphate.



McMahon

### AUSTRALASIAN SERGEANT-MAJOR

This Pacific Islander holds a high rank in the Ellice Crown Colony police force. The native police of these islands have acquired European civilization wonderfully quickly.



B.F.A.

### A CONSTABLE OF MONTEVIDEO

The Uruguayan policeman on a beach near Montevideo, with his dark tunic and white trousers and helmet, and wearing a sword by his side, is a spruce guardian of the peace.

## KEEPERS OF THE PEACE



CHINESE POLICEMAN WITH CRIMINAL

Carter

When the Canadian Pacific Railway was being built, some of the Indians made trouble, and a chief called Piapot erected his tepee in the direct line of the rails, vowing that there it would remain. The railway appealed to the lieutenant-governor, and presently two—only two—smart, red-coated policemen trotted briskly into Piapot's camp, and the elder of the two, a sergeant of twenty-five, told Piapot that he would give him fifteen minutes in which to move his tent.

The sergeant took out his watch, and stood beside the tent with the scowling Indians standing motionless around. At the end of the fifteen



Merriman

### PIGTAILED PEKIN CONSTABLES IN STRAW HATS AND HIGH BOOTS

In China, so long as somebody is punished for an offence, neither mandarin—a kind of magistrate—nor policeman cares whether it is the right person. A rich wrongdoer, therefore, may bribe a poor man to be punished in his place. In the top photograph we see a prisoner with a board round his neck to prevent him from lying down.



**MILITARY POLICE IN LODZ, POLAND'S GREAT INDUSTRIAL TOWN**  
Poland has so recently won national freedom that many Poles are inclined to forget that there is a difference between liberty and disorder. Communists are constantly at work in the country, too, trying to bring about revolutionary trouble. Poland has need, therefore, of her soldier-like police, with their rifles and pistols, to maintain order.





Topical

### POLICEMAN OF THE PANAMA CANAL ZONE WITH LOST CHILDREN

The United States of America controls a strip of land five miles wide on each side of the Panamá Canal. The American police are very useful, not only for preventing crime, but for fighting disease and maintaining Prohibition, which is enforced in the Canal zone. Another duty of the zone policeman is to find children lost in the jungle.

minutes, Piapot having made no move to obey, the sergeant kicked down the key-pole of the lodge. As the tent fell flat on the ground a howl of rage arose from the Indians, and the armed savages closed in around the pair. Without paying the least attention to their hostile signs, the sergeant walked quickly down the line of huts, knocking down the key-pole of each lodge as he went.

Piapot knew that he had either to kill the two policemen, and thereby bring down upon himself the might of the whole British Empire, or call off his braves and move away. Rage not having quite deprived him of sense, he chose the latter course, and went.

The whole of British India is divided into police districts, and all the police, who are Indians, are drilled and trained like soldiers. In the North-West Frontier

Province are the Frontier Constabulary, who are armed with rifles and bayonets, as they have to deal with the fierce tribesmen from across the border.

All through the British Empire the native has been found to be capable of doing excellent police work. In South Africa there are some three thousand native policemen.

The least policed countries in Europe are Belgium, Norway and Sweden—that is, there are fewer police to the population in those countries than in England, France, Germany or Italy. But in this respect the record is held by Iceland, where the people are so law-abiding that they have no need of any police at all. The Icelanders, however, consider that the dignity of the capital requires a police force, and so they keep a couple of big men in handsome uniforms.

# The First British Colony

## A VISIT TO NEWFOUNDLAND AND LABRADOR

It is odd to think that the beginning of the British Empire was thought to be worth only £10 by King Henry VII. That was his reward to John Cabot, mariner of Bristol, for having discovered Newfoundland on June 24th, 1497. Nearly a hundred years passed before Newfoundland was formally annexed to England in 1583. It thus became the first overseas possession of the great Empire which was to grow up with its seat in the British Isles during the next three centuries. The great sea fisheries on the famous "Banks" were responsible for the early importance of Newfoundland, fishing boats of various European nations congregating there every season; but now much of its prosperity is due to the mills that turn its almost unlimited supplies of spruce trees into pulp to make paper for newspapers and periodicals.

On a May day over four hundred years ago, John Cabot, ship-master of the little "Matthew," sailed away from Bristol across the Atlantic. This was destined to be a voyage as important as it was romantic, for the Anglo-Venetian seaman set out to find a route to Cathay, or China, the country of the Great Cham, and found instead the coast of North America.

The story of Cabot's historic discovery has been told again and again, but it is not known for certain what was the first land he sighted. By some writers this honour is claimed for Labrador, by others for Cape Bonavista, on the east coast of Newfoundland; others, again, incline to the belief that it was Cape Breton, farther south. It may be said for this last statement that Cape Breton Island answers most nearly to the description given by Cabot, and that on an old map it figures as "the first land seen."

It was the fate of the great ocean voyagers of the fifteenth century that they did not realise the importance of their discoveries. All that Cabot reported on his return was the sighting of this "new-found-land," and by that name the great island at the mouth of the St. Lawrence River in Canada has been known to us ever since.

It is interesting to note that John Cabot, the first real discoverer of the North American continent, received £10 from King Henry VII. as a gift "to hym that found the New Isle."

So much for John Cabot and his historic voyage. But the romance of Newfoundland's history goes much farther back. Some time in the year 1000 Leif Ericson, a Norse sea-captain, and his crew of Vikings were on a voyage from Norway to Greenland, when they were blown out of their course. Eventually they sighted a fruitful land which they called Vinland. Three years



**HARPOON FOR WHALE FISHING**

The strongest man could not hurl the modern harpoon, which weighs about a hundredweight and has a thick cable attached to it. It is shot from a cannon.



### **CUTTING A HUMP-BACK WHALE TO PIECES IN NEWFOUNDLAND**

When a whale has been brought ashore, the blubber, a layer of fat under the skin from which oil is made, is first stripped from it. Whalebone, which is the name specially given to the horny plates attached to the roof of the whale's mouth, is then cut away. What remains of the whale's body is used for manuring the land.



### **BACK TO HARBOUR IN NEWFOUNDLAND WITH A CARGO OF COD**

In the Atlantic, beginning about 250 miles to the south-east of Cape Wrath in Newfoundland, are the "Banks," where the water is comparatively shallow and huge numbers of fish swarm to feed. Many ships go out from the island; indeed, the catching, drying and exporting of cod is one of its greatest industries.



#### **NEWFOUNDLAND HUNTER ATTACKS SEAL ON THE ICE FLOES**

Young seals are born on the ice floes in February. They grow quickly and are in good condition for killing by the middle of March; so, by law, no vessel may leave Newfoundland for the seal rookeries before March 12th. The hunters, armed with sticks weighted with iron, slaughter thousands of seals every year.



#### **THOUSANDS OF SEAL PELTS ON THE WHARF AT ST. JOHN'S**

The Newfoundlanders regard the annual seal-hunting as a sort of holiday. So much do they enjoy it that they have a proverb which says that "a man will go for seals where gold won't draw him." Seal-hunting, however, may also be very profitable. A single steamer has returned from the floes with a cargo of 41,900 pelts, worth over £20,000.



Hayward

#### NEWFOUNDLANDERS UNLOADING THE SEAL PELTS FROM WHICH ARE OBTAINED LEATHER AND OIL

The people of Newfoundland hunt the Atlantic seal for its pelt, which means the skin and the fat that clings to it. (On being treated by experts in the factories, these pelts yield valuable oil and leather of a quality so fine that it is used for making ornamental articles such as ladies' hand-bags and purses. The Atlantic seal is not to be confused with the Pacific seal, whose thick, soft fur is so much prized, and is known as sealskin, for the Atlantic seal is scantily covered with coarse hairs which would be of no use for making warm coats or wraps.



Newfoundland Coast

#### SEAL-HUNTERS' SHIPS FAST IN THE ICE OFF NEWFOUNDLAND

Every year, some time during March, great herds of seals gather together on the coasts of Greenland and Labrador to prepare to swim southwards for the summer. Ships filled with hunters go out from Newfoundland to prey on these herds, and have to force their way through ice-fields in order that the hunters may land, and chase the seals on foot.

later Thorfinn Karlsefne and 150 men set out to colonize that country, and came first to a bleak shore which they called Helleland, "the land of flat stones," which most probably was the Labrador coast. These adventurers must have touched Newfoundland and Nova Scotia, and they made a settlement there. All this is traditional, but the details seem to fit in so well that one is inclined to give the hardy Norsemen the credit for having been the first Europeans to touch those western shores.

Apart from its romantic discovery, Newfoundland claims our attention as being the first British colony, though now it is a dominion of the British Empire. It has been referred to as the "corner stone of the Empire," for it has always remained under the British flag, while its neighbour, the Dominion of Canada, was for over two hundred years under French rule.

The rich fishing-grounds of the neighbouring seas are responsible for this

loyalty to the Crown. Soon after Cabot's return with his story of this "new-found-land" and its splendid fishing-grounds, adventurers from France, Spain and Portugal, in addition to the men of Devon, Cornwall and Ireland, flocked to the Great Banks, that lie to the east of Cape Race. It was the fishing that brought Newfoundland into prominence before Sir Humphrey Gilbert formally took possession of it in the name of Queen Elizabeth. And it was this same fishing which, as we shall see later, affected the slow development of the island.

How those early fishermen gave their foreign names to the settlements on the Newfoundland coasts is shown by the map. We still find marked thereon Port aux Basques, Rencontre Bay, Cape Bonavista and other French and Spanish names.

The value of the fishing industry may be gathered from the official returns for a recent year; these totalled over £2,000,000. Cod is the principal fish



#### ST. JOHN'S ON ITS HILL BEYOND THE DEEP-WATER HARBOUR

At the crest of the hill on which stands St. John's, the capital of Newfoundland, the Roman Catholic cathedral of S. John the Baptist is outlined against the sky. About half-way down the slope is the Church of England cathedral. Along the water-front are warehouses and factories for receiving and treating whale and seal oil and cod.

caught, the fishing-grounds being along the Newfoundland and Labrador coasts, and on the "Banks" to the south and east. Every year hundreds of vessels take part in this great harvest of the sea, large and small boats, from schooners to dories, returning to port with their holds well filled. Other fish, such as caplin, herring and mackerel, lobster and squid, are also caught, and the supply is seemingly inexhaustible. After four hundred years' continual working of the "grounds" the yield is as great as ever.

A typical fishing village is that of Quidi Vidi, near St. John's. Here the harbour is a mere split in the cliffs. It is the kind of channel that is known to the men of Newfoundland and Labrador as a "tickle." Along the coast we find such places marked as Long Tickle, Tickle Harbour and Smoky Tickle. On the face of the cliffs of such harbours are the wooden stages on which the cod are dried, ready for salting. The rocks are generally so steep that there is no pathway along

which baskets can be carried, and therefore the fish are pitchforked from one platform to another.

Every village has its church, its school and similar institutions, and many of the old houses still retain the old-fashioned open fireplaces and other features of bygone years. The Newfoundlander of the coast has ever been a strict observer of the Sabbath; one is prepared, therefore, to find that there is no fishing done on a Sunday.

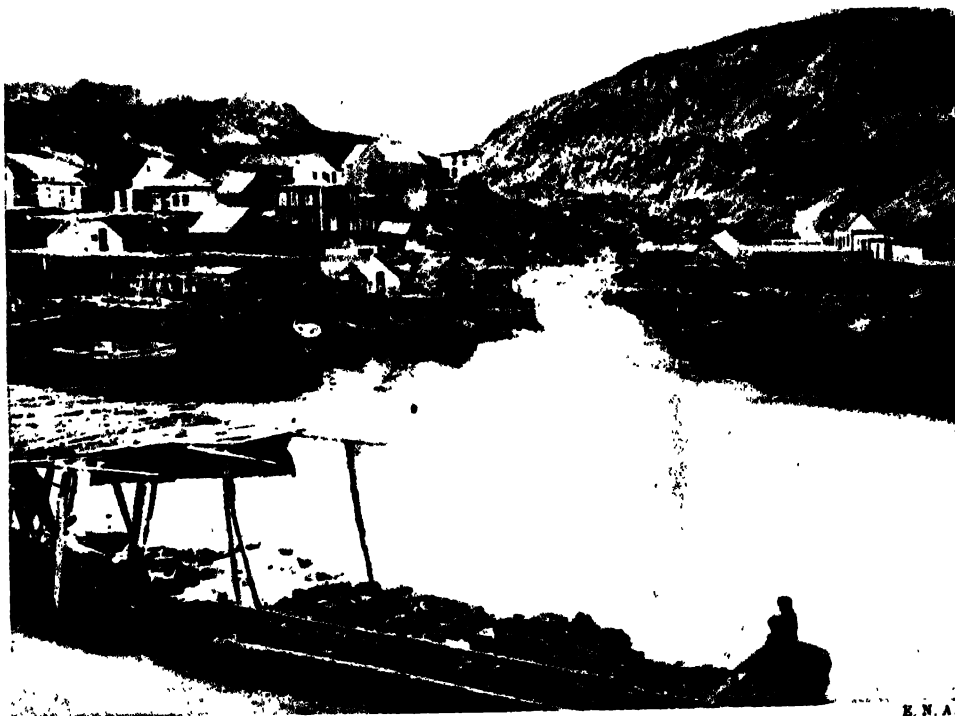
After the cod fishery, the sealing industry comes next in importance. Whaling was important formerly, the species caught including the sulphur-bottom, hump-back and fin-back, the oil and whalebone being of great value for export. As to the seals, the Newfoundland seal is not that from which we get the valuable fur; it is the animal's fat and the leather which is made from the skin that make sealing profitable. Only the very young seals are the prey of the hunter, since they provide the most fat. This is steamed down and made into oil.



"Canada"

### THE BAY OF ISLANDS, THE BASE OF A GREAT HERRING-FLEET

On the west coast of Newfoundland, in the Gulf of St. Lawrence, the beautiful Bay of Islands with its wooded and mountainous shores cuts deeply into the land. The Bay of Islands is a centre of the herring-fishing industry, since it is conveniently near the coast of Labrador, where the finest herrings are to be caught.



E. N. A.

### QUIDI VIDI, WHERE COD ARE PREPARED FOR THE MARKET

In almost every village on the coast of Newfoundland the people spend the summer cod-fishing; and in Quidi Vidi, a little village near St. John's, the industry is the chief means of livelihood. When the cod are brought ashore they are cut open and salted and set out to dry on the large wooden platforms seen in this photograph.





Newfoundland Govt.

### LOGGING CREWS PUSHING TIMBER CUT DURING THE WINTER INTO THE EXPLOITS RIVER

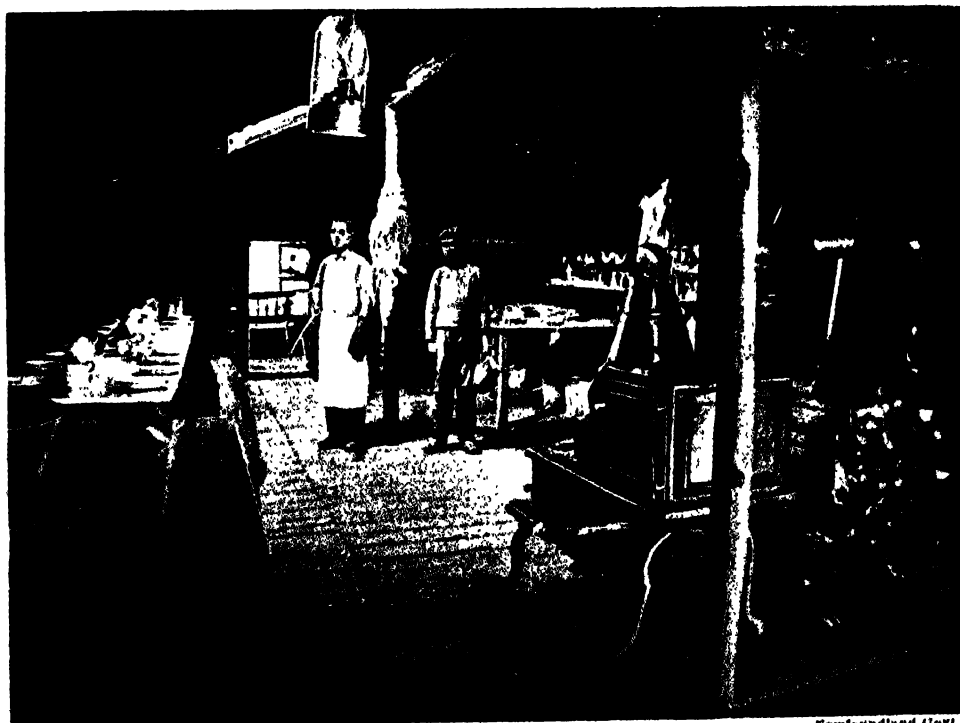
The Exploits River, which is the longest in Newfoundland, passes through great districts thickly planted with trees such as the spruce, whose wood, being soft and suitable for paper-making, is known locally as "pulpwood." All through the winter logs are collected in great

heaps along the banks of the Exploits River, and during the spring floods lumbermen push them into the water. The logs float downstream to the factories, near which barriers are built across the river, where "river crews" guide the logs into channels leading to the sawmills.



### GRAND FALLS, A TOWN THAT OWES ITS EXISTENCE TO PAPER

In 1906 Lord Northcliffe decided that paper could be manufactured with advantage from the soft woods of Newfoundland. He set up mills at Grand Falls, on the Exploits River, acquiring over 3,000 miles of timber-land. Round the mills, a town, well lit by electricity, has sprung up, having a town-hall, churches, and a rapidly growing population.



Newfoundland Govt.

### ALMOST BREAKFAST-TIME IN A NEWFOUNDLAND LUMBER CAMP

The cook and his helper stand ready to serve the lumbermen, who will shortly appear, very hungry. Trees are plentiful throughout the greater part of the island, and grow quickly, so that lumbering is a very flourishing industry. Spruce for paper-making and pine and birch are the varieties of tree most important to the lumberman.

## THE FIRST BRITISH COLONY

It is on March 17th that the fleet of sealers starts from St. John's, to make its way through the ice to various stations around the Labrador coast. The boats stand out to sea to meet the big ice-fields as these drift down from the Arctic. Thousands of seals are carried on these floes, and, once among them, the sealers usually make a good haul.

### *Where the Caribou Roams*

There are other great industries of Newfoundland, of course, but before we make mention of these let us see what this great island--the sixteenth largest in the world--is like. It is rock-bound to begin with, and is very like Norway in that its coast is deeply indented by long fjords.

During the winter months fierce gales sweep its shores. For the rest of the year Newfoundland enjoys a pleasant, if variable, climate, and it does not experience the extremes of heat and cold that fall to the lot of other parts of North America.

Inland the island is remarkable for its mountain ranges, which are well wooded, and its numerous lakes and marshy stretches. The interior is but little developed, and only with the extension of railways will it be opened up and made available for agriculture, stock-raising and mining. There are extensive stretches of land which are the home of great herds of caribou, an American reindeer. These find abundant food in the mosses, ferns and berries with which this region is covered. For many sportsmen Newfoundland is a paradise. In addition to the deer there are the black bear, beaver, otter, hare and fox; while the rivers are plentifully stocked with salmon and trout.

### *Lost Tribe of Red Indians*

The three principal rivers of Newfoundland are the Exploits, the Gander and the Humber. Then there are those great pieces of water, Grand Lake, Red Indian Lake, Gander Lake, Victoria Lake and Round Pond, to all of which fishermen come for the splendid sport they provide.

The name of Red Indian Lake recalls the fact that Newfoundland once possessed a native race of its own. The story of these aborigines--Beothuks, they were called--is a sad one. How this race of red men came to the island is not known. They were there when Cabot and other voyagers landed; they must have been among the people whom the Norse adventurers frightened, when the cattle on their Viking ships bellowed out across the water. To what particular tribe the Beothuks were allied it is now impossible to say, because not a single member of the unfortunate race has survived.

Hundreds of years ago they roamed over the island in large numbers, living by hunting and fishing. They are described as having been a well-built, active people, brown-skinned, of medium height and accustomed to decorate their bodies with red ochre and oil. We know that their civilization resembled that of the neighbouring tribes upon the mainland, for they had no little skill in making their weapons and implements from stone, the bones of animals and birch bark. They used bows and arrows, made canoes and snowshoes, and lived in wigwams which were covered with deerskin.

### *Protection That Came Too Late*

Unhappily for the Beothuks, the first-comers to Newfoundland treated them with injustice and cruelty. They were shot down, it is said, as if they had been wild animals, and this savagery led to reprisals on their part. The Micmac Indians, too, who inhabited Cape Breton Island and Nova Scotia, came over to help in the work, and the luckless natives, unprovided with firearms, fell easy victims to their enemies.

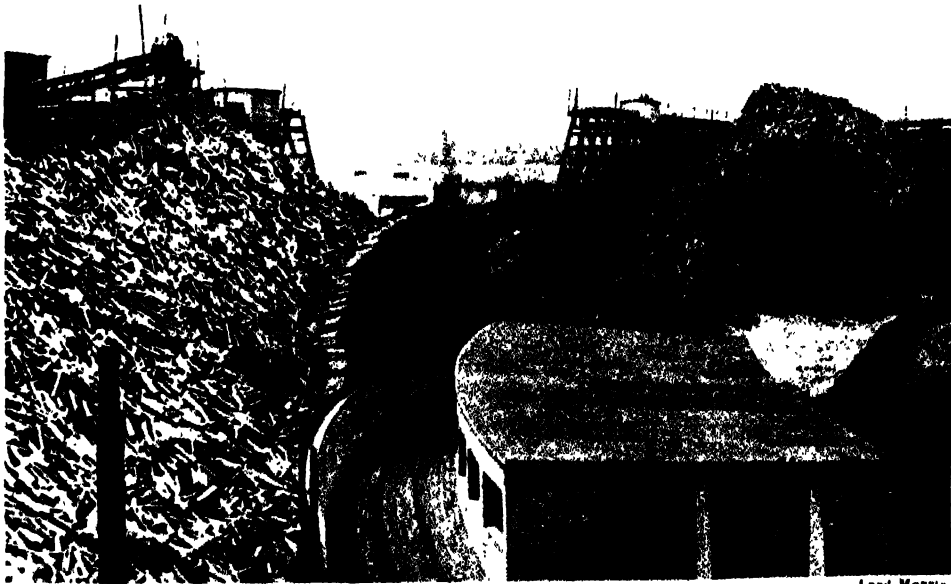
It was not until the appointment of the first governor of Newfoundland, Captain Hugh Palliser, in 1764, that any steps were taken to protect the Beothuks. Expeditions were now sent out in the endeavour to round up the scattered remnants of the tribe and look after their welfare. A Royal Proclamation, in the name of King George III., was issued, calling upon all people in



"Canada"

# **ON THE FROZEN RIVER THE WINTER'S LOGS WAIT FOR SPRING**

Tree-felling takes place in winter, since it is then easy to drag the tree-trunks, when the branches have been lopped off, over the hard snow to the frozen rivers. In spring the ice on which these logs are piled will melt, and floods will pour down the rivers, carrying with them the thousands of logs that have been cut.



Lord Morris

# **SPRUCE LOGS AT GRAND FALLS WAIT TO BECOME WOOD PULP**

On the Exploits River is Grand Falls, where are the paper and pulp mills of the Anglo-Newfoundland Development Co. At Grand Falls the trees have finished their voyage down the river, and we here see them sawn into logs, each of which is about four feet long. The paper mills here use about 30,000 tree-trunks daily.



Newfoundland Govt.

**IN THE GRINDER-ROOM WHERE LOGS ARE GROUND INTO FRAGMENTS AND TURNED INTO PULP**

The logs are now further cut into lengths of about 30 inches, and are fragments, which, being mixed with water, become pulp. The pulp, which must consist of fixed proportions of spruce and balsam wood, then carried to the grinder-room, where they are pressed, in a slanting position, against huge grindstones, that the wood may be reduced to so that the paper may be always of the same quality, is now strained to free it from dirt and lumps and is bleached if it is found necessary.



Lord Morris.

#### NEARER STILL TO PAPER: WOOD-PULP AT GRAND FALLS

At Grand Falls, where the mills are driven by electrical power supplied by the Exploits River, paper is actually manufactured from some of the wood-pulp. A great deal of the pulp, however, is made into large, blanket-like sheets, such as we see handled by this man, and is exported to England in this state to be made into paper.

the island to befriend the natives, and threatening with heavy penalties those who persisted in ill-treating them.

But the greatest difficulty was experienced in this quest for the few remaining Indians. Now and then one man, or maybe a woman, was captured and brought back in triumph; on one occasion a party of fifty was surprised, but in this instance fear led the natives to break camp, after killing two white sailors left in their company, and they were never found again.

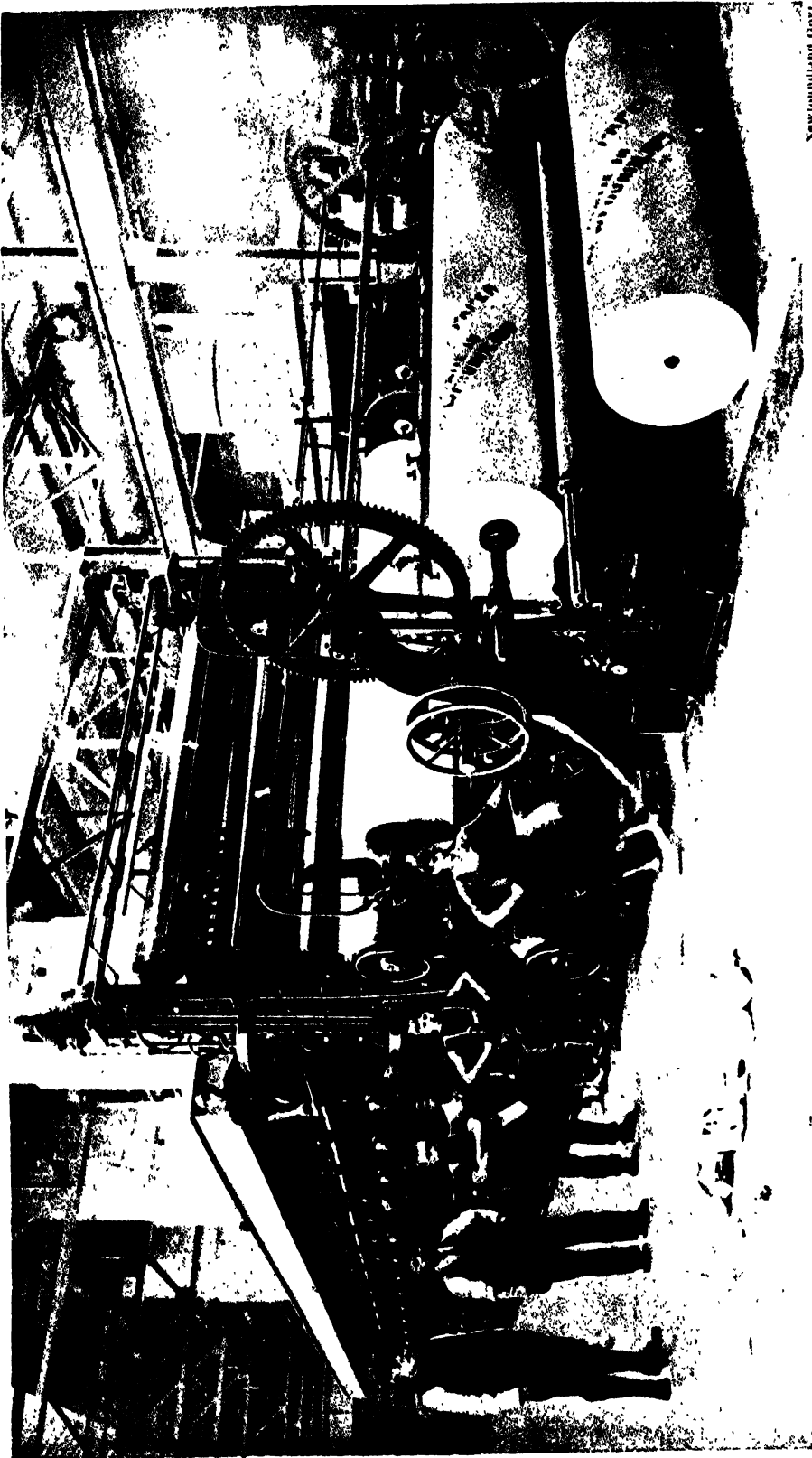
The last of the Beothuks, as she was believed to be, was a young woman named Shawnandithit. This person was rescued by a settler in the neighbourhood of Notre Dame Bay and was taken to live in St. John's. She proved to be very intelligent and to possess some skill as an artist. From her drawings and the explanations that accompanied them a great deal was learnt about the life and customs of this strange people.

Shawnandithit died in 1829, and from that date no trace of any Beothuks has been discovered, although some five years

earlier a small party of them had been seen on the Exploits River. Only in a museum, such as that at St. John's, are there to be found any relics of this extinct Indian race. Skulls of the Beothuks that have been dug up from graves are preserved, and a remarkable collection of the implements and weapons which the ill-fated people used.

The greater part of the interior of Newfoundland is wild and unexplored. It is the haunt of wild animals and of the sportsman who ventures therein. It is known, however, that many thousands of acres of good land are suitable for farming and cattle-raising. There are, too, rich deposits of copper, lead and nickel ore, while slate and limestone have been profitably worked. When we add to these the enormous tracts of forest land which yield lumber and pulpwood, it will be understood that Newfoundland has immense possibilities for development in the future.

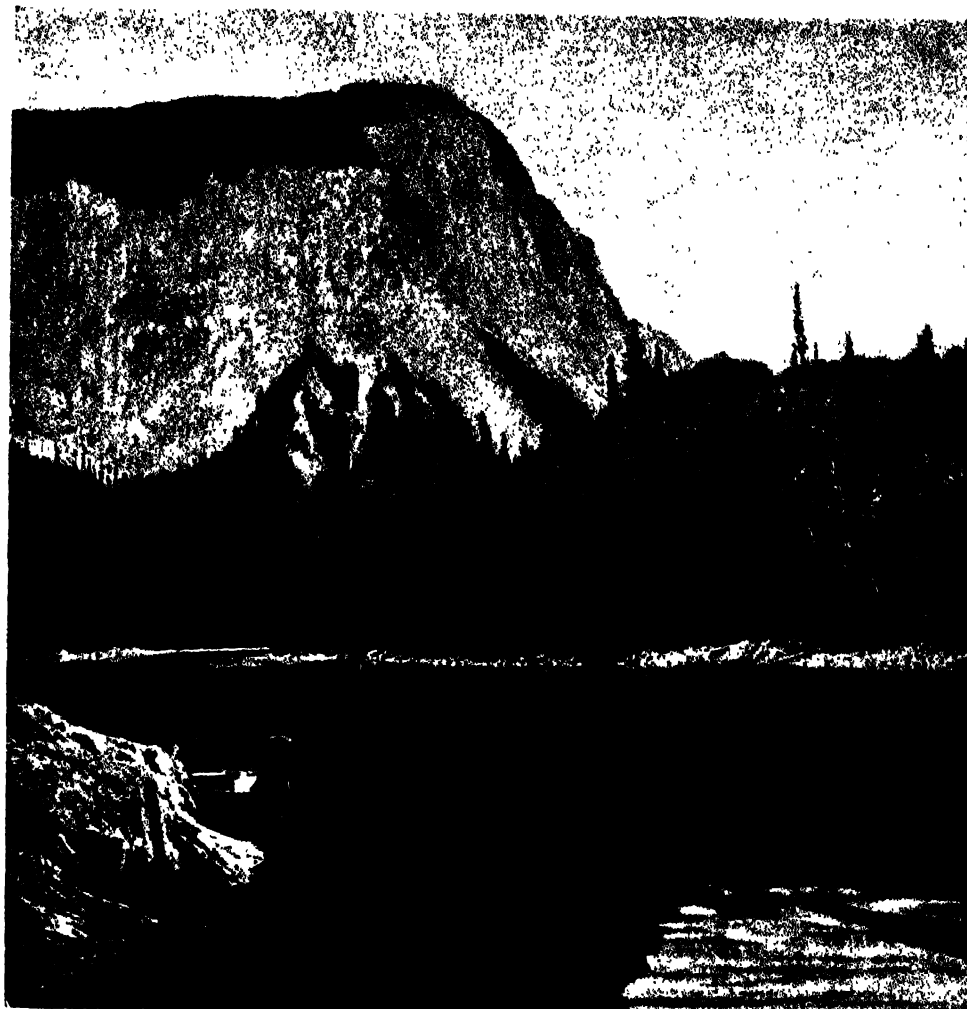
As has been said, the attention paid to the fishing industry in the past has acted unfavourably against the Dominion's



Newfoundland Court.

# **HUGE MACHINE THAT SEEMS MAGICAL SINCE IT TURNS A FLUID INTO THE PAPER THAT WE KNOW**

When the pulp has been strained it is run into beating engines, where it is mixed, cut and bruised until the fibres that once were wood are ready to become the fibres of paper. The pulp, a thick liquid, then flows into the far end of the machine that we see in this photograph. It passes through rollers which give it firmness and shape by pressing it. Hot cylinders dry the pulp, and it appears at the end of the machine nearest to us, in huge, compact rolls all ready for export to England, as the white paper upon which our newspapers are printed.



E. N. A.

#### STILL REACH OF THE HUMBER BENEATH BREAKFAST HEAD

The Humber is one of the longest rivers in the island, and in its course of seventy miles flows past mountains where live bears and silver-foxes, moose and caribou, and through wild, woodland country and pastures dotted with sheep and cattle.

Few reaches, however, can equal in beauty this stretch of smooth water.

progress in other directions. The old "merchant adventurers," who fostered the cod-fishing, did all they could to prevent settlement in the interior. In recent years great efforts have been put forth to make up for lost time. Railway building has been extended, settlement encouraged, and various industries and developments have been assisted by the government. In the course of years the fruits of this wise policy will make themselves evident.

As some of our pictures show, the forest wealth and the water-power which Newfoundland possesses have given rise to a great paper-making industry. Out of

a total area of 42,000 square miles nearly one-fourth is wooded. The principal trees are spruce, fir and white pine. These grow thickly but not to any great size, so they are used for pulpwood, rather than for timber.

Thanks to the enterprise of the late Lord Northcliffe and of his brother, Lord Rothermere, a pulp and paper industry has been founded there, which bids fair to outrival the fisheries. At Grand Falls, where the paper mills were installed, a town now inhabited by 5,000 people quickly sprang into being.

Before we leave Newfoundland, mention must be made of the fact that at





**NEWFOUNDLAND GUIDE WITH CARIBOU, A REINDEER OF AMERICA**  
Great herds of caribou, a sort of reindeer, live in the forests of Newfoundland, and are much hunted; but they are not tamed to work for man like the reindeer of Europe. They do not stay long in one place, and it is a great sight in Newfoundland to see vast numbers of them passing from forest to forest and swimming broad rivers.



Rodd

#### **A DANGEROUS CLIMB OVER THE ROCKS OF THE LESSER GULL**

The Lesser Gull is a small tributary of the Gander River, which, with its course of 100 miles, is the second longest river in Newfoundland. The rivers and streams of the island abound in salmon and trout. At the mouth of the Gander River there is a very profitable salmon-fishery, the majority of the salmon taken being canned and exported.



<sup>Haeckel</sup>  
**DRAWN BY THE DOGS THAT MAKE TRAVEL IN LABRADOR POSSIBLE, AN ESKIMO SLEDGE LEAVES NAIN**  
Although the European reindeer has been successfully introduced into Labrador, the huskies, or sledge dogs, remain the most important beasts for drawing sledges. They stand a little over two feet high, have long, thick coats, and will face any weather. They are only fed two or three times a week, and will work hard for two days at a time. A husky will find its way where a man or any other animal would be lost. The runners of a Labrador sledge are usually of wood or whalebone, but it is recorded that frozen salmon have been used.

## THE FIRST BRITISH COLONY

Heart's Content, in Trinity Bay, on the south-east coast, the four Atlantic cables, which stretch from Valentia in Ireland to the western continent, rise up from their ocean bed. And because Newfoundland, the part of America nearest to Europe, was chosen for this purpose, it was only fitting that the first trans-Atlantic wireless message should have been received at the Cabot Tower, on Signal Hill, at the entrance to St. John's.

This event took place in December, 1901. Eighteen years later, the two intrepid airmen, Alcock and Brown, began their famous flight across the Atlantic from St. John's, eventually reaching Clifden, in Ireland.

That long fringe of the Canadian mainland known as Labrador is included in the Dominion of Newfoundland. It is 850 miles in length, from Blanc Sablon in the south to the Hudson's Straits in the north. Generally speaking, Labrador

is an uninviting country. It is rocky and bleak, the scenery is desolate though grand, and the fishermen on the coast are the only white population.

During the summer months the cod-fishing brings hundreds of schooners and of the small, two-masted, brown-sailed "gashers" to these waters. In the winter months all who remain on the coast are those left in charge of the fishing stations and the Hudson's Bay Company posts.

Off this iron-bound coast are to be seen many huge icebergs. They drift down from the far north, and in the great break-up of the ice a magnificent spectacle is to be witnessed. Between Labrador and Newfoundland there run the Belle Isle Straits. Through this passage, at a certain time of the year, the bergs and ice-floes crash and grind their way to the accompaniment of so much noise that one can understand how, in olden days,



Maackel

### IN LABRADOR: CAMPERS WHO TAKE PART IN THE COD-FISHING

In summer, the inhabitants of Labrador and thousands of people from Newfoundland flock to the coast for the cod-fishing. They live in tents like the one in this photograph, or in roughly built little huts, and are exposed to very great hardships. Most of the people of Labrador have no chance of making money except during the short summer.



**BLEAK HILLS SPARSELY GROWN WITH GRASS AND A LONELY VILLAGE OF LABRADOR IN SUMMER**

Although Labrador is buried under snow for more than half the year, in the valleys, and in many places vegetables such as potatoes, turnips, the summer, which lasts from the middle of June to the end of September, cabbages and lettuces are grown. On the mountain sides and by the rivers are birches, larches and other trees which are hardy enough to live through the frost and snow of Labrador's long and severe winter. is warm and may even be very hot. Blackberries, cranberries, wild currants and several other kinds of berry are found in large quantities



**SPRING MELTS THE THICK ICE OF THE FROZEN HARBOUR OF NAIN ON THE COAST OF LABRADOR**  
The coast of Labrador is administered by the government of Newfoundland, and has been civilized largely by European missionaries. The native Eskimos keep to the coast, and the territories in which they live extend northwards from Nain, which was founded by missionaries in 1771. The chief occupations of the Eskimos are fishing and hunting seals and porpoises ; but they make excursions inland in search of caribou, of which the flesh is eaten and the skins made into clothing. Indian hunters roam over the southern parts of Labrador.

Eskimos

## THE FIRST BRITISH COLONY

the island at the northern entrance of this channel came to be known as "the Isle of Demons."

One Labrador settlement, such as that at Battle Harbour, is typical of all. We see the haven at the end of the "tickle," with the store and other buildings clustering at the foot of the cliffs. There is a landing-stage for the boats, and stretches of beach for the "fish flakes," or wooden stages, on which the split cod are dried in the sun. In addition to the white population there are many Eskimos, who assist in the work of the settlement. And with these is usually a horde of "huskies," the wild, half-wolf dogs which draw the sledges over the snow.

Thanks to the efforts of Dr. Wilfred Grenfell, C.M.G., the hard life of the Labrador fishermen has been considerably lightened. Missions have been established along the coast, and much has been done for the welfare of the people.

Labrador is not entirely a rocky, barren waste. The southern portion is rich in



Grenfell

### LABRADOR STREET IN WINTER

Winter in Labrador lasts eight months and is very severe. So even in the towns deep trenches have to be cut in the snow before people can move about.



Haackel

### ESKIMO GIRL OF LABRADOR

The Eskimos depend largely upon the seal for their clothing. The skins make splendid suits which are not only light in weight, but also warm and wind-proof.

timber, and throughout vast tracts there are big game and birds in abundance; inland there are rivers which abound in salmon and other fish. Only the difficulty of gaining access to the interior keeps this region an unknown and unexplored land. Near the coast, pulp mills are now being constructed, and prospectors and surveyors report the existence of iron, mica and other minerals.

We may well believe that the country of Labrador will yield great riches when its natural resources have been investigated and developed. Both this portion of the mainland and the island of Newfoundland itself have lagged behind in the general progress of the North American continent, but it is certain that their great possibilities for expansion will eventually enable them to take a place of pride among the lands of the British Empire.

# In the Garden of Eden

## MESOPOTAMIA AND ITS LOST CIVILIZATIONS

It is thought that the earliest civilizations may have arisen in that part of the world called Mesopotamia, a name that means "between the rivers"—the rivers being the Euphrates and the Tigris. The site of the Garden of Eden is supposed to have been there; but if we visited the country to-day we should find it anything but a Paradise. When we first learn in history about the cities of Babylonia and Assyria which stood in Mesopotamia, and whose ruins were swallowed by the desert sands ages ago, large areas of this country were interlaced with irrigation canals, which made it the most fertile corner of the world. Decay had set in before the Turks came as rulers of the land, but their rule made of it one of the most desolate tracts upon the earth, and many years will pass before it can be turned into a garden again. Still, its interest endures and attracts us. To Bagdad, the famous city of the Arabian Nights, we shall give a special chapter further on in our work.

[MESOPOTAMIA has been called the "cradle of civilization" and the "dust-heap of the nations," because the ruins of mighty empires of ancient times are buried under its sun-baked soil. This tract of country, which was before the War the Turkish provinces of Mosul, Bagdad and Basra, stretches in a south-easterly direction from Kurdistan to the Persian Gulf. Two mighty rivers, the Euphrates and Tigris, flow right through the land, finally uniting to form the Shat-el-Arab. The Shat-el-Arab finally discharges its waters into the Persian Gulf about 100 miles farther south.

Tradition says that the Garden of Eden lay somewhere in Mesopotamia, and modern excavation has shown that there once existed here what is believed to be one of the oldest civilizations on earth—the Sumerian. The Sumerians were the first astronomers; they divided the day into 12 double hours;

they gave us the first writing; they had laws and learning. They were, after long years, overrun by the Semite invaders, nomadic people of Arabic origin, who adopted the writing, laws and customs of the Sumerians.

From this fusion of Sumerians and Semites rose the Babylonians and Assyrians. The first Babylonian Empire was

founded about 2100 B.C. Centuries later the Assyrian nation arose in the north and there was a constant struggle for supremacy between the two kindred nations. Babylon and Lower Egypt, for a time, fell under the sway of Assyria, and then Nineveh, its capital—the ruins of which are found on the bank of the Tigris opposite Mosul—was the premier city of the world. With the destruction of Nineveh in the seventh century B.C., Babylon again rose to power. Nebuchadnezzar rebuilt the city, enclosing it with mighty walls which, with the "hanging



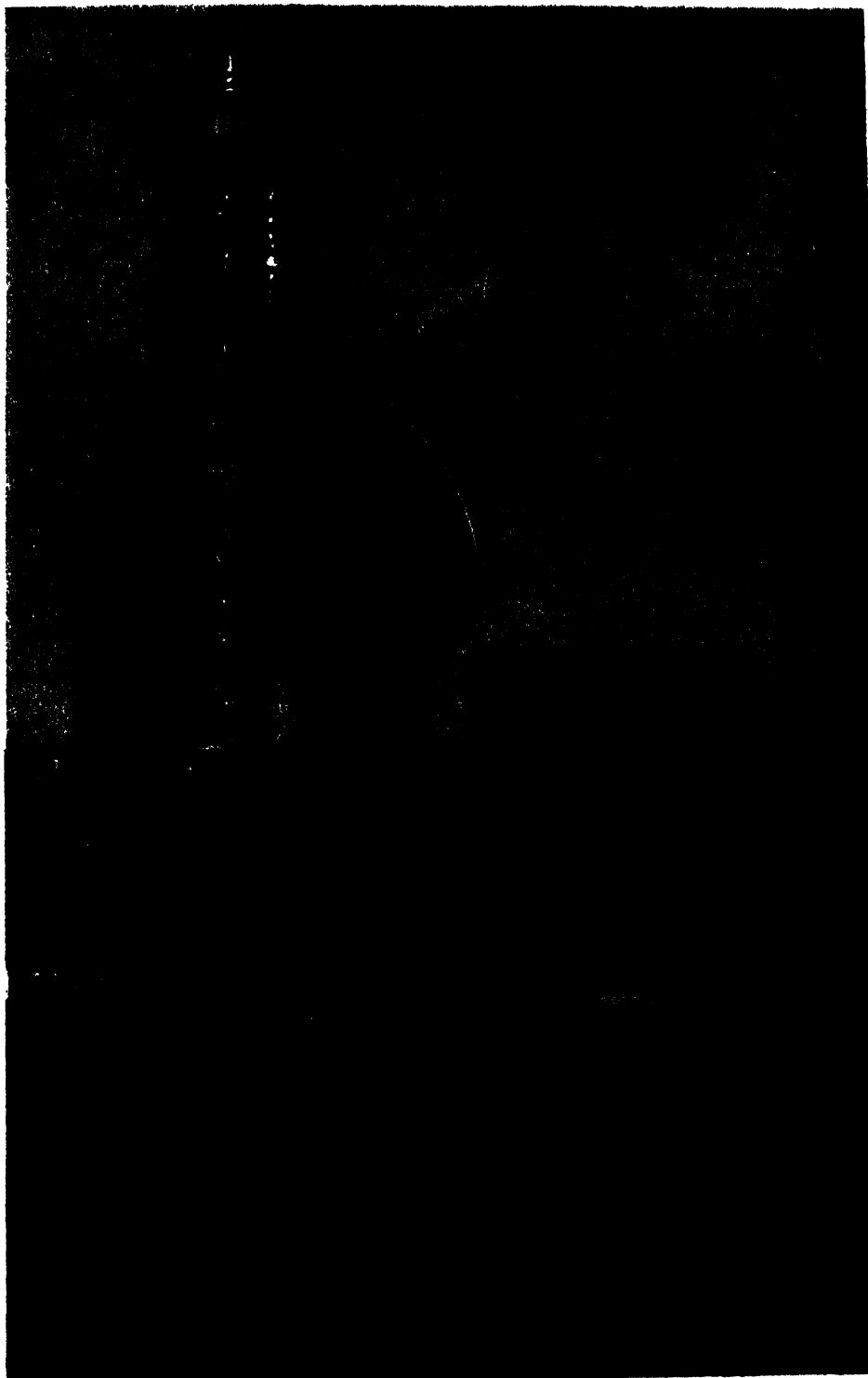
**ARAB METALWORKER OF AMARA**

At Amara the silversmiths have a secret method of inlaying silver with the dull metal called antimony. These are all members of the community of the Sabaeans.





**THE TOMB OF EZRA**, who wrote one book of the Old Testament, reminds us that Mesopotamia was the scene of the captivity of the Jews. The tomb, blue-domed and surrounded by palm-trees, stands on a bend of the Tigris near Kurna. It cannot really be the burial place of Ezra, which was on the banks of the Tigris centuries ago, because the river has changed its course since that time. On the Euphrates, below Babylon, is the tomb of the great Jewish prophet Ezekiel, which is revered as a shrine by both Jews and Christians.



Rodd

**SAMARRA**, with its richly coloured mosque, is considered very holy by members of a certain Mahomedan sect who are known as the Shiites. They believe that the Mahdi, the saviour who is expected by all Mahomedans, actually appeared long ago, and vanished in a cave near Samarra. Here, they think, he will reappear at the end of the world.

## IN THE GARDEN OF EDEN



### BEDUIN TRIBESMAN SHOPPING IN IRAK

The Beduins call themselves "the people of the tent," since they are proud of living in the desert. They dislike towns, and only come to them for such articles as rifles, which cannot be manufactured in the desert.

gardens," formed one of the Seven Wonders of the World. The ruins of Babylon lie to the south of Bagdad.

But Babylon, as recorded in the Bible, was taken by Cyrus, king of the Medes and Persians. The Persians in turn fell before the Greeks under Alexander the Great. The Greeks were followed by Parthians, Romans and then Persians again. After the death of Mahomet in A.D. 632 his Arab followers overran the Persian Empire. At Ctesiphon, the Parthian and Persian capital, they found great treasure, and the materials of its

wonderful buildings were used for the construction of Bagdad in 763. Under the famous Haroun al Raschid, Bagdad became the centre of the wit, learning and art of Islam. Then in A.D. 1638 the country finally passed to the Turks, under whose misrule it remained until the Great War.

And so during the centuries the greatness of Babylon and Assyria passed away. Their magnificent cities were used to supply the bricks for succeeding towns and villages, and such ruins as the barbarians left fell into decay until they became shapeless mounds whose very names were forgotten. The peoples of these cities had used a curious writing called "cuneiform," which they had developed from the script of their Sumerian ancestors. They scratched figures with a triangular, pointed instrument on soft tablets of clay which they afterwards baked. The knowledge of this writing also passed away.

The Great War brought yet another change to this much coveted land. Following the expulsion of the Turk, Mesopotamia passed under the control of the British Government and in 1921 the Emir Feisal, who commanded the Arab troops and fought with us against the Turks during the War, was crowned King of Irak, since when the land has been known officially as "Irak."

Mosul, the chief city of northern Mesopotamia, is on the west bank of the Tigris. Each large house is built round an open courtyard. The houses are of burnt brick faced with slabs of a kind of grey marble, quarried near by. The same marble serves for paving and for wall panels in the interiors. There is a fine mosque, the cupolas and minarets

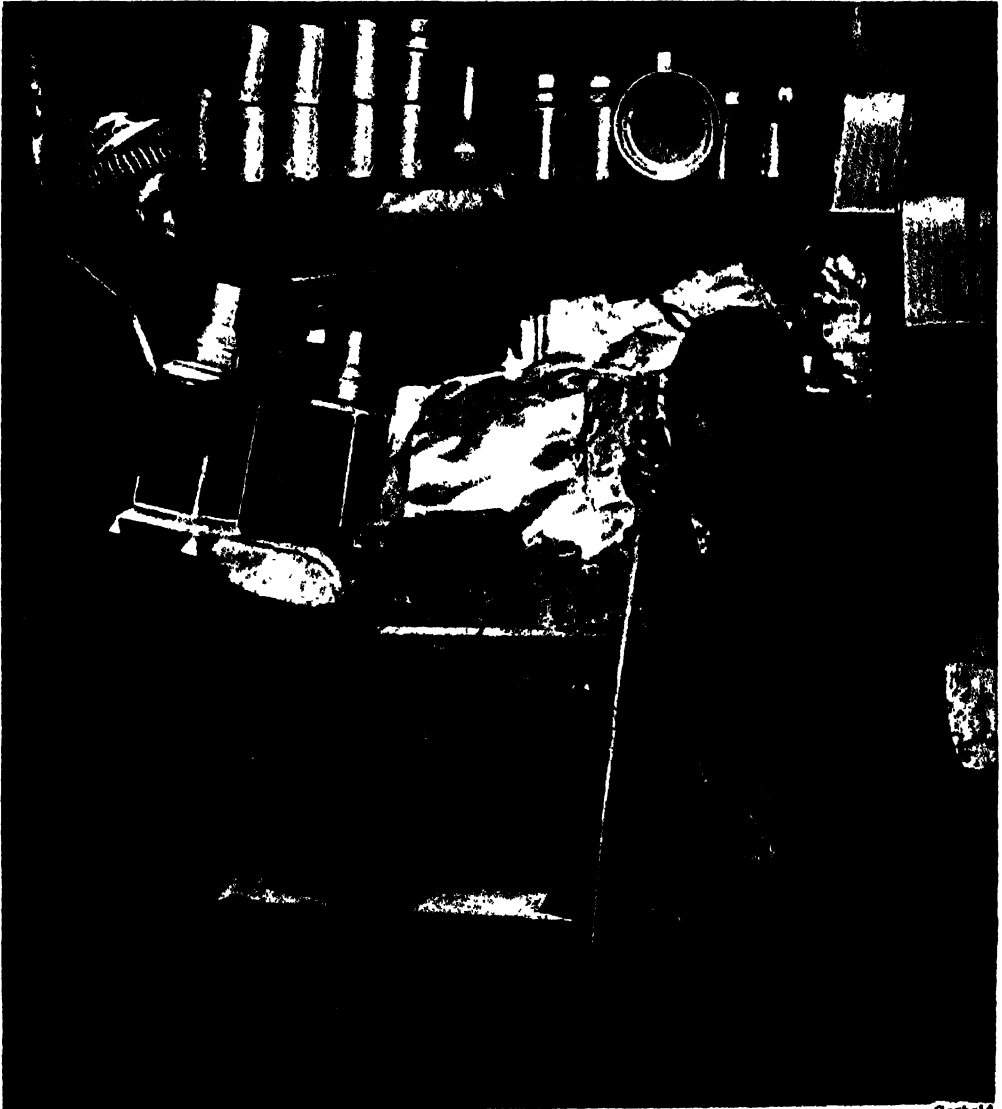
## IN THE GARDEN OF EDEN

of which are of turquoise blue tiles. The summers are very hot, and for three or four months the inhabitants are glad to sleep on the flat roofs; the winters are rainy, and frost is sometimes experienced.

In spite of a new railway there is a considerable trade on the upper Tigris by means of native craft. As some parts of the river are very shallow, use is made of rafts of saplings lashed together and packed underneath with inflated goat-skins. These are floated and paddled

down the river, but the return journey has to be made by road, for at Bagdad the raft is pulled to pieces and sold.

Mesopotamia is not a well wooded country. Much of the north is undulating pasture land, but wheat, barley, beans and liquorice are grown and, if the rainfall be sufficient, yield good crops. A little distance to the north of Bagdad we find an alluvial plain, formed of the mud which the two rivers have deposited. This was once the most fertile and

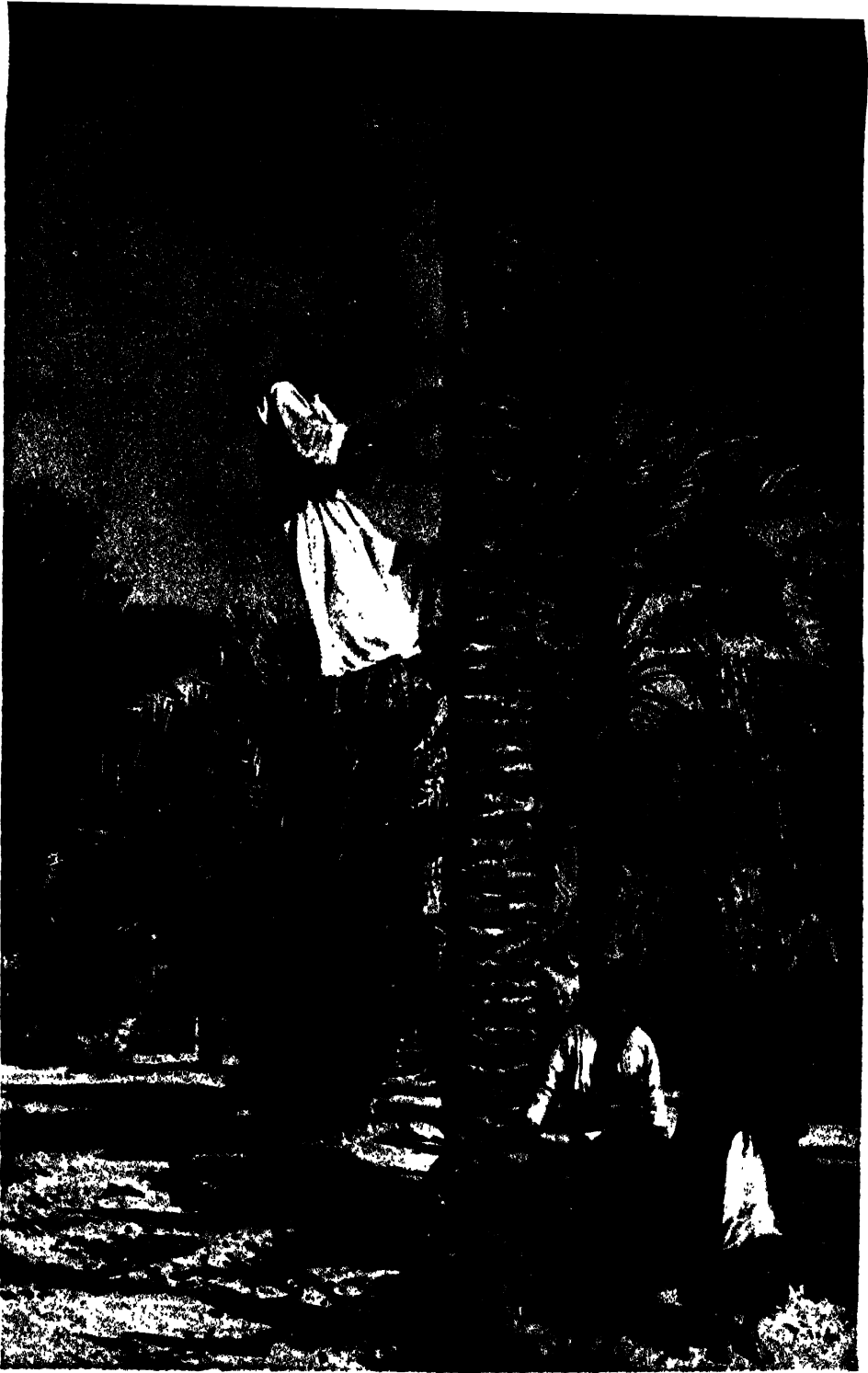


Gorbald

**ARAB TINSMITH AT WORK IN THE STREET BEFORE HIS BOOTH**  
Lamps, mugs, jars, water-cans, and all the dishes that are necessary to an Arab household are made and sold by this merchant in Mesopotamia. We might imagine, after reading the "Arabian Nights," that the markets of the East are filled with vessels of gold and silver, but in actual fact we find that the dishes are usually of tin or coarse earthenware.



**AN ARAB WOMAN** loves jewelry, and this one is adorned with rings, bangles, necklaces, brooches and a pendant from her head-dress. Arabs, even those who have settled in the towns of Mesopotamia and are therefore despised by the Beduins, are intelligent and usually have self-confident manners and a great sense of dignity.



**CLIMBING A DATE-PALM** is no great difficulty to this sturdy Arab. His rope forms a loop round the tree, and is fastened to his sash. When he leans back the loop is tightened, and so the climber is held to the tree while he mounts. When he begins to pick dates the rope keeps him securely in position, and his hands are free for his work.



Staines

#### MAKESHIFT BARBER'S SHOP IN THE OPEN AIR IN MESOPOTAMIA

Mats laid on a ridge of a rough mud wall, a tree to give a little shade, and a rudely constructed bench for customers waiting their turn, make this barber's shop. Most occupations can be carried on in the open air in Mesopotamia, except in the very hottest days, when townspeople have to live in comparatively cool, underground rooms.

thickly populated spot on earth. Here we meet the first palm trees in the narrow strips of cultivated land beside the rivers. Wherever the land is irrigated it responds readily to cultivation. The growing of wheat is increasing and experiments are being made with cotton. But the land under cultivation is only a small proportion of the entire country, and that is the reason why Mesopotamia, which is larger than the British Isles, has a population less than half that of London.

The clay of the plain, mixed with chopped reeds and grass, can be baked into a hard substance by the sun alone, and of this the single-storied dwellings of the villages are built; but we find also huts made of reeds, which in some of the swamps grow to a height of 20 feet.

The larger canes are bent over in a half hoop for the framework; this is covered with mats made of rushes, the end walls are of reed straw bound together, and the entrance is covered with a hanging mat. These huts can be put up in a day and can be taken down and moved elsewhere whenever the owner wishes.

The nomadic tribes who wander about with their flocks and herds use tents made of goat hair. The houses in the towns are mainly strong, two-storey erections. In order to lessen the terrific summer heat, screens, made in the south of camel thorn and in the north of liquorice twigs, are hung before the windows and kept moist by having water thrown over them.

The Tigris is navigable by steamers as far as Bagdad, and though the passage

## IN THE GARDEN OF EDEN

of "the Narrows," just beyond Ezra's Tomb, is difficult for large craft, the river is crowded with boats of all descriptions, carrying passengers and merchandise. The famous, round basket which is known as the "gufa" was in use in the days of Nineveh's glory. Below Sheikh Saad the gufa gives place to the canoe-shaped "bellum."

The Euphrates, which is navigated by native craft only, is much better wooded than the Tigris. In its lower reaches it passes through marsh land which is becoming rich and fertile on being drained. At Kurna the rivers unite and form the Shat-el-Arab, and the cultivated land near this estuary is one of the largest date-producing centres of the world. Nearly 200 varieties of dates are grown, and they are a staple article of food and a big item of export.

In the midst of this fertile strip, and 60 miles from the Persian Gulf, stands Basra, the principal port of Mesopotamia. During the War it became necessary to enlarge and improve it, and now there are miles

of wharves with up-to-date appliances, and close by is a fine dockyard. Basra has been called the Venice of the East, for all through and about the city are numberless waterways and creeks.

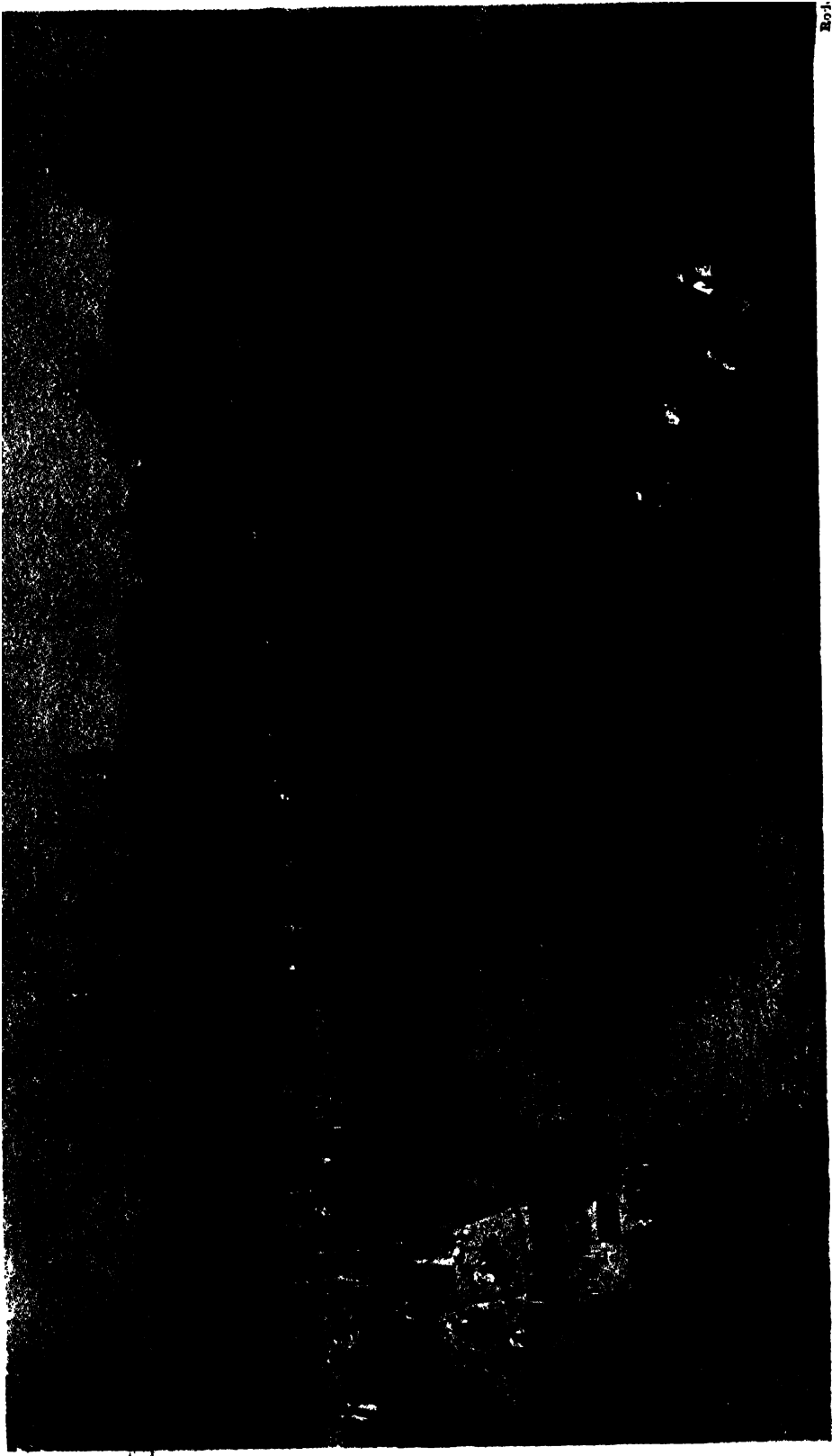
The majority of the population of Mesopotamia is Arab, Arabs of all types and ranks, with a large admixture of Persians. These people are Mahomedans and are divided mainly into the Shiah and Sunni sects, the members of the former sect being called Shiites. In Mesopotamia are some of the most famous places of pilgrimage in the Moslem world.

The holy city of Nejef, which lies to the west of the Euphrates, stands on a cliff overlooking the desert, the golden dome of the mosque which covers the tomb of Ali, the murdered saint, making a conspicuous landmark. The city is walled, and consists of very narrow streets where tall houses shut out most of the light and air. Some of these houses stand on as many as three, four or even five floors of cellars hewn out of the rock, these forming a cool retreat from the



**ARAB WOOD-TURNER USES BOTH HANDS AND FEET AT HIS WORK**  
To shape his block of wood, the Arab makes it revolve by drawing across it, as if he were sawing, the string of such a bow as we can see here. The wood is pared to the desired shape by a chisel, which, steadied by the workman's left hand and his toes, rests on the iron bar held by the little helper on the right.





**MOSUL**, the chief town in an oil-bearing province, stands on the Tigris opposite Nineveh, the ruined capital of ancient Assyria. The streets of Mosul are narrow, undrained and filthy, so that the town is always evil-smelling. Some of its minarets help to give Mosul its

untidy appearance, since they are leaning as if they had been in the act of falling but had been stopped on their way to the ground. Of the two bridges that span the Tigris at Mosul, one is unfinished and the other, which we see in this photograph, is made of boats



**THE ARCH OF CTESIPHON** was once a part of the royal palace in Ctesiphon, the capital of the Sassanids, a Persian people who ruled Mesopotamia before they were conquered in A.D. 637 by the Arabs who swept across the country in overwhelming hordes. Julian, the

Roman Emperor, defeated the Persians here in A.D. 363, and a battle was fought near its ruins during the Great War. Beneath the arch which was the roof of the audience chamber, there was at one time a blue ceiling set with golden stars to imitate the sky.



Harvey

#### BASKET BOATS OF UNWIELDY SHAPE THAT SAIL THE TIGRIS

Gufas, round boats made of hides plastered over with pitch to make them water-tight, have been used from the earliest times on the rivers of Mesopotamia, where they are still common. The gufa, which spins round as it sails, is principally used as a ferry, but many make long voyages loaded with human freight, donkeys, sheep or fruit.

stifling heat of the crowded city above. A broad bazaar, a quarter of a mile long, leads up to the mosque. This small city has 45,000 citizens, but during certain feasts as many as 120,000 pilgrims pass through its gates.

Everything required in the city has to be fetched from without and water has to be brought a distance of three-quarters of a mile in skins.

The Jews, to the number of about 87,000—remembering the captivity of their race in Babylon and the fact that Abraham their founder came from Ur of the Chaldees, which was near the junction of the canal Shat-el-Hai with the Euphrates—have also their holy places of pilgrimage here. The Jews are chiefly men of the towns, traders, shopkeepers and sometimes bankers.

The Christians, about equal in number to the Jews, are found round about Mosul and are mainly Assyrians. Being better educated than the rest of the natives they largely form the professional class. In addition to these people there are wild Kurds from the north, nominally Maho-

medans, and representatives of many other nationalities and religions. Amongst the latter are two communities that call for notice, the Sabaeans and the Yezidis.

The Sabaeans, or Subbis, get their name of "Star-Worshippers" from the fact that they turn to the Polar star when praying, under the belief that the supreme deity has his residence beyond that star. Sunday is their holy day, they practise baptism once a week and they have a ceremony in which bread and wine are used. They are not Christians, but they have great veneration for John the Baptist. They are a very handsome people. Living among the marshlands in the south, their chief industry was the making of canoes until the War made their wonderful, inlaid silver work known to the British troops. When the latter captured Amara the Sabaeans migrated thither, and their silver work has brought them increasing prosperity.

The Yezidis are often called Devil-Worshippers because, although they believe in God the Creator, they hold that the devil is very powerful and treat him with deference.



#### TRADE ON A PEACEFUL BACKWATER OF THE SHAT-EL-ARAB

Along the banks of the Shat-el-Arab, which is the river formed by the junction of the Euphrates and the Tigris, and of the creeks and canals leading from it, are thick groves of date-palms, with here and there among them the sheds in which the fruit is packed. In this creek near Basra we see one of the bellums, or Arab boats.



#### GOAT-SKINS CARRY THE ARAB SAFELY ACROSS THE TIGRIS

To cross the Tigris, the Arab takes a specially prepared bag made of goat-skins, and fills it with air as if it were a great balloon. He then wades into the river with his bag and, when the water becomes deep enough, rests on the goat-skins in the manner shown in this photograph, and drives it along by movements of his legs.



**KARBELA** is a very holy city to the Shiah Mahomedans, or Shiites, since here is the tomb of Hussein, grandson of the prophet Mahomet. Hussein was killed at Kerbela, and is looked upon as a martyr. Thousands of pilgrims visit his tomb every year, and seem so grief-stricken by Hussein's death, that it would be easy to imagine that he had died recently and not years ago.



**BASRA**, the great port of Mesopotamia, is on the Shat-el-Arab, and is sixty miles up-river from the Persian Gulf. Basra has been a prosperous town in the past, but in the years immediately before the Great War it had diminished in importance. Since it has been occupied by the British it has recovered much of its prosperity, and has a great export trade in dates.



Mudd

### PRIMITIVE METHOD OF PREPARING DATES FOR THE MARKET

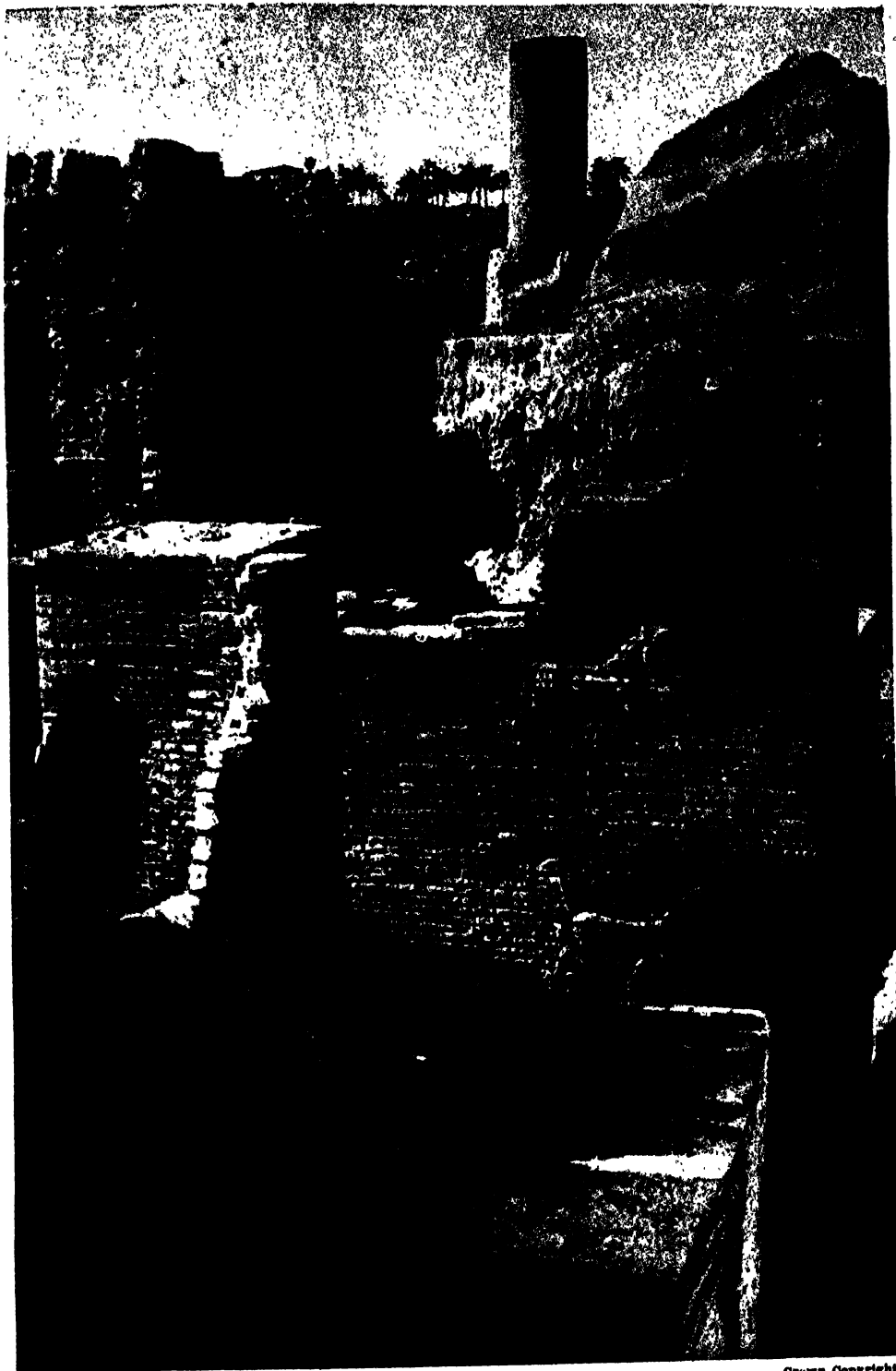
Although dates are the chief product of Mesopotamia, the natives have never learnt to prepare them for export in a cleanly manner. The man is pressing the dates into a sack. They are put into the bag and pressed down by the bare feet of the Arab. At another stage the dates are dried in the sun, and clouds of germ-bearing flies settle on them.



Bodd

### MOSUL GOLDSMITH AT WORK ENTERTAINS HIS NEIGHBOURS

Any excuse to be lazy is eagerly welcomed in the East. The friends of this gold-worker of Mosul find his work-room, which also serves as a shop, a comfortable resting-place, and there they are content to stay. Metal-working is perhaps the only trade not taught them by Europeans, at which the natives of Mesopotamia excel.

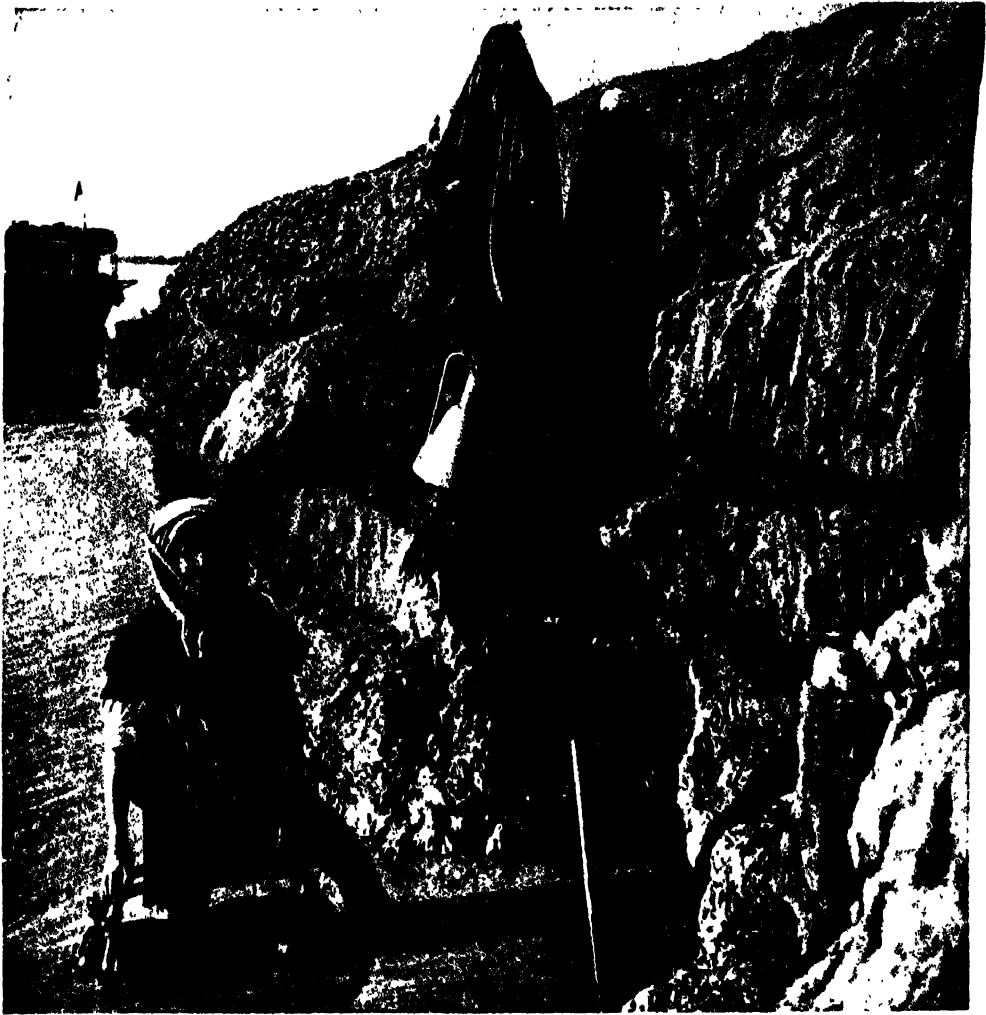


Crown Copyright

### **RUINS OF E-SAGILA, TEMPLE OF MARDUK, A BABYLONIAN GOD**

Among the ruins of ancient Babylon is the temple of Marduk, which stands, near the site of the Tower of Babel, at the southern end of the great road built by King Nebuchadrezzar. A huge building of glazed bricks decorated with coloured figures of bulls and dragons, the temple has all been destroyed except the part seen here, which formerly was underground.





#### DRAWING DRINKING WATER FROM THE TIGRIS AT BAGDAD

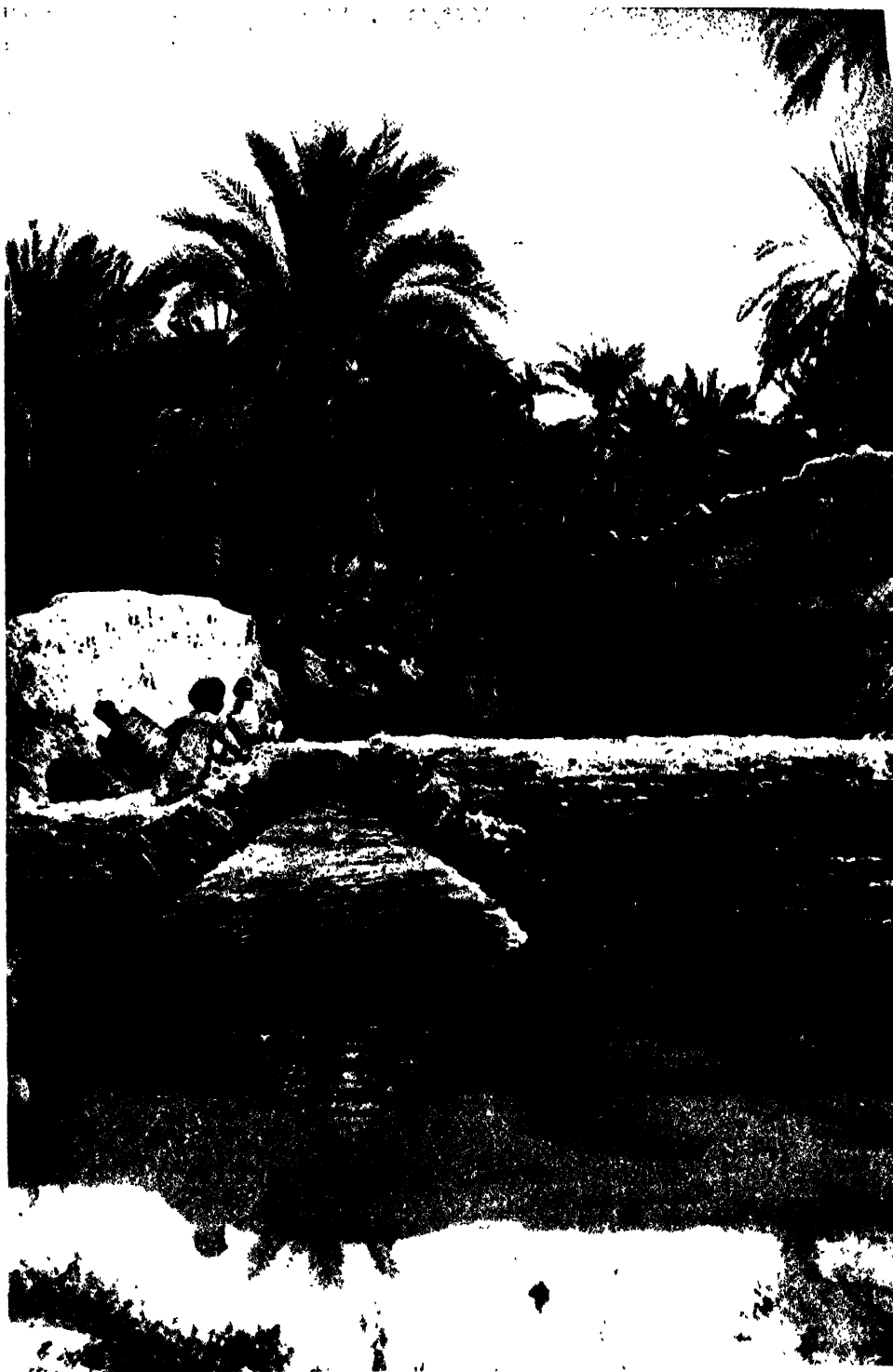
The inhabitants of Mesopotamia are not particular about the cleanliness of the water that they drink. This man stands in the Tigris while he fills his goatskin with the dirty water that he will shortly sell in the streets. On the bank two women wait to draw their supply. Into the Tigris goes much of the sewage and rubbish of Bagdad.

Although the red fez, formerly worn in Turkey, is much in evidence, the characteristic headgear of Mesopotamia is the "shafiyah," a piece of material, usually cotton, which covers the head and falls down over the shoulders, and is often crowned by a thick loop of wool. Worn with the flowing robes it is always associated with the Arabs. We meet with every variety of costume, from the single, long shirt, which, with the shafiyah, often forms the only attire of the poorer classes in the country and the desert, to the costume frequently affected by the wealthy young Arab of Bagdad or Basra, that of a European gentleman

save for the hat, which is replaced as a rule by the red fez.

The women when they appear out of doors are usually enveloped in a shawl-like outer garment, and even when they adopt European clothes they generally wear a shawl over the head.

All classes rise early, and rest during the afternoon heat. Coffee is taken many times a day, and much of the leisure time is spent in the coffee-shop, which is the meeting-place for recreation and social intercourse so far as the men are concerned, for, following the custom of the East, the women, especially of the upper classes, generally lead secluded lives.



Fry

#### **KURNA, SAID TO BE ON THE SITE OF THE GARDEN OF EDEN**

At Kurna, the rivers Euphrates and Tigris join to form the great waterway of the Shat-el-Arab. Along each bank is a strip of palm groves, irrigated by creeks and canals. As compared with the desert around, this fertile area would seem a paradise to the wandering Arab, and he has come to believe that the Garden of Eden was situated here.



#### **GAY MAHOMEDAN LABOURERS READY FOR THE HOUR OF PRAYER**

These Arab labourers eat their midday meal while they await the hour for prayer appointed by their holy book, the Koran. When he prays, the Arab kneels on a mat, like the one spread out before the men, and turns towards Mecca, where Mahomet was born. Behind the Arabs is a tall windmill, used for pumping water.

The advent of the British has worked a marvellous change in many respects. Millions of British money have been expended on Mesopotamia, and the results are to be seen in all directions. Education, elementary, secondary and technical, is advancing; sanitation, to which no attention was ever paid before, has been introduced, and the streets of the cities have been paved, and lighted with electricity.

Hospitals and dispensaries have been established, railways extended and motor-roads constructed; bridges have been built over rivers where only rickety bridges of boats existed before, and,

strange to say, taxi-cabs are to be seen in the streets of Bagdad. The traffic is controlled by an efficient police force and our Government aeroplanes are to be seen flying all over the country. Two miles outside the old city of Bagdad a new town has sprung up where the Europeans and officials reside—for Bagdad is the capital and seat of government. The story of this city of Haroun al Raschid and the Arabian Nights is reserved for another chapter.

The future of Mesopotamia is full of promise, but its realization will depend on the way in which its people adapt themselves to the new conditions.

# "Donkey-Work"

## THE PATIENT LONG-EARED LABOURERS OF MAN

The donkey is too often an animal despised and neglected, though in some countries, where his qualities as an economical beast of burden are properly valued, he is better treated. Spain is the European home of most of the donkey breeds we know, and it was because Spain possessed great herds of donkeys and mules that she became the conqueror of South America, for the donkey and the mule can live and work under conditions where the horse would perish. The mules were able to carry soldiers and munitions into the high places of the Andes in South America, to which horses could not ascend. Donkeys and mules can also go through whole tracts of Africa where a horse cannot live. He is one of the world's burden-bearers is the little donkey, and should have our sympathy and respect. "Donkey-work" may mean lowly work, but it is not the less essential to the well-being of the community on that account.

LL over the world, in every country, north, south, east and west, you will find the little donkey working hard for his living, or, in sunnier lands than Great Britain, running wild in herds. He belongs to the horse family, and is, in fact, a sort of poor relation, possessing neither the dignity and noble appearance of the horse itself, nor the distinguished markings of its cousin, the zebra. But the donkey may have the satisfaction of knowing that his position in the animal kingdom is at any rate much better than that of another cousin, the mule, which is a cross between a donkey and a horse.

What satisfaction this gives him there is no telling, for in England, at all events, the poor donkey has not a great deal of which he can be proud nor for which he can be thankful. In this rainy climate he is never seen at his best, because donkeys hate the wet, and they will not voluntarily cross water.

Under natural conditions they are alert, upright little fellows, unlike the sorry creatures we see dragging costers' barrows in the London streets, or waiting in patient rows at the seaside to gallop backwards and forwards along the sands with children on their backs.

The ass is the donkey's proper name, but he received his other more familiar title on account of his dun colour. He is curiously marked right down the back and across the shoulders with stripes which form a sort of cross. Sometimes his legs are striped. Sometimes he is pure white.

It would seem as if Nature were in a freakish mood when she created him, half comic, half pathetic as he is, with his monster, swivelling ears, the long tuft at the end of his tail, stiff mane and harsh bray—that loud and grating "hee-haw"—which does not allow him to express any different shades of emotion.

When a donkey brays he is invariably



### BURDEN BIGGER THAN BEAST

Though the Asiatic wild donkey is about the size of a pony, donkeys that are domesticated in India are, owing to overwork and insufficient food, very small indeed.

## 'DONKEY-WORK'



### NEGRO OF MOROCCO ON HIS WHITE DONKEY

Most of the world's patient, hard-working donkeys are descendants of the African wild ass, a beautiful creature as big as a small horse and wonderfully swift, which still roves in herds over the deserts of north-eastern Africa.

sorrowing because he senses rain in the air, but instead of sympathising with him we laugh at his absurd noise! His tail, however, is not a joke. It is very useful for dealing with the venomous, winged insects that infest hot countries, and his swivelling ears are his protection against enemies, for they catch sounds coming from all directions. Being small in build and carrying no weapons of defence, his only safeguard lies in flight, and his ears enable him to beat a retreat before the danger is too close upon him.

On the grassy plains of central Asia and north-east Africa asses are to be found in their wild state, and the wild

ass is hunted in Persia, the hide being turned into leather, called shagreen. The milk of the ass is sweeter than cow's milk and is a special delicacy for invalids. There are wild asses in India also, but the ancestor of our domestic ass, or donkey, came from Abyssinia.

The Indian donkey is small and, when domesticated, invariably overworked, having to pick up a living as best it may. It is employed chiefly for carrying heavy weights in panniers. It is also used for riding, and two natives and a child may quite frequently be seen all perched on one poor, half-starved little beast.

Not long ago an Englishman going along a narrow pass in the Indian hills came upon a donkey so laden with the household goods of its native owner that it could scarcely move. Its slender legs were literally bending under it, and the owner was beating it mercilessly.

The Englishman promptly flung all the things off its back, while the native stood by, wringing his hands and lamenting to see his treasures scattered in the dust. Relieved of its burdens, the cunning little donkey rolled

over, and thus the Englishman had to leave it, comforted by the reflection that it would know a few moments' ease and rest while the load was being collected together again. There was nothing else he could do, for in India there is no law to protect animals from the cruelty and ignorance of their masters.

However, it is pleasant to remember that elsewhere, in such countries as Arabia, Egypt and Syria, the donkeys have a better time and are more prized and better tended. The best kind of riding-donkey is said to be the most comfortable animal to ride. It is strong and tireless, and being fleet and sure-footed, it is used



**DOG AND DONKEY PULL TOGETHER ALONG A TRIM FRENCH ROAD**  
In several European countries, as in Polar regions, dogs are used as draught animals, but it is not often that we find one thus yoked with an ass. This French donkey is in good condition, fat and well-cared for, but he is very much smaller than his wild, African ancestor, for no donkey reaches his full size except in a hot climate.



### BRINGING WATER INTO A THIRSTY SOUTH AMERICAN LAND

Donkeys are found even in South America—very far from their native land. This one is in Chile, and it is his work to draw a barrel of drinking water over the dry, barren plains to the nitrate fields of Antofagasta, where every drop of moisture is valuable. The rider sits well back so that the ropes may not chafe his legs.



### DONKEYS HELP THEIR SPANISH MASTER TO DRAW WATER

In many parts of Spain water for the land is scarce, and must be got by irrigation. This ancient farmer of Murcia, a Mediterranean province, sets his pair of donkeys to work, drawing the water from his well. As they circle round and round the primitive contrivance to which they are harnessed brings water to the surface.



Manley

**INDIAN DONKEYS HAVE A LIFE OF HARD WORK AND HEAVY BLOWS**  
 These small Indian donkeys are treading corn, work more usually performed in Eastern lands by heavier animals, such as oxen. Fastened together and to an upright post, they must walk round stolidly, spurred on by blows from their master. In more civilized countries the complicated threshing machine is employed to the same end.



Hykes

**YOUNG MELON SELLER OF SIN-KIANG BRINGS HIS GOODS TO MARKET**  
 The Chinese province of Sin-kiang is mostly desert. Near Kashgar, in the west, however, irrigation has made the oasis so fertile that many kinds of fruit are grown, especially melons. Here we see the square wooden panniers the fruit-growers have devised, so that one donkey can carry as many as possible of these cumbersome fruit.





Photochrome

**THIS DONKEY OF BETHLEHEM** in no way diminishes the dignity of his Arab rider, for the ass of Palestine is a large beast, very different from the pathetic little Indian one we see in page 597. It was probably the Egyptians who introduced the ass into Palestine, for they first domesticated it very many centuries ago.



Créte

**IN PLEASANT NORMANDY** the ass is frequently seen as a beast of burden, for it will feed on coarse herbage that other animals despise. It is hardy and strong, and when well treated is docile and obedient. This country girl has brought her dairy produce to market in the neat baskets hung from the saddle of her milk-white donkey.



#### ILL-ASSORTED TEAM THAT DRAWS THE PLOUGH IN PALESTINE

Donkeys and oxen are both used extensively in the Near East to do work that in Britain would be carried out by horses, but one does not often see them yoked together. The Palestine ox is small in size, however, and the ass is large, so the team which draws this primitive wooden plough is not so ill-matched as might have been expected.

for bearing human as well as other loads in both desert and mountainous regions.

Although it can be harnessed to a cart, the general custom is to fix panniers to its back, and the panniered donkey is a common sight in nearly all Eastern countries. Donkeys are much used in France, and you may see in some towns a donkey and a dog yoked together to a light cart and pulling it through the streets.

Sometimes the donkey may have both driver and wares on its back, as had the one which R. L. Stevenson encountered at Pont-sur-Sambre. "A brisk little woman passed us by," wrote Stevenson. "She was seated across a donkey between a pair of glittering milk-cans, and as she went she kicked jauntily with her heels upon the donkey's side and scattered shrill remarks among the wayfarers."

Though as shrewd and intelligent, neither the French nor the English donkey is so fine an animal as the Spanish. The donkeys in our own country are descended from a Spanish breed introduced during the sixteenth century, but they have

sadly degenerated since then. George Borrow, in "The Bible in Spain," describes how he once bought a donkey from a Spanish gypsy.

The gypsy who was showing off the animal's paces leapt on its back and whispered something in its ear, and Borrow, amazed at its speed and agility, readily made the purchase. As soon as he had his money the gypsy vanished, and when Borrow himself got into the saddle the donkey refused to budge, except to pitch him off into the mud. He got up and looked about, and there stood the donkey staring at him, as were the rest of the gypsies. He shouted at them to tell him where was the man from whom he had bought the donkey. But there was little to be gained by shouting. Donkey and master had played him a rascally trick—not for the first time, we may be sure.

Unable to do anything with his mount, Borrow was forced to sell it again immediately. One of the gypsies bought it for a trifle, and Borrow lost a fair sum of money over the transaction. It was all a

## 'DONKEY-WORK'

ruse. The donkey would be returned to its master and the gypsies would share the spoil between them.

In Palestine the ass is very useful to the farmer. It will tread the corn, or pull the plough—just as it did, perhaps, in biblical times, for it was called into the service of man long before the horse.

In South America it drags barrels of water to dry areas. In eastern Turkistan it is to be met with wooden crates full of melons attached to its saddle: in Sicily trotting into town with a monk astride. And in England, to this day, donkeys are employed to carry the mails in remote parts of Cornwall, as can be seen in page 60.

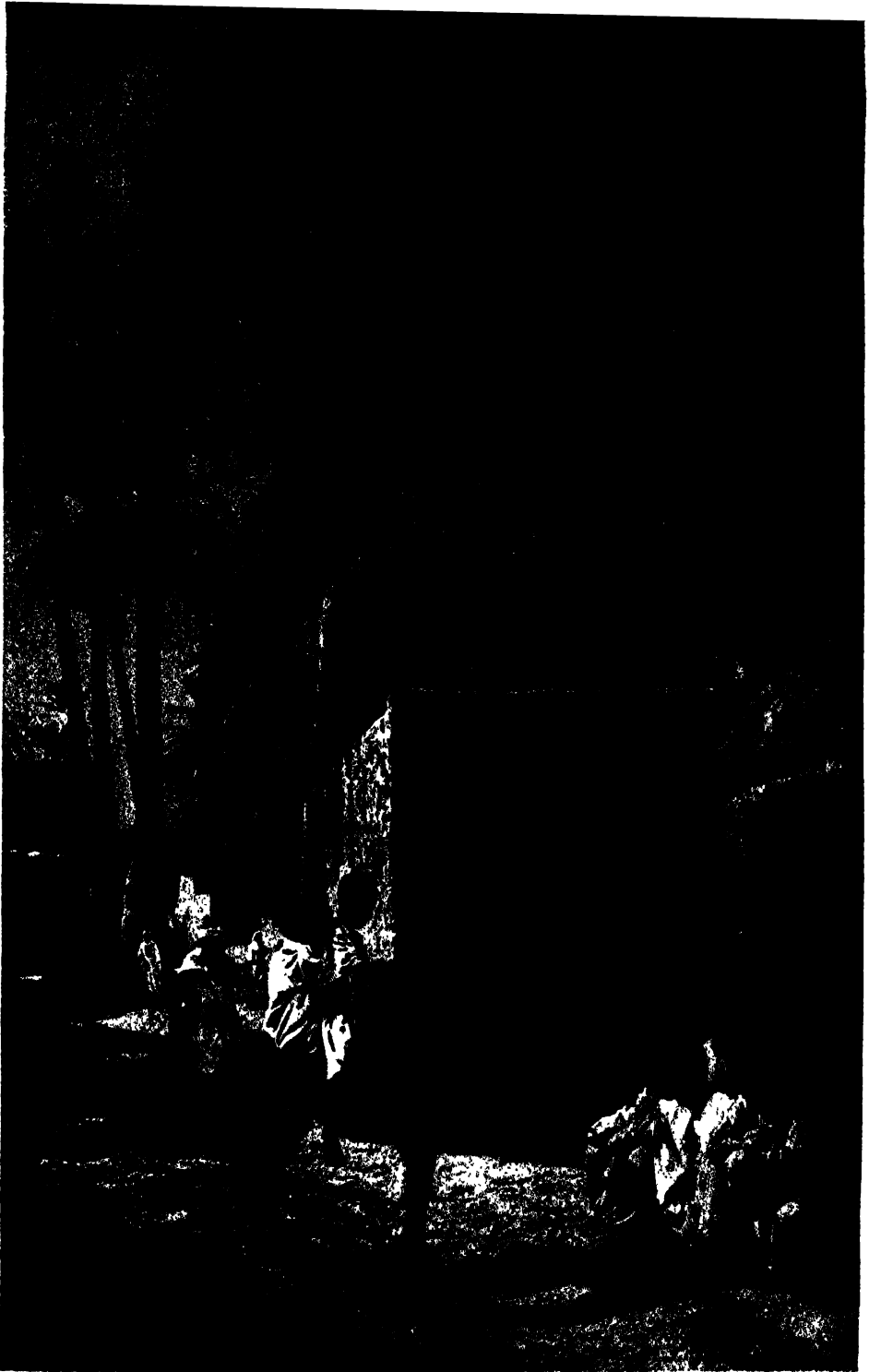


**AN ASS IS A SORRY MOUNT FOR A WARRIOR ARMED TO THE TEETH**  
One might well imagine this fierce-looking Beduin of Palestine, with his long, curved scimitar and old-fashioned gun, to be a brigand chief come down from the hills to rob the pilgrims on their way to Jerusalem. Indeed, had he lived a century or so ago, there is little doubt he would have been a robber like his lawless forbears.



Cutler

**A PEASANT WOMAN** of Leiria, in Portugal, loads her donkey with large panniers even when she herself rides on its back. It must be very comfortable to travel on a donkey in Portugal, since a great bundle of cloth is put on its back to make a soft seat—probably a necessity to the rider, since Portuguese roads are very stony and uneven.



E. H. A.

**ALGERIAN BOYS** are very lucky when they are sent on errands, for this smart little donkey carries both themselves and their basket. Throughout North Africa the donkey is a very useful beast of burden, bearing with patience huge loads that seem top-heavy, water-jars, and warlike men who would be more suitably mounted on an Arab horse.

## 'DONKEY-WORK'

Lucky are those donkeys which are kept as pets and only expected to draw light governess-carts. But unfortunately for donkeys, a tough constitution that enables them to survive the sudden changes of various climates, and an ability to live on rough food, such as coarse grasses and thistles, have made them cheap to buy and to keep; consequently they often fall into the hands of people who are too poor to take proper care of them.

Why "ass" and "donkey" should have become words of derision it is difficult to say, for the ass is often not so stupid as its driver. Yet, apparently, even in Shakespeare's time, when it was a newcomer to this country, it was an object of ridicule, and in "A Midsummer-Night's Dream," Puck, playing with the simple-minded weaver, Bottom, casts a

spell on him and, to make him ludicrous, obliges him to wear an ass's head.

Perhaps it was because of the ass's recognised humbleness that Jesus chose to ride one into Jerusalem when the multitude was waiting to "spread their garments" in the way and to deck His path with branches. He wanted to demonstrate to the people how meek and lowly was the Son of God; yet that incident has touched the common donkey with glory for ever. Mr. G. K. Chesterton, in his poem, "The Donkey," puts these words into the donkey's mouth:

"The tattered outlaw of the earth,  
Of ancient crooked will;  
Starve, scourge, deride me: I am dumb,  
I keep my secret still.

"Fools! For I also had my hour—  
One far fierce hour and sweet;  
There was a shout about my ears,  
And palms before my feet."



**A COCKNEY HOLIDAY: THE LONDON COSTER WITH HIS "MOKE"**  
The London donkey, usually known to its driver as "the moke," serves the coster and his family well on work-days and holidays. It is a sturdy little creature, and draws heavy loads about the streets, or to Hampstead Heath for a day's merrymaking. The coster does not usually own his donkey, but hires it and the cart from a donkey-stable.

# Australia's Magic-Makers

## PRIMITIVE NATIVES IN THE ISLAND CONTINENT

If we travelled to Australia we should probably land at one of the great ports, such as Adelaide, Melbourne or Sydney, and we should not find the life there very different from that of any of our cities. Amid the trams and splendid buildings it would be difficult to realise that scattered through the vast tracts of the island are tribes of savages who believe in and practise "magic." These natives are less intelligent than most other uncivilized peoples, but they are held to be the most skilful hunters and trackers in the world. They have invented one thing—the boomerang—which is a wooden weapon so made that it travels farther than any similar weapon and returns to the thrower.

Photographs in pages 610 and 612-17 are from "Northern Tribes of Central Australia" or "Across Australia," by Spencer and Gillen

WE are accustomed to speak of the Australian aboriginals, the original native inhabitants of the continent, as "blackfellows." But that name is not, strictly speaking, correct. The people of the native tribes are a deep copper or dark chocolate brown in colour; one never meets with a really black type.

The native of Western Australia would differ in many respects from the aboriginal of Victoria or New South Wales or Queensland. In one tribe the hair may be straight, in another curly; and in yet another there will be an inclination to frizziness, such as distinguishes the Papuan black. There is a great variation, too, in physique. In some tribes we find well-proportioned men of six feet and more. Elsewhere the average height is much lower. Also there is much difference in the matter of looks. The natives of one district are brutal, even repulsive, in appearance; in another part they will have fairly well-formed features.

As a matter of fact, the Australian aboriginal is a puzzle to scientists. Some urge that he is akin to ourselves, others that he belongs to an African negro race. The great majority of the tribes, however, appear to have an Asiatic strain in them and to have some relation to southern Indian and Malayan peoples.

### *Complicated Puzzle of Tribes*

Students of the human race and its origin have disputed this question for many years, and nothing definite can be asserted. The puzzle is all the more complicated because of the great number of different types. It is possible to make a

circle of five hundred miles on a portion of the northern coast and find that it encloses as many tribes, all of whom vary in colour and appearance, and who will speak many different languages.

The aboriginal whom we know best, the popular type, may be described as a lean, wiry man, with a low forehead and shaggy, overhanging eyebrows, a broad, flat nose, thick lips which do not, however, protrude like those of a negro, high cheekbones and a chin that is small and usually receding. He does not present a pleasing picture, especially when his face is adorned with a beard, whiskers and moustache.

### *One Way of Counting*

In intelligence the Australian native does not compare favourably with the coloured people of other lands. He belongs to an inferior race. He is content to live in a tribe, or a family, the leadership of which is held by a council of some of the older men. He possesses scarcely any of the arts and crafts of which other savage peoples can boast. He cannot write or scarcely even count, unless he has been taught by a white man, and generally lives in roughly constructed bark huts, or "gunyahs." Of his inability to count an amusing story is told. A native had accompanied his master to Melbourne and had seen a white man's city for the first time. "How many people were there, Jacky?" he was asked. "T'ousands—millions—me t'ink fifty!" replied Jacky, rolling his eyes.

It is typical of the low grade of intellect among the aboriginals that very few of the

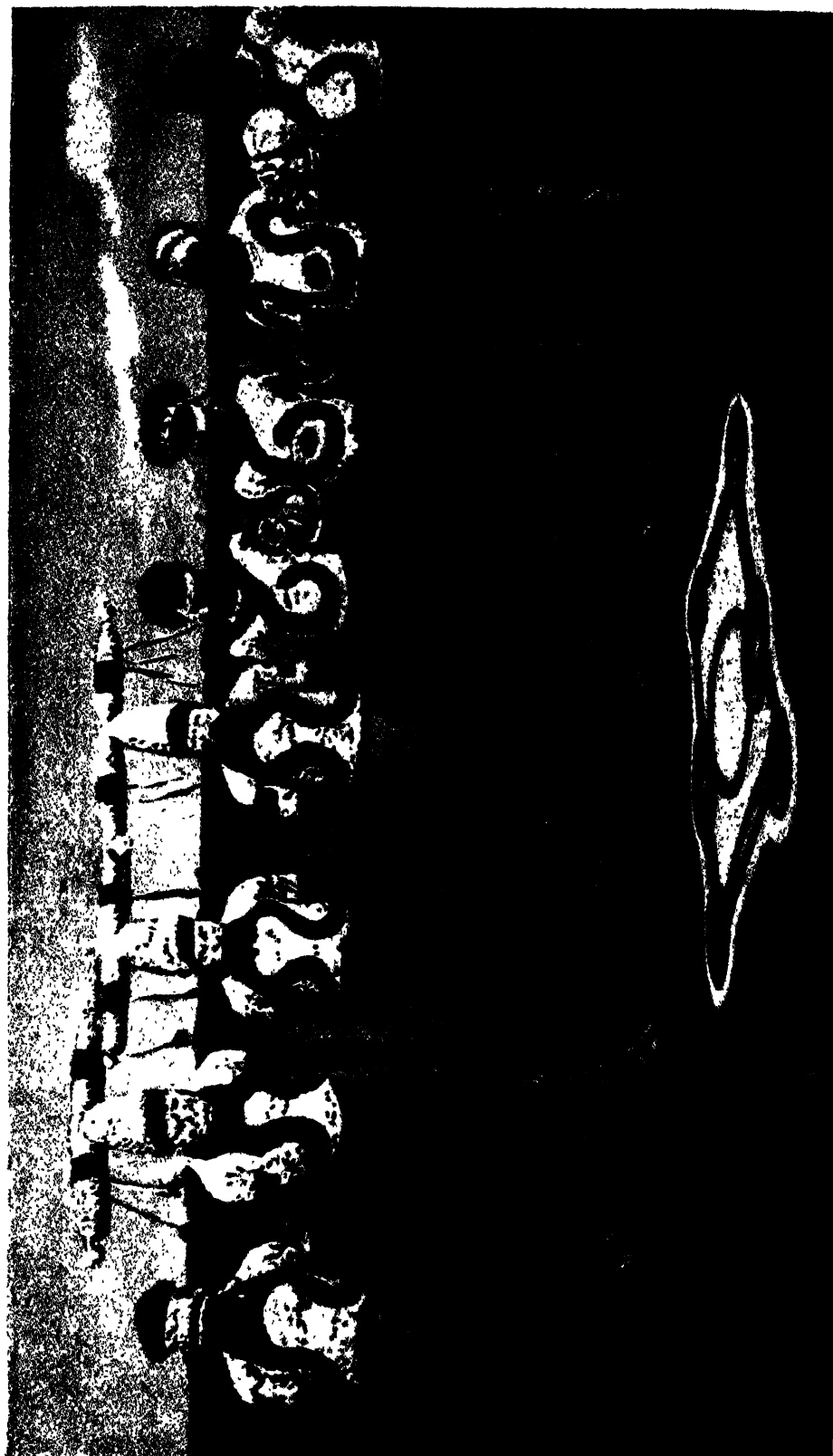




Murchison

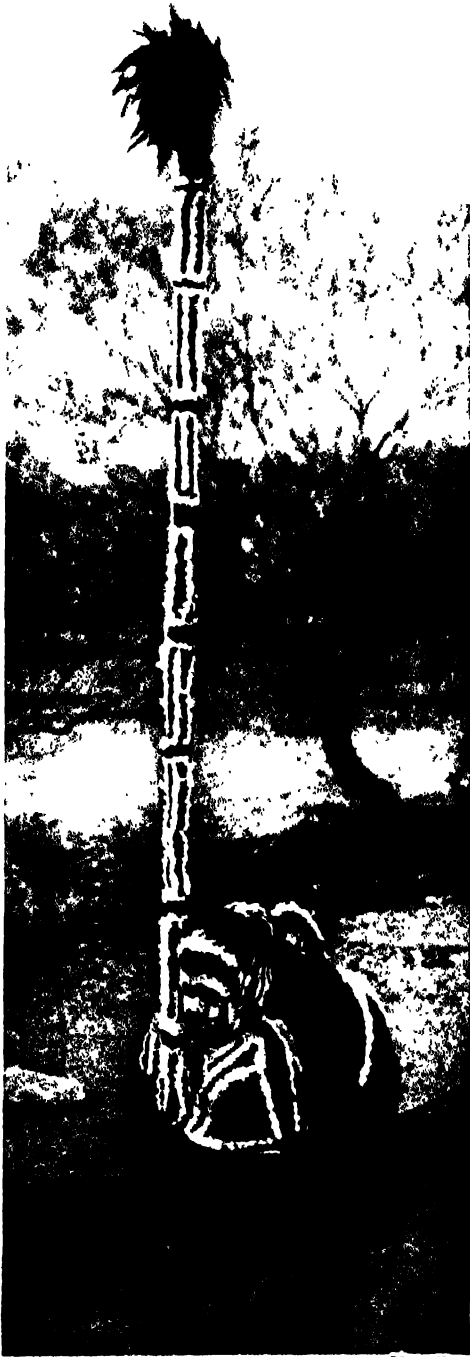
Murchison Range, the only one in the country that never dries up. It is Wollunqua's duty, from which he is always trying to escape, to keep a supply of water for those who reverence him. Wollunqua is to be persuaded, by means of this mound, to do his duty faithfully.

**A TOTEM MOUND**, decorated with a serpent, is prepared by natives of an Australian tribe to please Wollunqua, a sacred, black serpent believed to be 150 miles long and an ancestor of the tribe. According to legend, he lives with part of his body fixed in the waterhole of the



**SNAKE MEN** prepare to work the magic that will bring their tribe an increased supply of snakes for food. Each man is painted and decorated with symbols that are intended to give him something of the appearance of a snake. When he is thus adorned and engaged in magical practices, he himself and his tribe imagine that he has become a kind of divine snake having power over ordinary snakes. Similar twisting designs are painted on the bodies of the men who take an active part in the burial services of certain of the tribes.

## AUSTRALIA'S MAGIC-MAKERS



**ANT-POLE AN AID TO MAGIC**

To increase by magic their supply of ants and ants' eggs for food, two men, decorated with white down, and having a pole to represent a tree, go through the motions of searching for ants at the imaginary roots of the pole.

tribes which live along the coast have managed to build canoes. The majority rely upon simple rafts and they know next to nothing of the principles of sailing.

As we know, the continent of Australia is very poor in animal life. For food the aboriginal has to be content with lizards, snakes, frogs, birds and even insects, when he cannot kill a larger creature such as a kangaroo or an opossum. There are few fruits, and he grows no crops.

In his wandering over the sparsely covered country he is continually hunting for food, and this has developed in him remarkable powers of sight and smell, together with an instinct that is almost uncanny in its working. The wonderful ability displayed by a native in tracking is at times beyond belief.

Says one writer : " Where the ordinary observer's eye cannot see anything out of the common, an aboriginal will read a whole page of facts. They literally stare him in the face. A dislodged stone, a turned leaf, a broken twig, a few grains of sand left on a patch of rock---all tell him something about what has passed that way. From a horse's hoof marks he will tell you both the size of the animal and the time that has elapsed since the impressions were made. By the way a hole is dug or a tree notched he will probably tell you to what tribe the man belongs who did the act. A tracker has even been known to say that the man, a complete stranger to him, whose trail he was following was knock-kneed, and he proved to be right."

This special skill in the reading of a bush track is hereditary, but it is also the result of training from early childhood. In camp the small boy learns to play games in which animals and birds figure. He thus learns their habits, the appearance of their footprints and so on. When he is older he will accompany one of the men into the bush and be taught how to read the many signs of the trail from sand and stone and rock, from tree and shrub and leaf, as he goes on.

The girls of the tribe are often not a whit behind the boys in practising this

## AUSTRALIA'S MAGIC-MAKERS

art of keen observation. The ability of the women in following a trail is as wonderful as that of any man. Police officers in Australia who have had much to do with native trackers have related extraordinary instances of this.

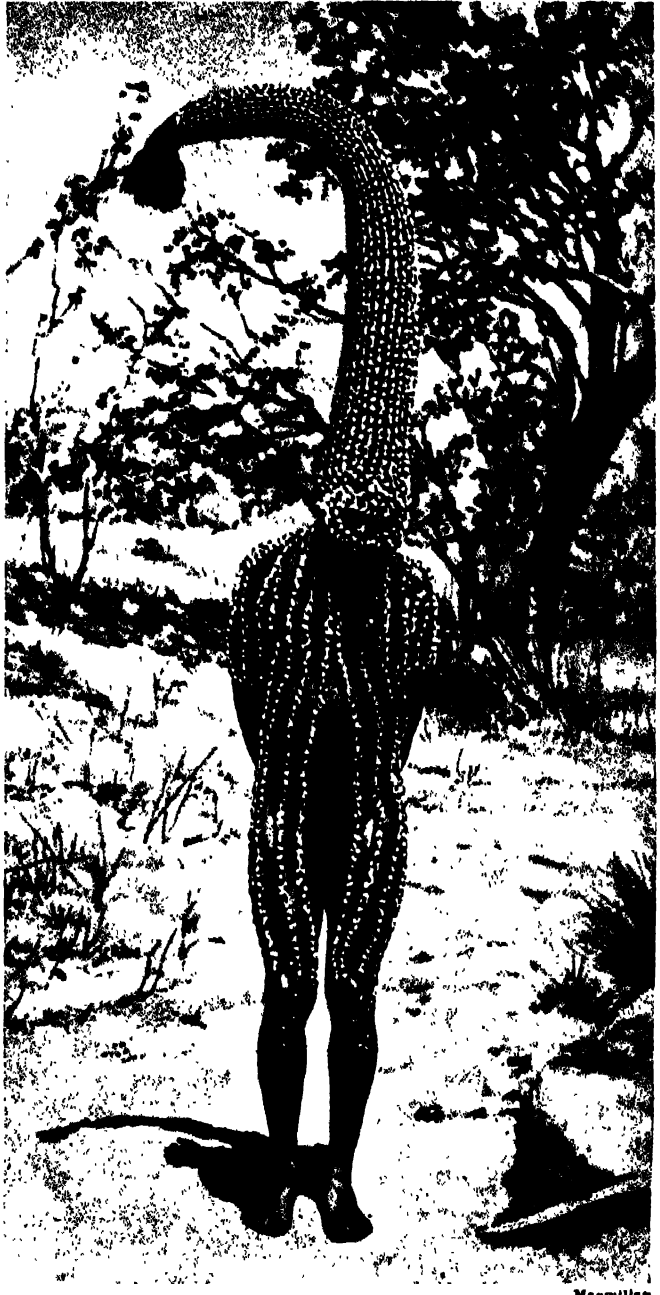
Although the Australian native is very primitive in his manner of life, he has followed the custom of many savage peoples in building up an elaborate system of rules for the government of his own community. A tribe will be split into several clans and "totems," each of them being called by a special name taken from an animal, a bird or, perhaps, a tree or kind of grass. Out of this curious division has grown a social code which regulates marriage in particular.

Under its rules a man, say, of the kangaroo "totem," is forbidden to marry a girl of the same order; he must look for his wife among the women of the wombat, the rat or some other "totem."

With this particular system there has grown a strong belief in magic. The aboriginal is superstitious to a high degree and lives in a world which he believes to be peopled with evil spirits. So every tribe has its witch doctor, or "medicine man," to whom the native looks for help. When he is ill it is this sorcerer who drives away by magic the malicious influence that has brought him low. When he seeks vengeance on an enemy he plots with this same sorcerer to bring misfortune, illness or death upon the victim. One common form of magic is known as "pointing."

This is carried out by means of a sharpened bone or a

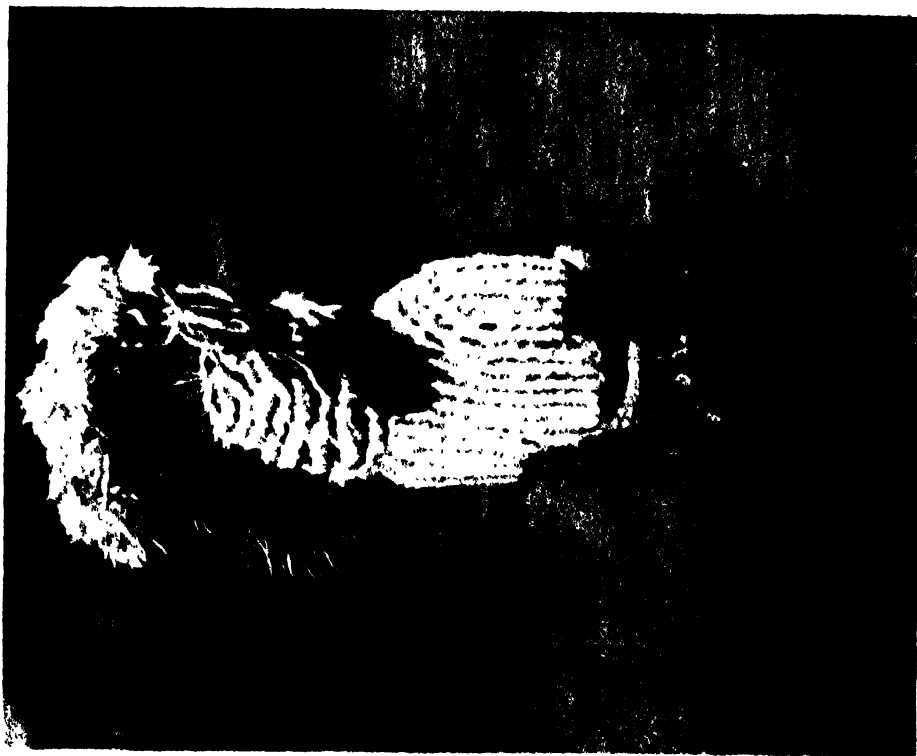
piece of stick. After certain rites and spells have been performed and repeated, the article in question is taken unseen at night to where its owner's victim is lying, and is jerked repeatedly in his direction, while the spell is again uttered. The evil



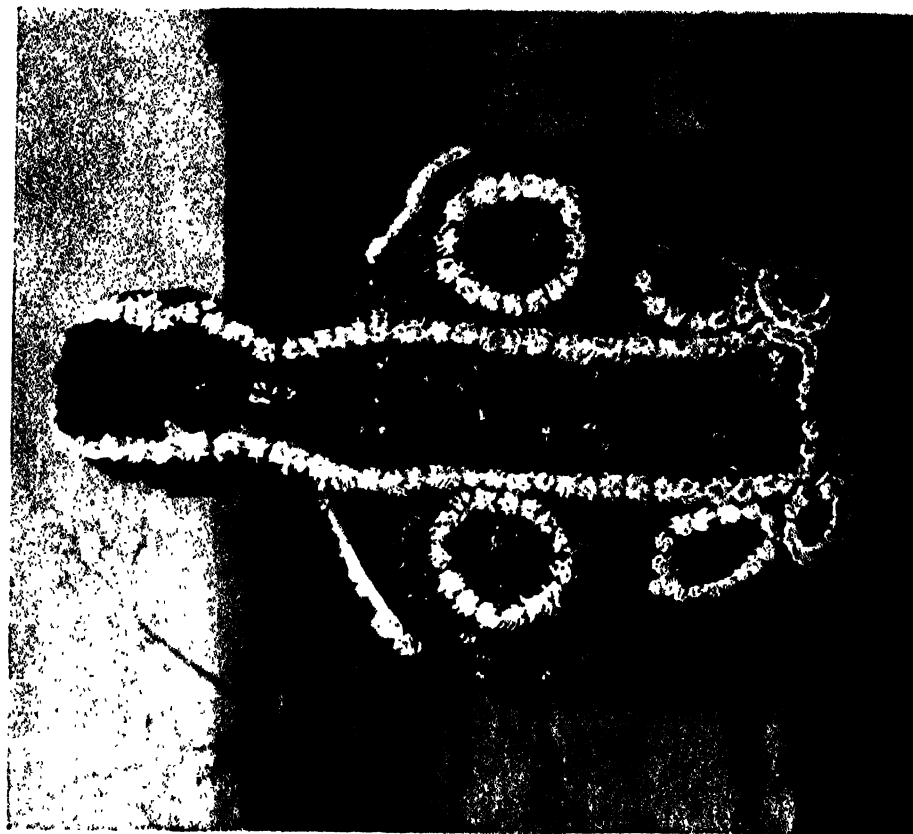
Macmillan

### EMU MAN ENGAGED IN HIS MAGIC RITES

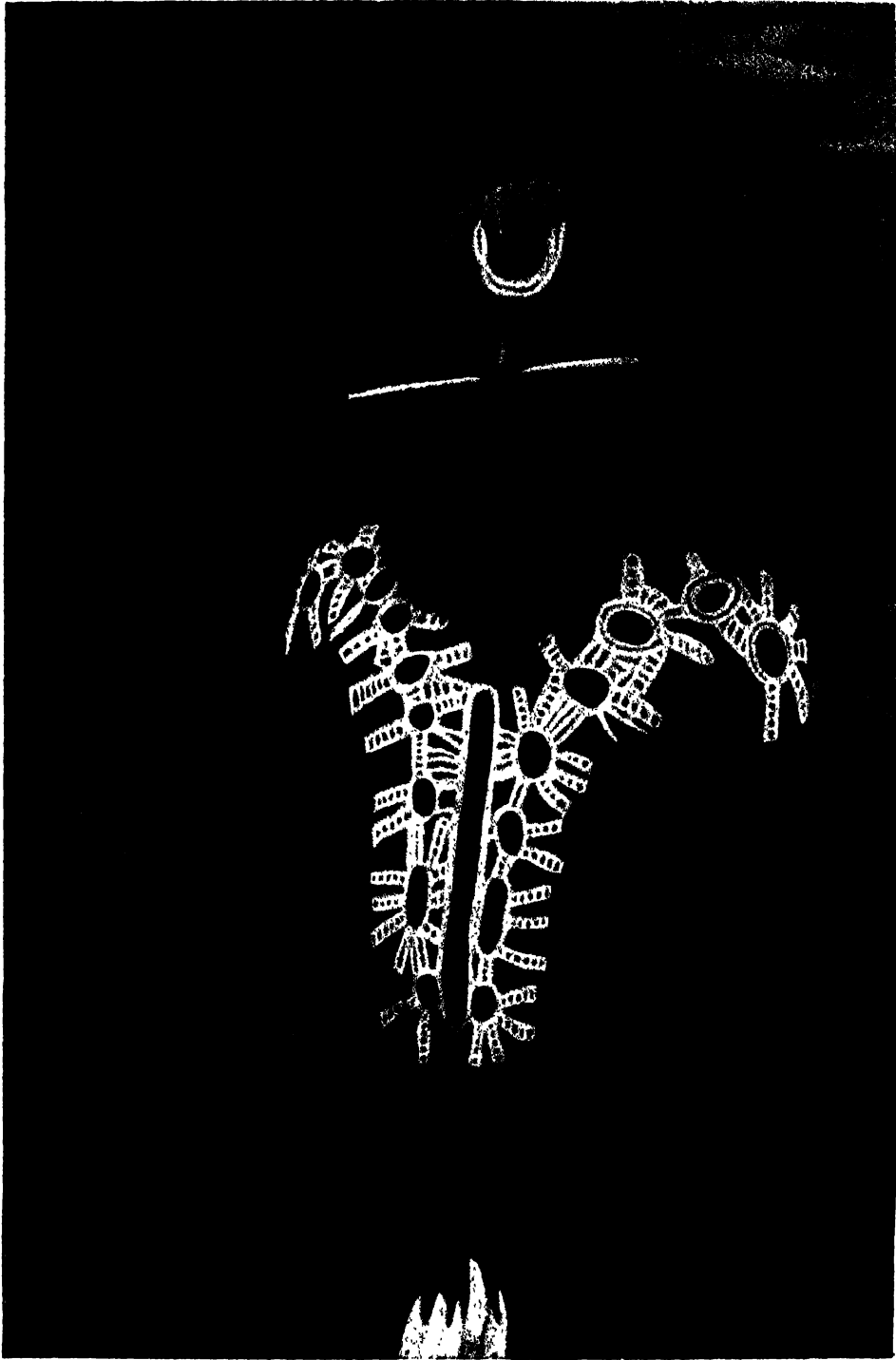
This magician hopes to make emus plentiful for the hunters of his tribe. He wears his high, slender head-dress made of twigs, the down of birds and human hair, so that he may resemble an emu, the ostrichlike bird of Australia.



**THIS NATIVE ENCHANTER** wears a costume that represents a bulb and performs certain rites so that there may be a good crop. The aboriginal is very practical in his religion ; only the bulbs that are good for eating are to be conjured up.

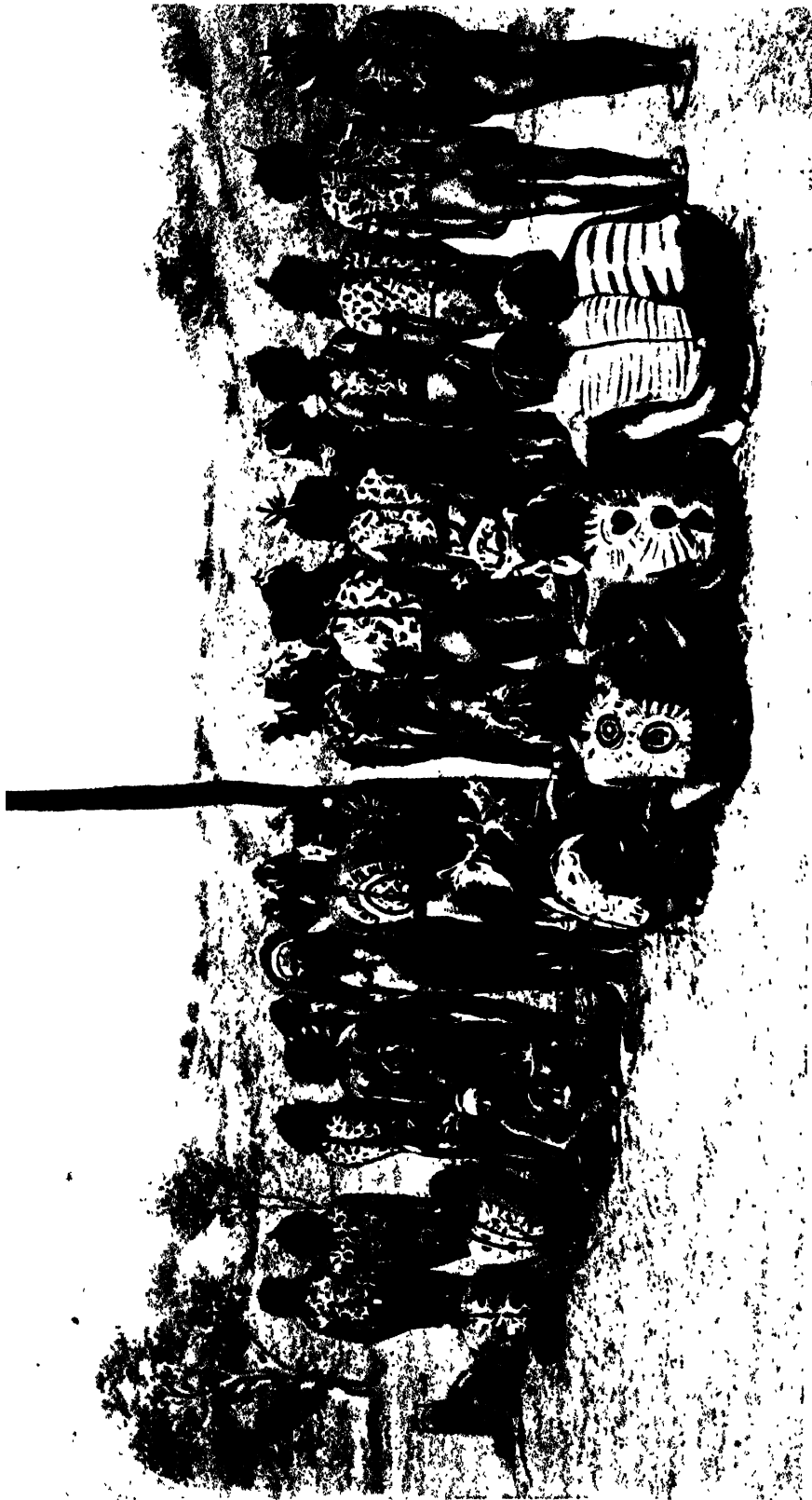


**THE MAGICIAN** of the Kaitish group hopes by means of his mysterious red and white decorations and his spells to make grass grow. The circles of birds' down on his back are intended to be pictures of cakes which are made by the aboriginals from grass seeds.



Macmillan

**THIS MEDICINE MAN** effects his cures by making magical crystals pass into the bodies of the sick. The long, black mark running down his chest represents Oruncha, the being from whom he claims to get his powers, and the smaller ones are the magical crystals. The mystic design on his forehead and the long bone in his nose also have magical powers.



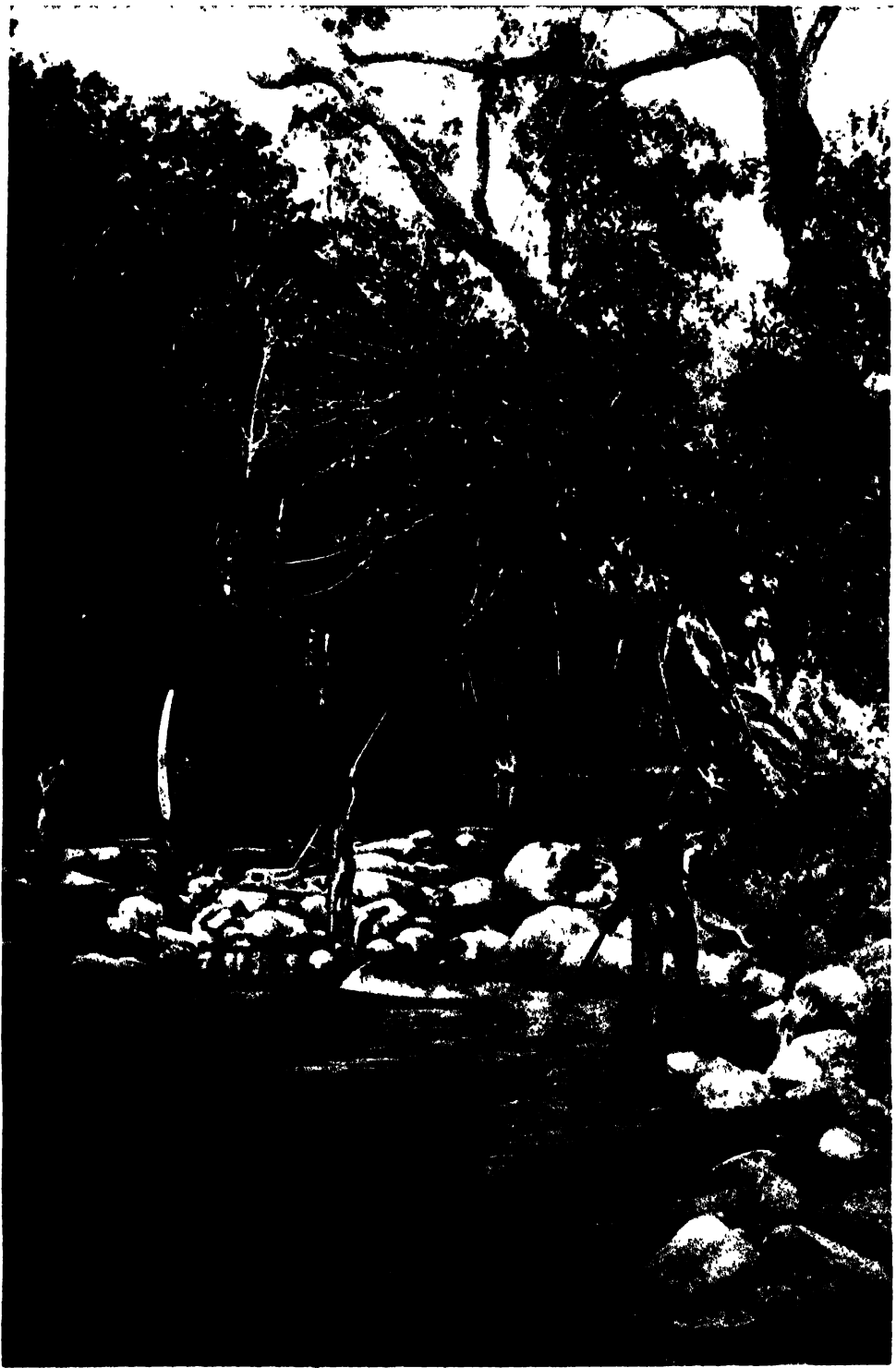
**PAINTED WITH SACRED SYMBOLS, AUSTRALIAN NATIVES GROUP THEMSELVES ROUND THEIR TOTEM POLE**  
 Each tribe is divided into groups which are, in turn, sub-divided into smaller sections or "totem" kins. These kins are known by the name of their "totem," which is usually some wild creature or a plant, just as Boy Scout patrols are known by the name of some animal. We have, for example, the kins of the kangaroo, the wild cherry, the emu, the snake and the frog. A certain amount of reverence is paid to the totem, and in return for this respect it is supposed to protect every member of the kin, and to give him good advice in dreams.



Macmillan

**ELDERS OF THE ARUNTA TRIBE OF CENTRAL AUSTRALIA PREPARE THEMSELVES FOR A FESTIVAL**  
Not all the festivals, or corroborees as they are usually called, of the very clever hunters. To pass the time the men will often decorate natives have a religious meaning. Since they grow no crops, live in themselves and will dance, chant and feast merely for amusement. Women and children are forbidden to come to the sacred totem the meanest of hovels and wear only pieces of skin or grasses, the men dances, but they are allowed to watch these ordinary "corroborees." of the savage Arunta have not learnt how to work, although they are





E. N. A.

#### **FISHING WITH SPEARS IN A RIVER OF NORTHERN QUEENSLAND**

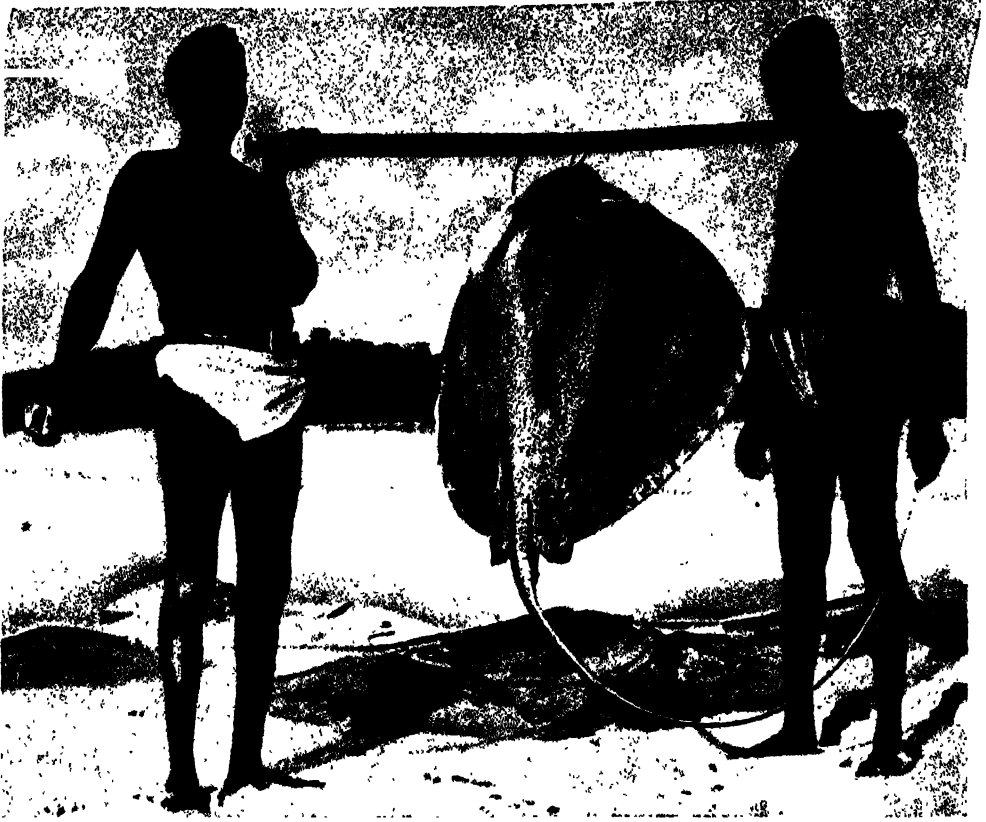
The tribesman is a very skilful fisher, and has his own methods of working. Sometimes he will stand on the bank, or in a canoe, with a long spear, and strike downwards at his prey with great accuracy and force. Sometimes, armed with a short spear, he swims under water, and kills with this weapon such fish as he meets in his progress.



Forbin

#### **NATIVE FLOWER GATHERERS IN A DENSE AUSTRALIAN JUNGLE**

Having plucked some fine orchids, three natives stand beneath the screwpines to admire their flowers. The tropical jungles of the north of Australia are so wild that the white men can only penetrate them with the greatest of difficulty, but the natives find their way about with ease when in search of flowers and food in the form of nuts and fruit.



#### GIANTS OF NORTH-WEST AUSTRALIA WITH A DANGEROUS FISH

These natives, who are more than seven feet high and very strong, are of a tribe that was recently discovered by a scientific expedition to the regions round the Cambridge Gulf. The huge fish that they have caught is a sting ray, which can inflict a very painful wound by a slash of the long, sharp spine at the end of its tail.

magic is believed to go direct into the unfortunate man's body, and only a "medicine-man" is strong enough to counteract its influence.

Other magic ceremonies relate to an occurrence such as rain-making, or to the finding of food. In the former case rain is usually represented by water which the sorcerer squirts from his mouth. When there is occasion to make food by magic, a dance may be held wherein the performers dress up in imitation of the creatures or plants—kangaroos, opossums, emus, lizards, snakes and bulbs, etc.—which they hope will multiply thereby for their benefit.

The dance, of course, is always a prominent feature of the ceremonies. It is part of the initiation ceremony when youths pass to the stage of manhood, and it figures in many religious—or, we should say, superstitious—rites.

A "corroboree," which is the name given to an assembly of aboriginals when they are performing such a ceremony, is a remarkable affair. It is usually held at night time, and also when there is plenty of moonlight. To add to the effect, fires are lighted in the centre of the dancers.

What is important to note is that no women or children are allowed near the scene. To warn them that the sacred mysteries are about to start, a bull-roarer is sounded, this peculiar instrument being made of an oblong piece of wood whirled rapidly round at the end of a long string. Many boys in our own country know how to make this toy.

For the purpose of the dance the performers are variously decorated with bunches of grass and feathers fastened in the hair and to wrists and ankles. They are fantastically painted with white clay and red ochre, and decorated with down

## AUSTRALIA'S MAGIC-MAKERS

and feathers, or leaves and flowers. One man may be marked in white lines to resemble a skeleton; another will have white snakes upon his chest and limbs.

The effect of such a host thus ornamented, as they dance wildly round their fires in a corroboree, may be well imagined. To the antics of the dancers must be added the wailing chant of the singers who accompany the performance.

At a corroboree the dance, it is said, is not, as a rule, a repetition of any one previously executed. An exception to this is the Molongo, which is common to many tribes throughout Australia. The name Molongo is taken from the chief character—an evil spirit—and the dance continues for about five days.

A corroboree is sometimes performed simply for amusement, and in such instances a dramatic element is provided. One such dance gives a realistic representation of a cattle raid. The cattle are, of course, personated by people. These are surprised by the attacking party, and some are "slain" with spears, and their carcasses are supposed to be cut up; then there appears on the scene a third party, intended for white stockmen, who—from the natives' point of view—are very properly put to flight.

A "hunting" corroboree, in which the various performers enact the chase after a kangaroo or emu, is very amusing to watch, and near the coast a canoe dance is often to be witnessed. The performers



### LIGHTING A FIRE BY RUBBING TOGETHER PIECES OF WOOD

To make a fire, the Australian savage takes a strip of soft, bean wood with a groove in it. One end of a stick of hardwood is placed in this groove, and is made to revolve quickly by being rubbed between the palms of the hand. Dry grass is laid in the groove, and after the fire-maker has rubbed for about a minute it bursts into flame.



E. N. A.

#### UNTIDY ABORIGINAL VILLAGE OF SHAPELESS, DEN-LIKE HOUSES NEAR THE COAST OF QUEENSLAND

Aboriginals living in their natural state are usually content with much less comfortable "wurlleys," or huts, than those seen in this village. At one time, most of the tribes wandered from place to place, and a light screen of branches, leaves and bark, which could be built with

very little trouble and deserted without any regrets, was considered a good enough home. To-day most of the natives live on territories set aside for their use by the government, or in mission stations, where they have civilized dwellings and the opportunity of doing work.



**GAILY DRESSED GIRLS ACT AT A CORROBOREE BEFORE MEN WHO ARE AT ONCE AUDIENCE AND CHORUS**  
Here we see an ordinary corroboree in progress. The girl dancers pretend to weep, while the men, in their gala-finery of paint and bird's down and armed with spear-throwers, sit watching. The men take part in the entertainment by singing or thumping on the ground, or visitors or may be performed to obtain presents from white men.



#### TRIUMPHANT FISHERS OF THE ISLANDS IN THE CAMBRIDGE GULF WITH THEIR CATCH OF SEA-COWS

The natives of the northern coasts of Australia catch the sea-cow, or dugong, mainly for its flesh, which is a very valuable food. When salted, it tastes like bacon, and is much enjoyed by white men. Oil is also obtained from the sea-cow, and makes a tonic much more pleasant to take than cod-liver oil. At one time sea-cows were speared in great numbers every year, but they have now become shy, and are usually caught in long, stout nets. Although the dugong lives in the sea it is not a fish, but a mammal, like the whale, the porpoise and seal.

## AUSTRALIA'S MAGIC-MAKERS

use sticks to represent paddles and move rhythmically from side to side to suggest the movement of a boat.

No account of the Australian aborigines would be complete without some mention being made of that strange native weapon and toy, the boomerang. Of this instrument there are many varieties. The "return" boomerang is actually a toy, and, if used for any practical purpose, is only employed in the killing of birds.

The ordinary war boomerang is thrown from under a shield while the assailant is stooping, and it can be projected as far as two hundred yards; others are mostly used in hunting, and it is remarkable with what dexterity they can be hurled. Apart from this ingeniously made contrivance, the native has shown no cleverness in devising other weapons; his spears, clubs and throwing sticks are of the crudest form, the heads being of stone, wood or bone.

As a people who are debased and below the average in intellect, the Australian aborigines are destined to die out before the advancing tide of civilization. A little over thirty years ago they totalled some forty thousand; to-day, through several causes, mostly through disease, they have dwindled to very small numbers. The finest specimens, physically, are undoubtedly those of the newly opened Northern Territory, where they rank as among the wildest of the race; but the Arunta tribe, living near the centre of the continent, are certainly better developed than many of their neighbours in the western and eastern states.



**NATIVE LADY IN HER SUNDAY CLOTHES**

Aboriginal women delight to dress in what they think the latest fashion, but in spite of their gaudy finery they usually go barefoot. Many have, hung round the neck, a metal plate on which is engraved the name of the wearer.

Each state of Australia has its Aborigines Protection Board, so that government care is exercised over the remnants of the tribes. Mission stations with native schools have been built. It cannot be many generations, however, before the aboriginal becomes extinct.





E.N.A.

### **HAVANA'S CATHEDRAL IN A NARROW STREET NEAR THE HARBOUR**

Built in 1656-1724 as a Jesuit church, Havana's chief religious building, the Merced, did not become a cathedral until 1762. Here the remains of Christopher Columbus are said to have rested. He died in Spain in 1506, his body being carried to Santo Domingo. In 1796 it is said to have been removed to Havana, and in 1898 taken back to Spain.

# Cuba and the Cubans

## LARGEST OF ATLANTIC ISLES AND ITS CAPITAL

From the island continent of Australia we turn to another island, Cuba, the largest of the West India group. It has been called "The Pearl of the Antilles," and certainly the Spaniards must have been pleased with the possession which Columbus discovered for them. Their great galleons sailed home to Spain deep laden with the treasure obtained by the slaves, and the fame of this rich island spread far and wide, bringing down swarms of pirates of every nationality, who even attacked the capital itself. Cuba is now an independent republic and derives most of its wealth from the vast fields of sugar-cane and tobacco plantations which cover so much of its territory.

**HEN** Christopher Columbus discovered Cuba in 1492, he described it as "the most beautiful land that eyes had ever beheld." Truly it is a most beautiful land, though since more than half the splendid forests that once clothed it have been cut down to make room for immense plantations of sugar and tobacco, it is not so lovely as it was at one time. Nor is the climate so good, for the loss of the trees has caused a loss of rainfall, and the rainy season, which lasts from May to September, is not as regular as formerly.

Cuba is by far the largest island in the West Indies. It is as long as England and Scotland together, but being narrow its area is only about the same as that of England. In all the world there is, perhaps, no other country which is richer both in soil and in minerals. Copper and iron are plentiful, there is coal in the west, and every tropical and semi-tropical plant known to man will grow.

The capital is Havana, which was founded in the year 1515. It was the last of the seven cities founded by Don Diego Velasquez, who was the first governor of the country. The first Havana was, however, not in the same place as the modern town. It was built on the south shore of the island, at the mouth of the Guines River.

### *Moving a Capital*

This was a very bad site, for not only is the harbour shallow and ill-protected, but the coast is low, hot and very unhealthy. The plague of mosquitoes was so bad that young children died from the bites, and after a very few years the settlement was moved across to the

north coast, to the mouth of the Almendares River which reaches the sea at the edge of the suburb of Vedado.

This place was healthier, but so exposed to the attacks of pirates, that in 1519 the people moved again to the present site on the west shore of the bay that was originally called Carenas, and is now known as Havana Harbour. The entrance to the bay being narrow, it was easily closed against marauders, and on the land side the new town was protected by a thick growth of "manigua," or impenetrable bush. Vedado, the name of Havana's finest suburb, means "Forbidden." It stands upon ground which was once covered with bush and where in the old days it was forbidden to make paths lest pirates, anchored off shore, should use them to approach the city.

### *Why the Streets are Narrow*

The streets of Havana are very narrow. An old law required that they should be so, the idea being that they would be cooler if so made. Originally they had no pavements. All people of any importance rode, and the rest—the natives and the slaves—had to take the risk of being run over.

The houses, some built of brick, some of stone, are all smoothly plastered outside, and the plaster is of all colours, from white or cream to green and even indigo-blue. It is the most curiously mixed town in the Western Hemisphere, for private dwelling-houses, factories, schools, convents and shops may all be found in the same street.

Since cyclones have damaged or destroyed many of the trees in and about the

## CUBA AND THE CUBANS



### SPONGES FOR SALE! WHO WILL BUY?

As we will find in later pages, we can buy almost anything from a pedlar or hawker in Havana. This man is carrying a great bouquet of sponges, products of northern Cuba's tropic seas.

city, the glare from the tropical sun is very trying, but in the newer, western suburbs there are broad streets and fine gardens. Havana has grown during the present century, and has now more than a quarter of a million people. Yellow fever used to ravage the place right up to the end of the nineteenth century, but this has now been stamped out, and the town, though it is certainly hot, is fairly healthy.

The street names tell much of the history of the city. For instance, Inquisidor is so called because the Commissary of the Inquisition once resided there; Amargura, Street of Bitterness, is where Catholics used to hold Good Friday processions to the San Francisco Convent. Lamp-arilla, Little Lamp Street, commemorates a lamp kept burning by a citizen in days before there was any system of public lighting.

Other streets are named after famous men. O'Reilly Street bears the name of General Alejandro O'Reilly, who entered the town by that road when Havana was given up by the English in 1763. The general was an Irish soldier in the Spanish Army, and became the governor of Havana. There is also Carlos III. Street, called after the monarch of that name, and Albear Square, named after the Spanish engineer who built the Vento Water Works, and supplied the city with pure water in place of the open ditch, the course of which is now occupied by Zanja or Ditch Street.

Of the many churches in Havana, the most interesting is the old cathedral, where the body of the great explorer Christopher Columbus lay for over one hundred years. In 1898, when the Spaniards evacuated Havana, they took

the remains with them, reinterring them within the cathedral at Seville.

When the Spaniards reached Cuba they found it populated by a race of gentle, red folk who fled at the sight of white men. These people lived chiefly on fish, and slept in hammocks. They were great runners, wonderful swimmers; they wore no clothes, yet had necklaces and girdles of gold and precious stones; they kept

## CUBA AND THE CUBANS

dogs and other domestic animals, and they grew tobacco and maize.

These poor, harmless folk were not in the least like the savage Caribs who inhabited some of the other West India islands, yet the Spaniards enslaved and destroyed them so that not a trace of them is left.

The native of Cuba as he is to-day shows no sign of the original Indian blood. He is a mixture of Spanish masters and negro slaves with, perhaps, a trace of Indian blood from the Indian slaves imported from Yucatan. Slavery existed in Cuba nearly up to the end of the last century, being finally abolished in 1886.

The Cubans do not in the least resemble negroes in appearance or in colour, nor is

there any of the prejudice against the negro which is so strongly marked in the United States. Miss Irene Wright, who wrote a book on Cuba, tells an interesting story which illustrates this. A pure blooded negro, a man of much wealth, entered a Havana restaurant in which only white people are served. The waiter, not knowing what to do, went to the proprietress. She came to the coloured man.

"My friend," she said, "the rules of my establishment do not permit me to serve you here. I have, however, the honour to invite you to dine with my family as my very welcome guest."

The native Cubans are most of them poor, the reason being that nearly all the



**IN AN ARCADED HAVANA STREET A FRUIT KIOSK TEMPTS THE EYE** Mangoes, bananas and pineapples are among the fruit most highly prized by the fruit-loving Cubans. Some bananas, used for cooking, are green, and so large that they are sold by the portion. Then there are grape fruit, oranges, tomatoes and coconuts, red and yellow mammees, sweet sops and sour sops, star apples and sapodillas.



R.N.A.

# AS WE STEAM INTO THE BAY OF HAVANA, CUBA'S BEAUTIFUL CAPITAL LIES ON OUR RIGHT HAND

Havana was founded by Spain in 1515, and it was sacked by pirates to take it. In 1762 they were successful, and kept it for a year. three times before it was fifty years old. Drake attacked it in 1585; Again, as recently as 1898, the city was blockaded, this time by the the Dutch, during the seventeenth century assailed it many times; United States. To the right we can see the low walls of La Punta, and in the century after that the English made more than one attempt one of the two fortresses that guard the narrow harbour entrance.



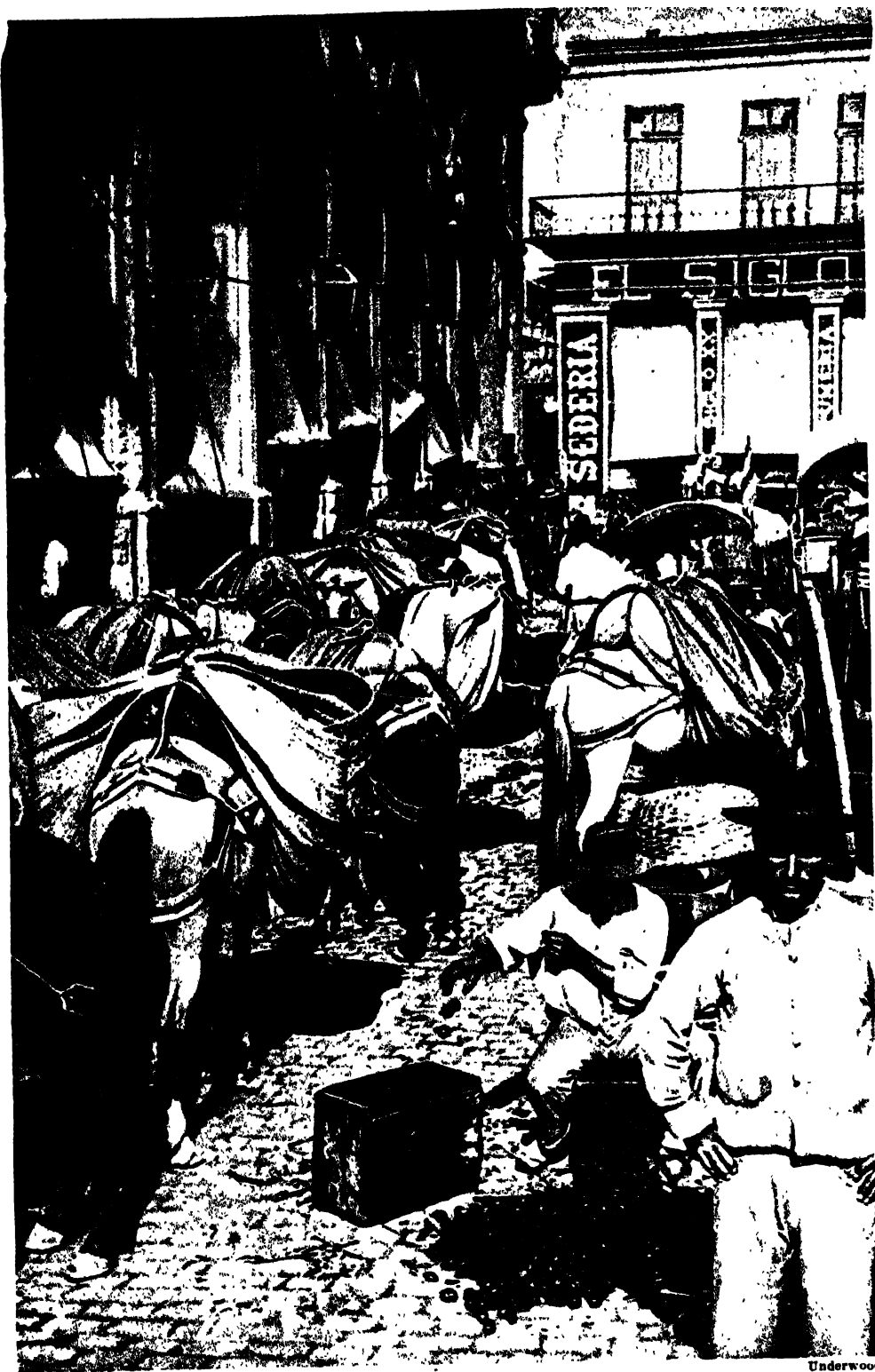
E. H. E.

THE BLAZING SUN OF A CUBAN SUMMER

other thoroughfares of old Havana it is so narrow that traffic can only go one way. Thus if we wanted to drive from one shop to another a few doors away, we might have to start off in the opposite direction and travel through many streets before we get there.

O'REILLY STREET, HAVANA, SHADED BY HANGING AWNINGS

Like most ancient cities all the world over, Havana is divided into an old town and a new. The old part, which was once surrounded by strong walls, lies near the harbour. Here we see the chief shopping street. How it got its Irish name is explained in page 628. Like



Underwood

**HORSES OF THE STREET TRADERS WAIT FOR PANNIERS TO BE FILLED**  
Much of the country produce that is carried to Havana's markets is bought by hawkers, who load the goods—live chickens, fruit, sticks of sugar cane, etc.—into the panniers on their horses' backs. The hot climate makes the people of Havana lazy, and so they often buy from traders at their doors to save themselves a journey to the market.



#### HOW TURKEYS ARE MARKETED IN FAR AWAY HAVANA

In Cuba we can be quite sure that we get a fresh turkey or chicken for our dinner, because the live birds are carried about the streets hung by their legs from a mule's saddle. The poulterer calls at the houses and kills a bird only when it is sold. This is because food does not long keep good in such hot weather.

great industries of sugar-cane and tobacco growing are in the hands of foreigners who settled here. The majority of the foreigners are Spaniards, who are very keen business men, and own most of the shops.

There are only about seven thousand Americans, yet these own one third of the gigantic sugar business. The sugar crop exceeds three and a half million tons yearly, and during the Great War brought

enormous wealth into the country. To-day, with the increase of sugar-beet growing in Europe, the export of cane sugar from Cuba is decreasing.

Cuban tobacco is, however, the best in the world. The finest of the cigar tobacco comes from Pinar del Rio, in western Cuba. Formerly this land was a cattle range, but about 1716 it began to be seen that here grew the best of Cuba's tobacco. In 1774 Spain introduced





Cutler

**MILKMAN ON HIS MORNING ROUND IN A STREET OF A CUBAN TOWN**  
The Cuban milkman goes on horseback, carrying his little cans in hanging panniers. He must needs go slowly, or the jolting will turn his milk to butter. Many Cuban houses have only one storey, especially in the poorer districts, and also have no windows, getting their light through the door. The outside walls are coloured in many bright hues.



Cutler

**A CARTLOAD OF LIVE CHICKENS ARRIVES AT TACON MARKET**

Of Havana's many market places, that of Tacón is perhaps the most important, and hither the country people bring their poultry, fruit and vegetables. In many photographs of Havana, especially that in page 628, we see something very characteristic—the way in which the buildings form shady arcades over the pavement.



ONE OF CUBA'S BEAUTY SPOTS: THE SUNNY GREEN VALLEY OF THE LITTLE RIVER YUMURI

The rivers of Cuba are very small and of no use for navigation, and the Yumuri, in Matanzas province, is not one of the few exceptions to this rule. Nevertheless it is an often visited river, because its peaceful, fertile valley is so beautiful. Some parts of the island are mountainous, others are covered by dense forests, but here the gently rolling hills are grass-covered, and the graceful royal palm is the chief tree. This palm is generally between 50 and 75 feet high. Every part, from roots to feathery fronds, is used by the Cubans.

**CHIMNEYLESS AND WINDOWLESS, A PALM-THATCHED CUBAN HOMESTEAD SHELTERED BY A HUGE CEIBA TREE**  
The ceiba tree or bomba is the giant of the Cuban countryside, being those of the horse-chestnut, and great bell-shaped flowers. The generally 100 and sometimes even 150 feet in height. It is a very ceiba is also called the silk-cotton tree, because its seeds are covered beautiful tree, too, though in a way quite different from the stately with a mass of fibre rather like cotton, which is used for stuffing royal palm. It has wide-spreading branches, leaves something like pillows. In the bark strong fibres are found of which ropes are made.



Clay & Burke Co.

**HOW THE HAVANA FACTORY HAND IS AMUSED WHILE HE WORKS**  
 Rolling cigars and cigarettes all day is rather monotonous. So the Cuban factory hands arrange for a man to read to them, each contributing about 5d. a week towards his pay. This man is reading from a newspaper; but very often he reads one of the national classics, poetry as often as prose. Music is sometimes played to amuse them.

settled government into this part of the country, and since then tobacco has been the principal crop of western Cuba.

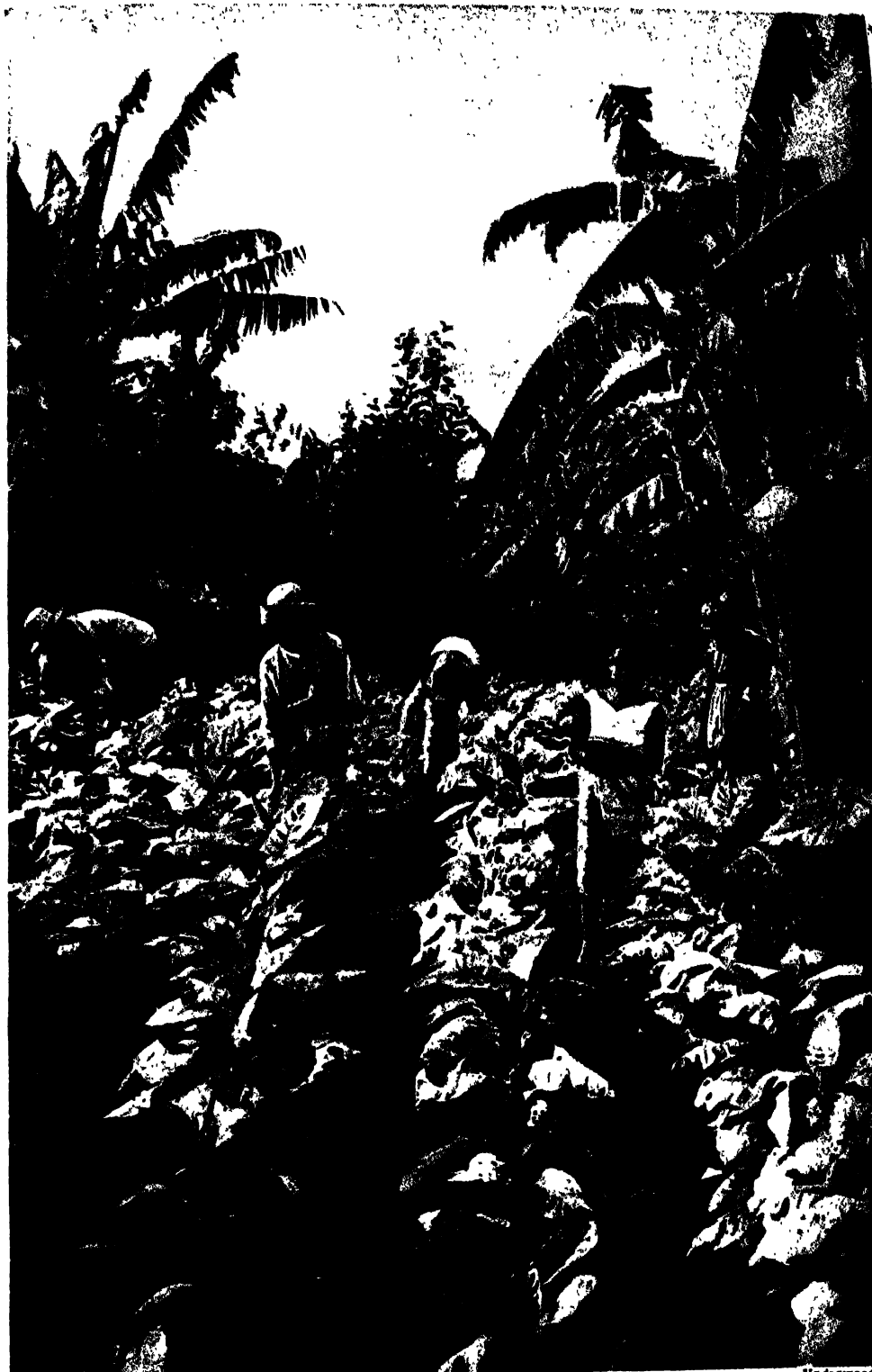
Great skill is needed to grow really fine cigar tobacco. It is necessary to know exactly where to make the seed bed, when to irrigate and when to cut the crop. In the cutting, one day too soon or too late will make a difference. The native planters still use the old-fashioned, wooden-bladed ploughs, and it is certain that some American growers have spoiled their crops by ploughing too deep with steel ploughs, and so mixing the lower layer of clay with the surface soil. It is, however, the American growers who have devised the new way of growing tobacco under a roof of cheese-cloth, the leaf so grown being even better than the best produced by older methods. Coffee and cocoa are grown in considerable quantities and a large amount of maize is produced.

Cuba produces good oranges and is becoming famous for her grape fruit. At one time large quantities of bananas were

exported, but the banana land was found to be so well suited for sugar-cane that hundreds of acres of bananas have been rooted up to make room for cane. Coconuts grow well and such fruits as guavas, avocados, Kelsey plums, peaches and mangoes can be produced cheaply and easily. Vegetables flourish, yet are curiously neglected.

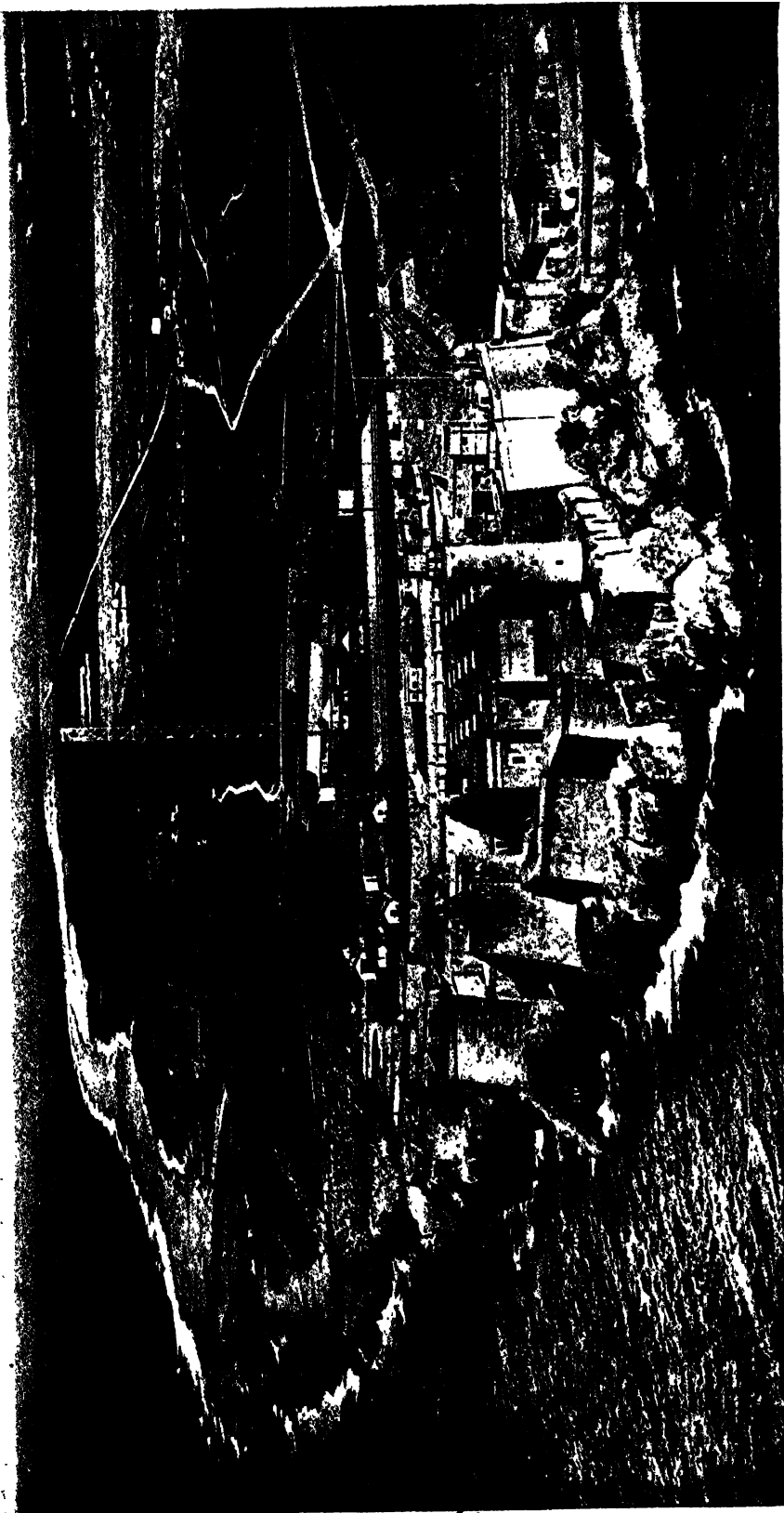
Pineapples form an important crop and are cheap and good. The chief centre of pineapple-growing is the Isle of Pines, a large island of nearly a million acres lying some fifty miles due south of Cuba's narrowest part.

The Isle of Pines is flat in its northern part, but in the south rises to fifteen hundred feet, and the scenery is exquisitely beautiful. There are few wild animals, no poisonous snakes, and the spiders and scorpions are not dangerous. The chief plague of the island is the small sand-fly, the jejen (pronounced hay-hen), the bite of which is like the burn of a hot coal. Besides pineapples, sugar-cane,



Underwood

**PLANTATION OF YOUNG TOBACCO PLANTS SHADED BY BANANA TREES**  
Of all Cuba's products tobacco comes second in importance, sugar being the first. Tobacco is grown chiefly in the western part of the island, especially in Pinar del Rio, the most westerly province of all, whence comes some of the world's best tobacco. Nobody can say quite why it is the tobacco from this district is better than that from the others.



Aerodrome

**ONCE GUNS FLASHED FROM OLD EL MORRO—TO-DAY THE LIGHTHOUSE THROWS A WELCOMING BEAM**  
Havana's great harbour, one of the finest in the whole world, is entered to El Morro, or the Cliff, and La Punta, or the Point. El Morro is by a channel only a thousand feet across. At each side of this channel much bigger and more formidable than La Punta; it seems to grow stands a fortress—Los Tres Reyes del Morro on the east and San out of the solid rock. Its lighthouse was added to it in 1844, and Salvador de la Punta on the west. These names are usually shortened recently a wireless station was erected on the open space behind it.

## CUBA AND THE CUBANS

coffee and very fine tobacco are grown. The Isle of Pines is far healthier than Cuba itself; its climate is cooler and it has never been scourged by yellow fever.

So long ago as 1800 it was known as a health resort. The island has a great number of mineral springs, some hot, some cold, the waters of which are useful in treating different diseases. Since the Treaty of Paris was signed between the United States and Spain, a great many Americans have settled in the Isle of Pines, good roads have been made, and the whole place is very prosperous. The island is named not after its pineapples, but after its pine trees, which grow in great forests and fill the air with their resinous fragrance.

Cuba was first settled by the Spaniards in 1511 and for a long time was in constant danger from pirates, French, English and Dutch. In 1762, the English, under Lord Albemarle, took Havana, which was, however, restored to Spain in the following year.

### *A War Without Battles*

In 1818 the Cuban ports were opened to the world's trade, and the island began to prosper. But taxes were very heavy, and the people became more and more discontented. Serious trouble did not, however, begin until 1886, when the Spanish Government abolished slavery without giving any compensation, and after that matters grew worse until in 1895 a serious insurrection broke out.

Although Spain sent 200,000 men to restore order, they could do little, and soon the whole country inland was in the hands of the rebels, who wandered about in ragged bands, avoiding, so far as possible, pitched battles with the Spanish regulars, who, for their part, were equally unwilling to fight. The object of each party was to starve out the other, and in order to do so everything of value was destroyed. After three years the whole countryside was left bare and black, littered with ruined farms and burned-out plantations, and the state of Cuba was terrible.

Then came the blowing up of the *Maine*. The *Maine*, a battleship belonging to the United States of America, was lying in Havana Harbour when a terrific explosion destroyed and sank her, killing nearly all her crew. At the time it was fully believed that the ship had been blown up by the Spaniards in Havana, and the American people, who had all along sympathised with the rebels, were so angry that the result was war between the United States and Spain.

### *Experiment in Self-Government*

This war, beginning in April, was ended in the following August by the complete destruction of the Spanish fleet. The Spanish troops were carried home to Spain by the Americans themselves, and Cuba was finally lost to Spain.

From 1899 to 1902 the United States governed Cuba, the administration being military and very successful. Under General Leonard Wood all kinds of improvements were brought about. Roads were built, schools started, Havana was properly drained, and for the first time in her history the island was completely cleared of its age-long scourge of yellow fever.

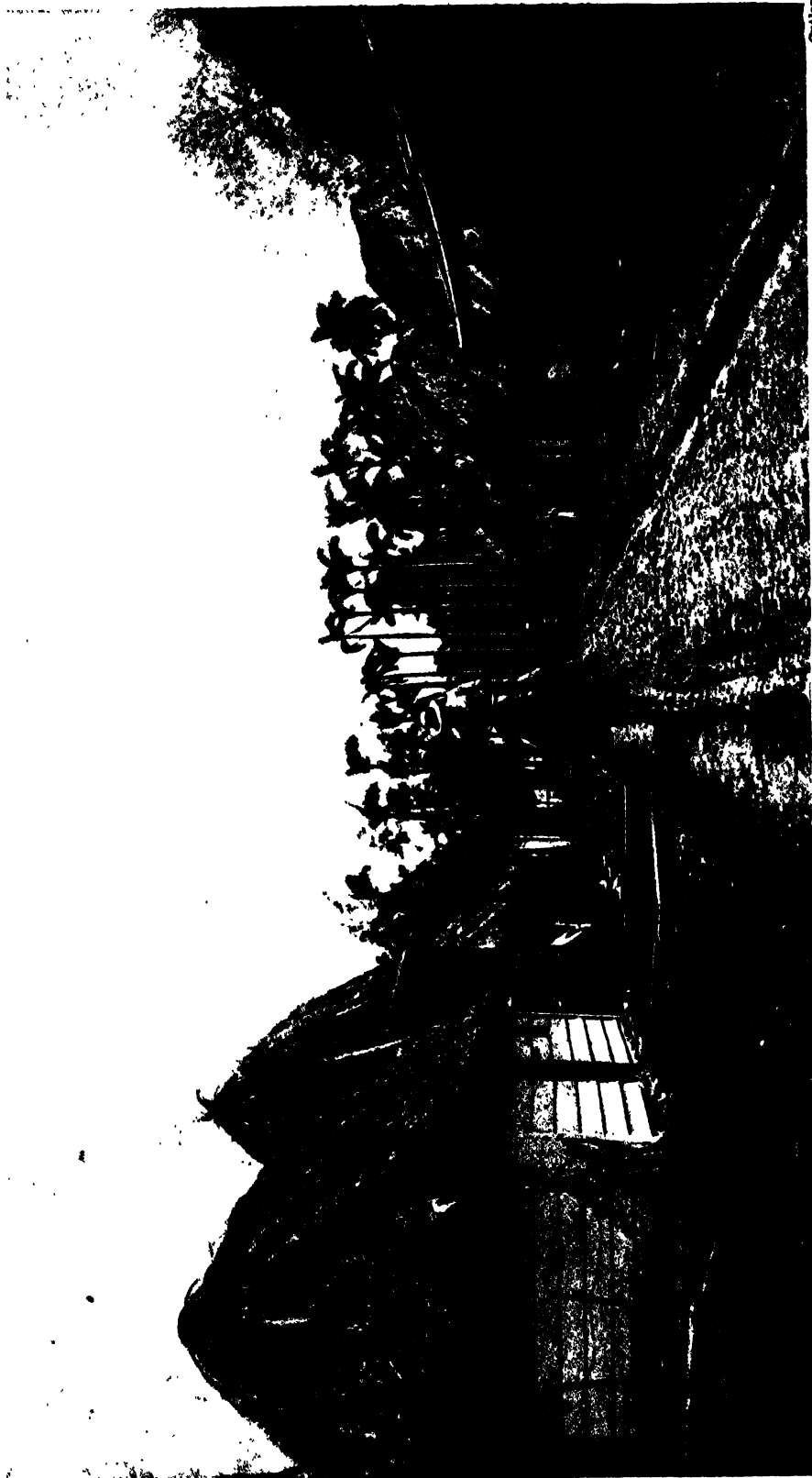
In May, 1902, the Americans handed the island over to a republican government under President Tomás Estrada Palma. The American flag was lowered from Morro Castle, which commands Havana Harbour, and the single-starred banner of the Cuban Republic rose in its stead. Unhappily the Cubans have never had any training in self-government, and the result of their attempts to govern themselves has not been successful.

### *America Sends a Peacemaker*

In 1906 a fresh rebellion broke out under "Pino" Guerra, who raised his flag of revolt in Pinar, the capital of the tobacco growing district. President Palma was overthrown, and America was again forced to intervene.

Not much blood was spilt, but a great deal of damage was done to the railways.





Other

# IN THE ONLY STREET OF A NATIVE VILLAGE AMONG THE PALM TREES OF WESTERN CUBA

Cottage architecture is very simple in Cuba. There are no chimneys because fires are never needed for heat, and when wanted for cooking can be built outside. There are next to no windows, light and air coming through the open door. There are no gardens and the path to the front door is merely a plank across the shallow ditch that serves as a drain. These houses are made completely of wood. In Havana, however, wood, because it harbours insects, must be used as little as possible; floors, even of upper storeys, are made of tiles.



#### **A VERY NOVEL WAY OF DELIVERING THE MORNING'S MILK**

Underwood

Although in a big city like Havana milk is delivered in carts and motor vans, much as it is in English towns, in some of the smaller places it is delivered in this curious way. The milkman drives around his herd of cows and milks them at the door.

The people can thus be quite sure that their milk is pure and fresh.

Culverts were blown up, and trains driven one against another at full speed. Mr. Taft, afterwards President Taft, was sent by the United States as peacemaker, and the rebellion was ended.

From a naturalist's point of view, Cuba's chief interest is in its birds, of which there are more than two hundred different kinds, about half living there all the year round and the rest being visitors. They include a relation of our English thrush, the

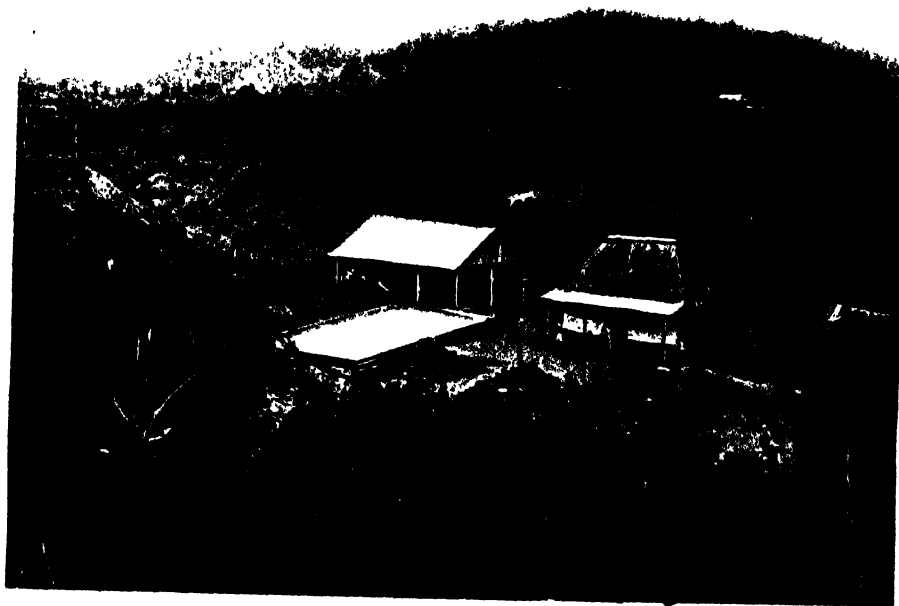
charming mocking-bird so common in the southern states of America, also humming birds, cuckoos, woodpeckers, owls, parrots, red and green, and brilliant little trogons and tanagers. A kind of partridge is common, and in the swamps the beautiful flamingo breeds. The buzzard, a kind of large hawk, is seen everywhere and is protected by law.

For its size, Cuba has very few wild animals. When the Spaniards first arrived



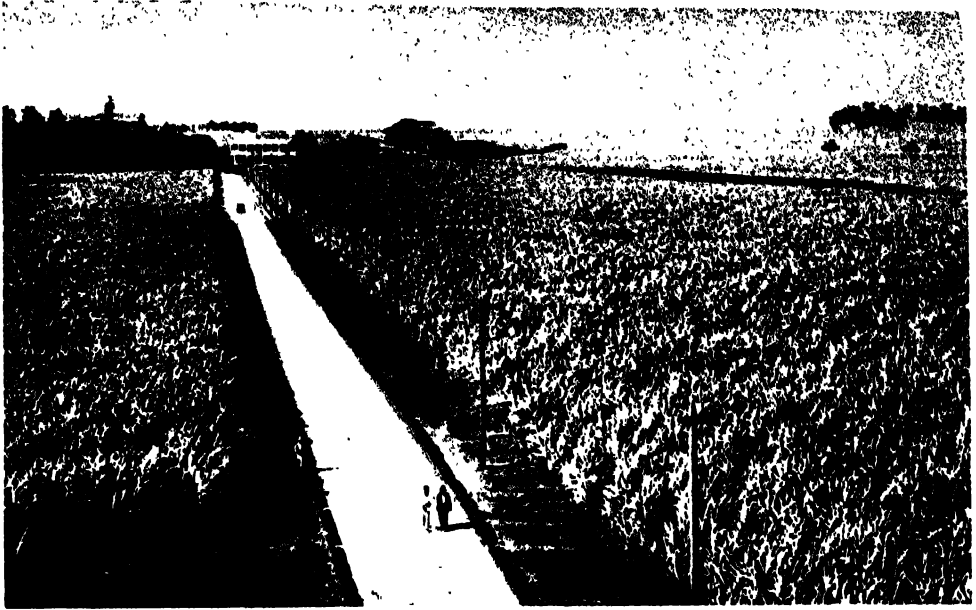
#### **HORSES WAIT FOR THEIR MASTERS OUTSIDE A VILLAGE SHOP**

In the country districts of Cuba shop windows are quite unknown ; the shop, however, has several doors round which the goods are displayed. The usual Cuban horse, which is descended from those brought over by the Spaniards centuries ago, is small and strong, and is a very good riding or pack animal.



#### **AMONG THE HEAVILY WOODED MOUNTAINS OF EASTERN CUBA**

In the province of Oriente, formerly Santiago, coffee growing is still important, although it has declined considerably since the middle of the nineteenth century. It was then the most flourishing industry in the island. The square enclosure in this photograph is the drying ground, where the coffee berries are spread out.



#### **SUGAR CANE IS GROWN AS FAR AS EYE CAN SEE**

Sugar is grown chiefly in the central part of the island, where it covers nearly one and a half million acres. Cuba is easily the largest producer of sugar in the world ; even India, which has about 2,700,000 acres devoted to it, does not yield so much. More about Cuban sugar will be found in the chapter Lands of the Sugar Cane, pages 277-288.



**HOW THE BURNING SUN IS KEPT FROM THE TOBACCO PLANTS**  
Tobacco growers have found that the plants produce finer leaves if they are grown in the shade, so they spread great lengths of thin muslin over the fields. Not only does this shelter the plants from the sun, but it helps to keep them at much the same temperature day and night, and also protects them from damage by heavy rains or winds.



Cutler

#### PORTABLE DRAPER'S SHOP IN A SUNNY STREET OF HAVANA

The coloured women of Cuba love cheap finery, and it is among them that this pedlar finds his customers. He carries on his back a box filled with ribbons and gaudy trimmings, and piled high above it are lengths of factory-made lace and brightly coloured cottons. The box on the ground beside him holds pins and needles, cotton, buttons and tapes.



Underwood

**QUEER LITTLE HUT THAT HOUSES A MANY-HUED CUBAN FAMILY**  
Although about a third of Cuba's population is descended from negro slaves, there are very few completely black people. They have so intermixed with the Europeans that the children of one family may be of all shades between black and white. The climate is so warm that even in the towns some little coloured boys run about quite naked.

## CUBA AND THE CUBANS

the largest creature was an easily tamed creature, which in looks somewhat resembled a dog. This is now extinct, and the small ant-eater, once so common, is fast disappearing. There is a tailless rat peculiar to the island, and nowadays the brown rat, imported from Europe, is fairly numerous. There are plenty of snakes, but few, if any, are poisonous. The largest is the python, called *maja* by the Cubans. It is a large, handsome snake, but very cowardly. Alligators are common in the swamps, but not so dangerous as their relatives in Central America. Turtles are found on the beaches, where they lay their eggs in holes scooped in the sand.

Forests, which still cover half the island, are made up of mahogany, cedar, ebony, sandalwood, and logwood. There are also the *lignum vitae*, the *ceiba*, and

splendid palms. The orange tree is found wild in the thickets.

Although the coast is flat and hot, the centre of the island is high and healthy. A range of hills runs the whole length of the island, and in the south-east rises to real mountains called the Sierra de Maestra and the Sierra de Cobre, where much of the copper is mined.

The hills at the western end of the island are called the Sierra Organo. They are of hard blue limestone and contain many caves where, in the early days, the Indians took refuge from their Spanish conquerors.

As a country, Cuba is still young, and those who know her best feel certain that she has a wonderful future before her. With her splendid climate, soil and scenery, she needs only a strong government to become the richest island in the whole of the Western Hemisphere.



GROUP OF HAPPY CHILDREN IN A SUNNY CUBAN STREET

The Cuban "negro," who is very often nearly white, has just the same political rights as the white man; even socially very little difference is made. The children go to the same schools and when they grow up do the same work. In this Cuba is different from other American places that have many subjects descended from African slaves.

# Folk of a Water-Logged Country

## THE NETHERLANDS AND ITS FIGHT WITH THE SEA

Rightly called the Netherlands, a name which means "low country," this country has been the scene, throughout its history, of a never-ceasing struggle with the North Sea. More than a third of the land is below sea-level, and only by building and constantly repairing great barriers against the ocean can its people keep the waters out. In this chapter we shall read of these grim struggles and how they have made the Dutch a hardy and sturdy folk with a great love of cleanliness and order.

"**G**OD made the sea; we made the shore," runs an old Dutch proverb, and it is at least more applicable to the Netherlands than to any other country in the world. For it is certain that were it not for the dykes on the seaboard and along the banks of rivers there would be very little of the country left to-day. The sea would have found an easy prey in a land that lies actually below its level; and the rivers, whose beds are continually being raised by the deposits of mud, would quickly complete the ruin made by the sea if there were not the wonderful system of canals to carry off the surplus water.

Dykes and canals, windmills and "polders," which are areas surrounded by dykes and in which the water is kept at a certain level by pumping—on these four man-made devices largely depend the safety and prosperity of the country. There are hundreds of miles of dykes and canals, and thousands of acres of polders and myriads of windmills.

### *Ancient Guardians of the Land*

We cannot set foot in the Netherlands without at once becoming aware of the dykes. Approaching the island of Walcheren by sea, on the way from England to Flushing, we see one of the finest of these embankments, Westkapelle, stretching along the west coast of the island. This dyke rises nearly 25 feet above the sea-level and is about three miles in length—shorter than the famous Helder dyke near Alkmaar, but its rival in strength and massiveness and also much older, for it dates back to the ninth century.

There are dozens of similar, though smaller, dykes. They are all made of

mud and sand, strengthened by wooden pillars driven many feet into the soil and "reinforced" in a variety of ways. In some cases huge blocks of granite are embedded between the lines of supports.

### *Other Uses of the Dykes*

On many dykes trees have been planted at the summit or on the sloping sides, and their roots, gradually spreading and intertwining with each other, have formed a wooden network that helps to keep the soil together. Often the surface is protected by twigs of willow interwoven and filled in with layers of clay so as to form a complete and solid carpet; or else the seed of wild grasses has been sown, or ordinary turf laid with the same object. Dutchmen may have made the dykes, but there is nothing more remarkable than the ingenuity with which they have used the growths of Nature to make them firm.

Though the main duty of the dykes is to defend the land against invasion or violent assault by sea and river, they serve other useful purposes. Highways are sometimes laid along them, and houses are built upon them. They provide good foundations for the houses, and that is an important consideration in a country where, owing to the marshy soil, it is difficult to dig deep enough to make sure of a solid foundation.

The Dutch canals are broader than those of most countries, though they vary a good deal in this respect. While they act as drains for removing water and are used as enclosures for property, much as fences and walls and hedges are employed in Great Britain, their main use is as highways for traffic. There are canals running through practically every town and village in the north and west of the country,



## FOLK OF A WATER-LOGGED COUNTRY

and they rarely look like big ditches, as do many of the canals in Great Britain. Their banks are usually lined with shady and pleasant trees. Their only drawbacks are the mosquitoes that they attract in hot weather, and their tendency to smell rather unpleasantly.

The third notable feature of Holland is the polders. The term is derived from "poel," a word meaning pool, and signifies either a morass or an actual lake which has been reclaimed by draining. The making of polders was naturally begun after the dykes had been constructed; the Hollander



McLeish

**BUILDING A HOUSE IN AMSTERDAM: ONE OF THE FIRST STAGES** Erasmus, a sixteenth century Dutch scholar, once called Amsterdam "a city whose inhabitants live on the tops of trees," and that strange saying is partly true. For Amsterdam stands on marshy ground, and to give the buildings firm foundations, wooden piles are driven into the ground; it may be only 14 or as many as 60 feet.



McLish

### QUAINT OLD DRAWBRIDGE INTO AMSTERDAM'S JEWISH QUARTER

In the Middle Ages Jews from all over Europe flocked to tolerant Amsterdam to escape religious persecution. They have ten synagogues in the city and are very wealthy, most of the diamond trade being in Jewish hands. In the house on the extreme right of this photograph, in Joden-Bree-Straat, lived Rembrandt, the famous painter.

having made his territory safe against the sea, proceeded to convert the waterlogged parts into cultivable land. It was necessary to pump out the water by mechanical means, and, having done so, to transfer it to the nearest main canal that could carry it to the coast. From the

thirteenth century onwards windmills supplied the power for pumping.

The windmill has always been a distinctive feature of the Dutch landscape, and to-day thousands of them are still performing useful duties in the agricultural industries. They saw wood, help to make



Royal Dutch Air Service

# LOOKING DOWN FROM AN AEROPLANE ON THE HARBOUR OF AMSTERDAM, A VENICE OF THE NORTH

Amsterdam is the commercial capital and largest city of the Netherlands, crossed and recrossed by so many canals that it is cut up into ninety though The Hague is the seat of government. It is built in a semi-islands joined together by over 300 bridges. The great sheet of water in this photograph is the East Dock; in the foreground is the Oude circle, with the River Y or Ij—as its straight side. Another river, the Amstel, runs through the city, which is also Schans Canal, and right in the background we can see the River Y.



Royal Dutch Air Service

**THE HAGUE: AN AIR VIEW OF THE CITY WHERE THE QUEEN OF HOLLAND LIVES AND HAS HER GOVERNMENT**  
The handsome, spacious city of The Hague was once the hunting resort of the Counts of Holland, and is therefore still called in Dutch "S Graven Hage, which means "The Count's Enclosure." Though it became a large place and the political capital at the end of the sixteenth century, it was not given the privileges of a town until 1806, and so for a long time it was called "the largest village in Europe." Across the ornamental water in the foreground of this photograph is the Binnenhof, the building in which the Dutch parliament meets.



McLeish

# **APPLES AND SMILES IN THE VILLAGE OF STAPHORST, OVERIJSEL**

The metal band across the caps of these little Dutch girls is very curious. It is a modified form of the "ooryzel," or close-fitting gold helmet, still worn farther north. If we look carefully at the bouquets of the women in pages 670-1, we shall see two little gold spirals on each—ornaments that used once to be worn with the helmet.



McLeish

**MAKING A NET TO CATCH THE FISH THAT LIVE IN THE ZUIDER ZEE**  
Here we see father making a fishing-net, watched by grandfather and, though it seems absurd, we cannot be quite certain whether it is son or daughter. For in the little island of Marken the boys and girls dress exactly alike until they are five, when the boy is put into baggy breeches. But even then he does not cut his hair, not till he is seven.

## FOLK OF A WATER-LOGGED COUNTRY

paper and chop tobacco. Also they brighten the duller landscape, as they are more gaily painted than the British windmills. But they are no longer used for grinding corn or for the making of polders.

### *Cheating the Sea of Its Prey*

In this drainage work, the first thing that the old-time Dutch engineer had to consider, before beginning to get the water out, was the problem of preventing new water from coming in and so spoiling his labours or making them more difficult. So he built a dyke around the selected polder as a first step.

The present way of making low-level polders, like the well known Schermer polder in North Holland, is to construct not one dyke round the enclosure, but a series, each on a different level, one within the other. On the outer side of each dyke is a canal dividing it from the next. These canals form an ascending series of levels, into the lowest of which is pumped the water from the polder, whence it is gradually transferred to the highest level of all. This last canal conducts it into a main channel, which carries it away. Although the canals are separate, there is communication between them by means of which water can, when necessary, be discharged to a lower canal for irrigation or other purposes.

Steam and electricity have long since taken the place of the windmill in supplying power for pumping. At its best the windmill was a slow and somewhat uncertain machine.

### *When the North Sea Broke Through*

By the polder system the Dutch have reclaimed thousands of acres of land that would otherwise have been not merely useless but unhealthy, and have added enormously to the country's powers of production and, incidentally, to the space near the towns available for houses. Indeed, some polders have been so completely built upon that the stranger would not guess that there had been a polder there at all. Reclamation still goes on; it is said that the people will never be

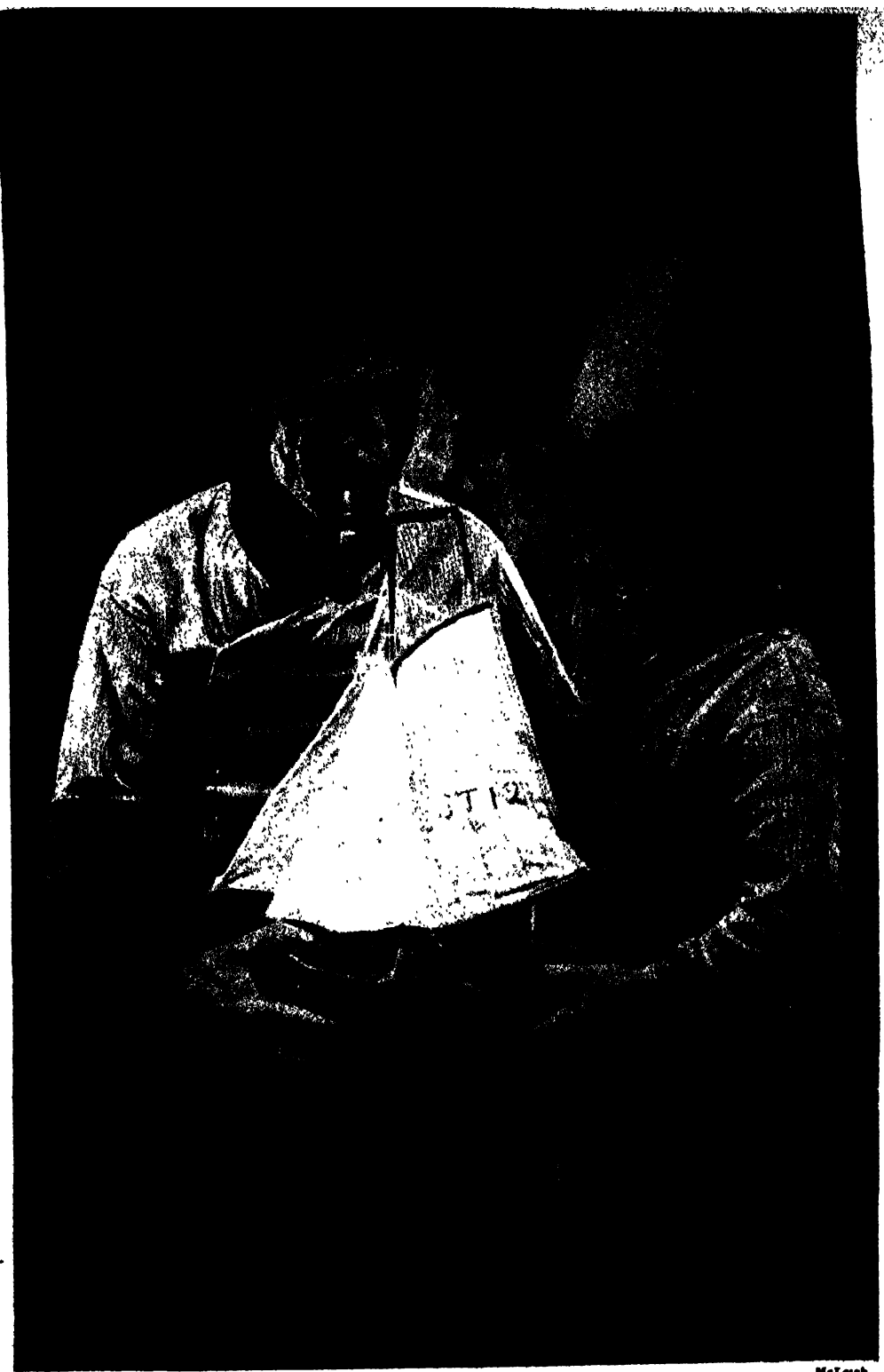
contented until they have won back the biggest of all their polders, the Zuider Zee. Two of our illustrations show men at work on a dyke which forms part of the scheme by which it is hoped to reclaim a large portion of this shallow sea.

Until the thirteenth century what is now the Zuider Zee was more or less dry land joining up North Holland on the west with Friesland in the east, and extending northward from Amsterdam to the fringe of islands north of those provinces. In a series of mighty storms the North Sea broke through the outer barrier, bringing destruction and death to countless homesteads and transforming a flourishing countryside into a salt water lake.

### *Cities Built Entirely on Piles*

Over the greater part of the Netherlands the soil is peat, and this fact adds enormously to the difficulties of house building. Amsterdam itself, the most important of the cities, stands on the site of a treacherous morass, and is entirely built upon piles. The illustration in page 650 shows pile-driving in progress for the building of a house in this city; that in page 662 shows the way in which the houses of the inhabitants of the isle of Marken are built on piles in order to place them out of the reach of floods. Pile-driving is as rapid a process in the Netherlands as it is slow elsewhere, the giant hammers sending the piles into the soft ground several feet at every stroke instead of the few inches to which we are accustomed here.

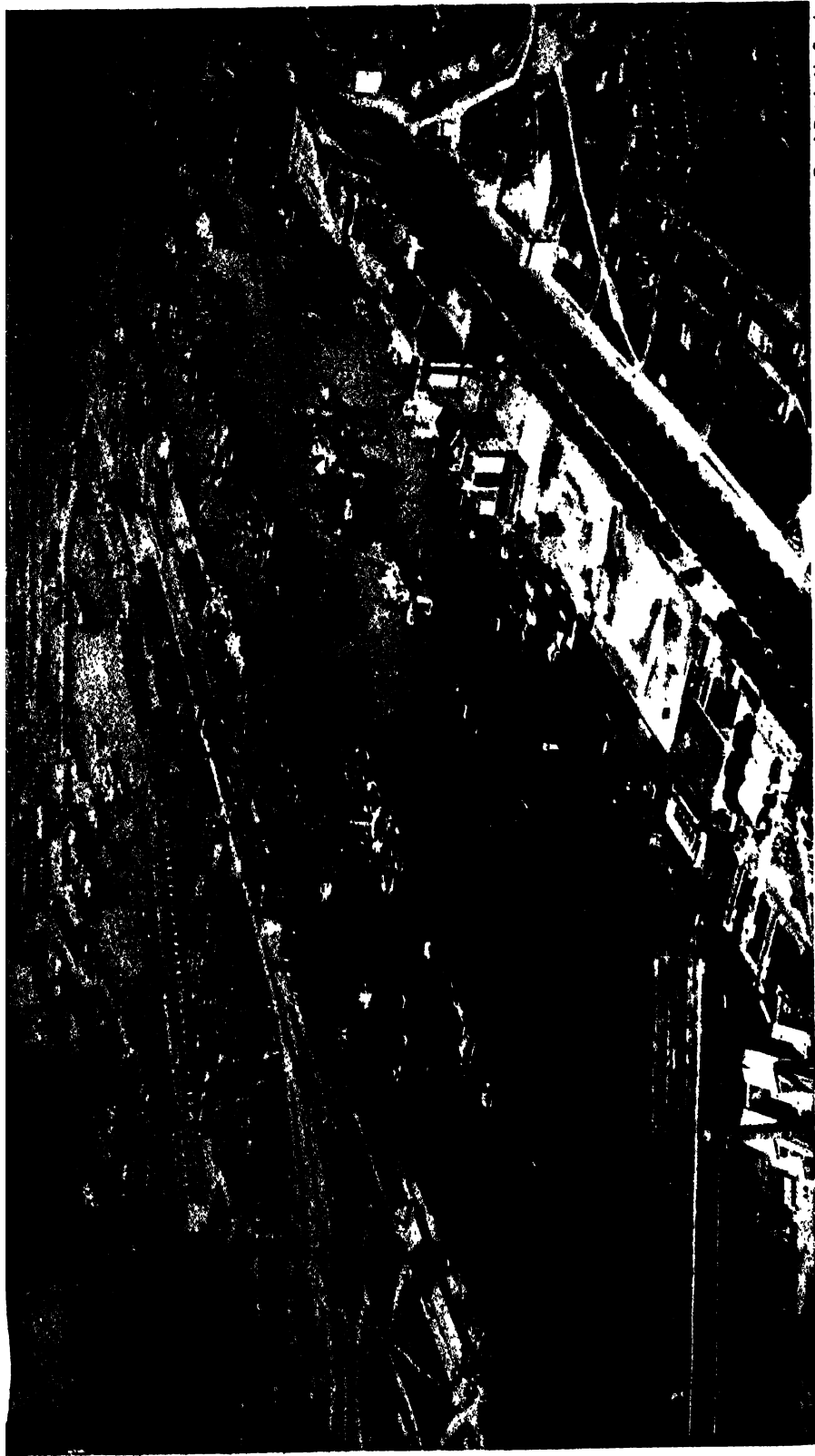
Amsterdam also illustrates the manner in which the canal system is constantly changing. In recent years some of its waterways have silted up and even dried up. Dredgers are always at work and the engineers always on duty to meet this or that difficulty as it arises. Indeed, we might almost say that the construction and repairing of dykes and canals and the making of polders are the staple industries of the Netherlands. In no other country is the engineering profession more important, and the high reputation of the Dutch engineers is known all over the world.



McLush

**THE TOY BOAT** that this boy so proudly shows to his grandfather is a small model of his father's fishing smack which he himself hopes one day to sail over the Zuider Zee. A lambskin cap, like that worn by the old man, a short, double-breasted coat, baggy, well-patched trousers and wooden shoes make up the usual costume of the Dutch fisherman.





Royal Dutch Air Service

**LOOKING DOWN ON THE THRONGED HARBOUR OF ROTTERDAM, THE BUSIEST SEAPORT OF THE NETHERLANDS** Rotterdam is now the second largest town in the Netherlands, but island of Noorderland. We can just see an end of it in the top only within the last hundred years has it become very important. It left-hand corner of this photograph. The large sheet of water we see stands on the River Maas, the old town being on the right bank and is the Maashaven, which covers 140 acres and is used by great ocean liners. Behind it is the Rynhaven, which is just about half this size. the chief harbour works on the left. In the middle of the river is the



Buabhy

### ONE OF OLD DORDRECHT'S BEAUTIFUL STREETS OF WATER

Dordrecht is a very old town, for when it was founded, in 1038, England's king, Edward the Confessor, was only three years old. The district around it was called Holland, meaning "lowland," and the Counts of Holland later became so powerful that they owned all the country now included in the provinces of North and South Holland.

We think of the Netherlands as a rather depressingly flat country. Certainly North Holland, Friesland and Gröningen answer to this description, the only breaks in the monotonous landscape being the extensive sand dunes thrown up by the sea and wind, and the dykes that have been built. But north of Arnhem, in the south-east province of Gelderland, there is a "Dutch Switzerland" that has quite big hills. There are no great snow-capped mountains, but modest heights, with their sides covered by woods, and wide heaths where there are springs and cascades. Still, most of the country is low-lying and flat.

The unceasing struggle on the part of its inhabitants against the forces of Nature

has produced a courageous and, in some ways, an amazingly interesting race. But whence came these Dutchmen?

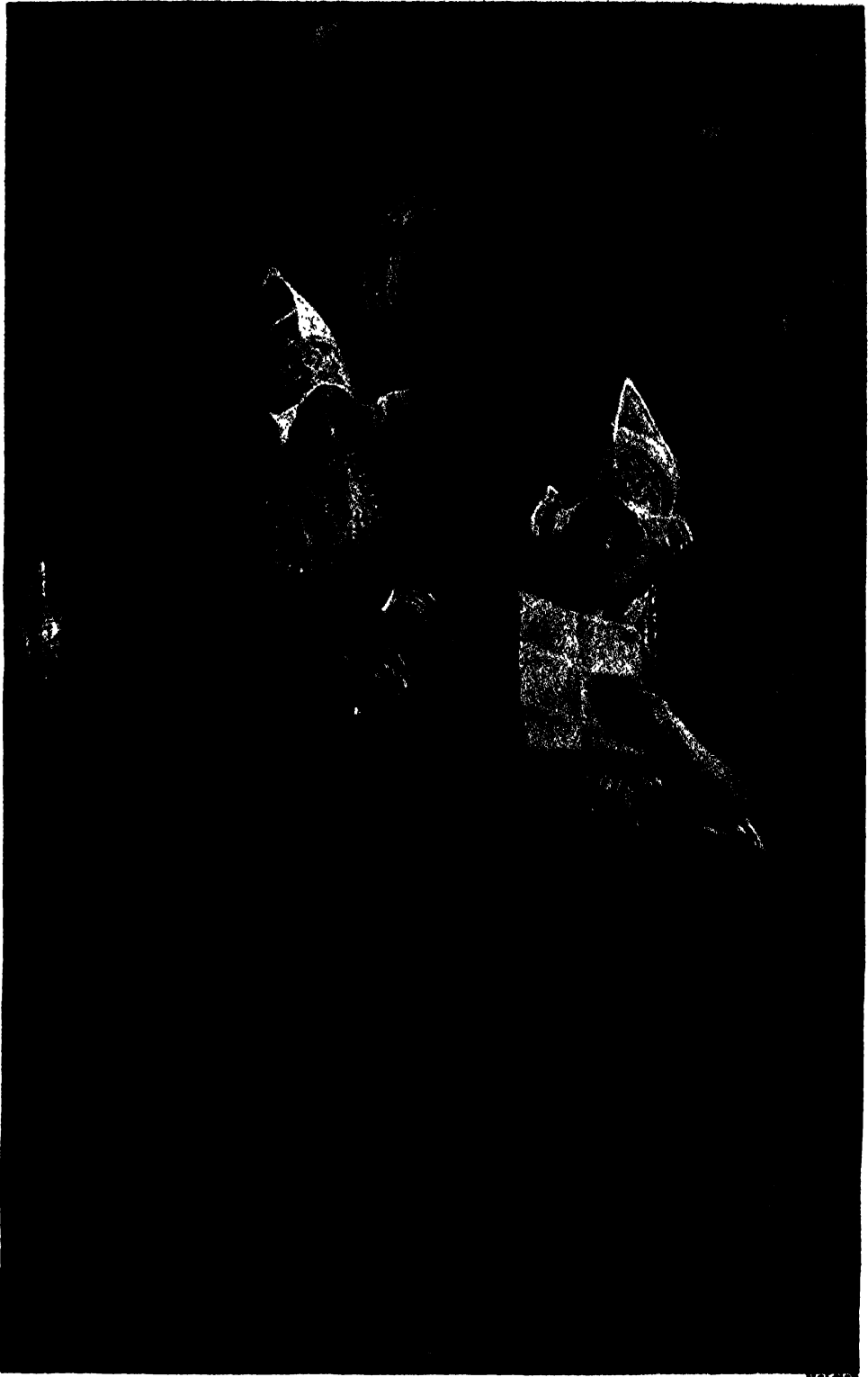
Prehistoric remains in Friesland and Drenthe show that the early inhabitants corresponded to the ancient British natives and that they were there when the earliest Germanic settlers arrived. Dutch history begins, however, with the invasion of the north by the Frisians and the forming of a Frieslander state that at one time spread as far south as the Belgian town of Bruges.

The old Frieslanders were a quite separate race, but when their country was cut in two by the formation of the Zuider Zee, they gradually became amalgamated with the rest of the population.



Nicholls

**DUTCH HOMES** have been made known to us by the beautiful pictures of the old Dutch painters. Patterned tiles in bright colours, dishes of Delft ware on shelves all round the walls, polished brasses, straight-backed chairs and flagged floor with a rush mat or two—we expect to see all these in a Dutch living-room, and we are rarely disappointed.



**WOMEN OF VOLENDAM** are as proud of their costume as they are of their spotlessly clean homes. They wear their "winged," lace caps indoors and out, but their wooden shoes, or "klompen," they do not wear inside the house. Each of these two sisters has a collar of gold and coral ; their blue and white striped skirts are covered by their aprons.



McLellan

#### YOUNG DAIRYMAID ON AN ISLAND FARM OF NORTH HOLLAND

In the Zuider Zee, 10 miles from Amsterdam, is Marken, a flat, little island which is so frequently flooded that the houses are built on wooden piles to keep them safe from the water. In Marken nearly everyone still wears a costume that is a form of the characteristic Dutch dress. Very elaborate materials are used to make the women's clothes.

Among the islanders of Urk and Marken we still find types that suggest the ancient race that was in the Netherlands when the first invaders came.

We generally think of the modern Dutch folk as being somewhat dull and silent, slow to make up their minds, but amazingly obstinate when they have done so, and rather inclined in business to give too little and ask too much.\* These characteristics, however, are to be found chiefly in the north of the Netherlands, though even here the silent, contemplative Dutchman with his pipe and his glass of "schnapps" is not so common as he was. The native of Brabant in the south is a much more hasty and talkative person. So far as shrewdness in business is

concerned, we are reminded of an old story that is worth retelling because it illustrates what is still the Dutch point of view. It concerns a British monarch, George II. He was staying in the town of Helvoet, and one day he stopped a pretty Dutch dairymaid and asked her what she had in her basket. "Eggs, mynheer," said she. "And what is the price?" "A ducat apiece, mynheer." The king exclaimed: "Are eggs so scarce then in Holland?" "No, mynheer," was the answer, "but kings are."

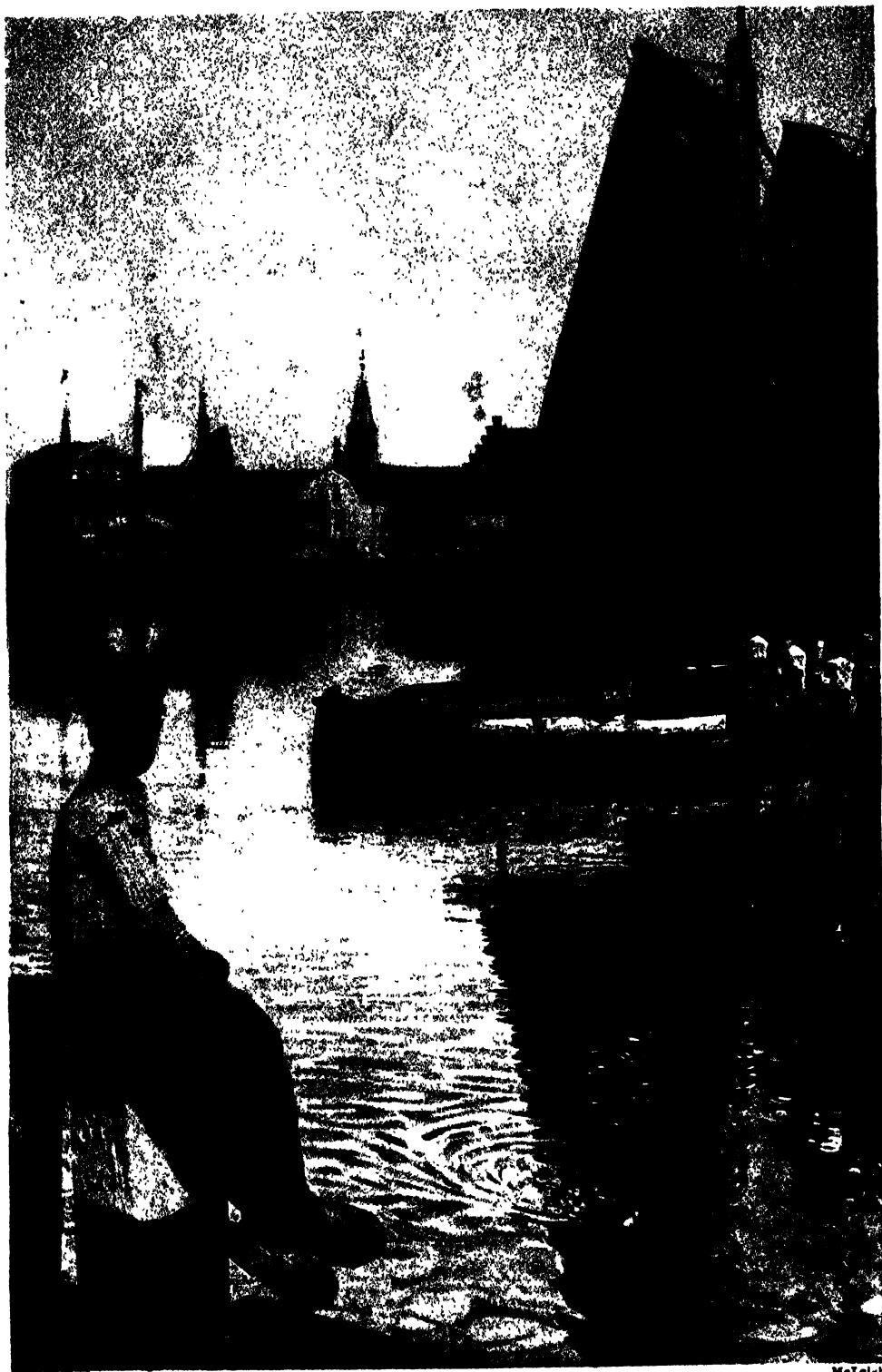
That young lady was probably a good deal smarter in her speech than most of the menfolk. The moral of the story is, however, that in business dealings the Dutch are specially inclined to take



Nicholls

#### WHERE PUMPS CREAK AND WATER SPLASHES ALL DAY LONG

In most Dutch houses water is not laid on, but is drawn from a pump outside. These pumps are used continually, for the cleanly Netherlands not only keep their rooms speckless, but wash down their house fronts and scrub the pavements—sometimes even while it rains! This outside washing, however, may only be done during certain hours.



McLeish

**VOLENDAM** lies on the western shores of the Zuider Zee, just east of Edam. Though only a little fishing village, it is much visited by artists and holiday-makers from other lands, for it is one of the few places in which we can still see the quaint Dutch costumes that our picture-books have made so familiar to us all.



Nicholls

**UNDER THE CAPSTAN** in this Zuider Zee fishing village is an old seat, on which, on a sunny afternoon, it is pleasant to sit and chat. When a Dutch girl becomes engaged she wears a plain, gold ring on the third finger of her left hand ; when she marries the same ring is her wedding ring, and she puts it on her right hand.





A. N. A.

**ALONG A WIND-SWEPT DYKE ROAD: BRINGING HOME A SHEEP THAT HAS FALLEN VICTIM TO FLOODS**

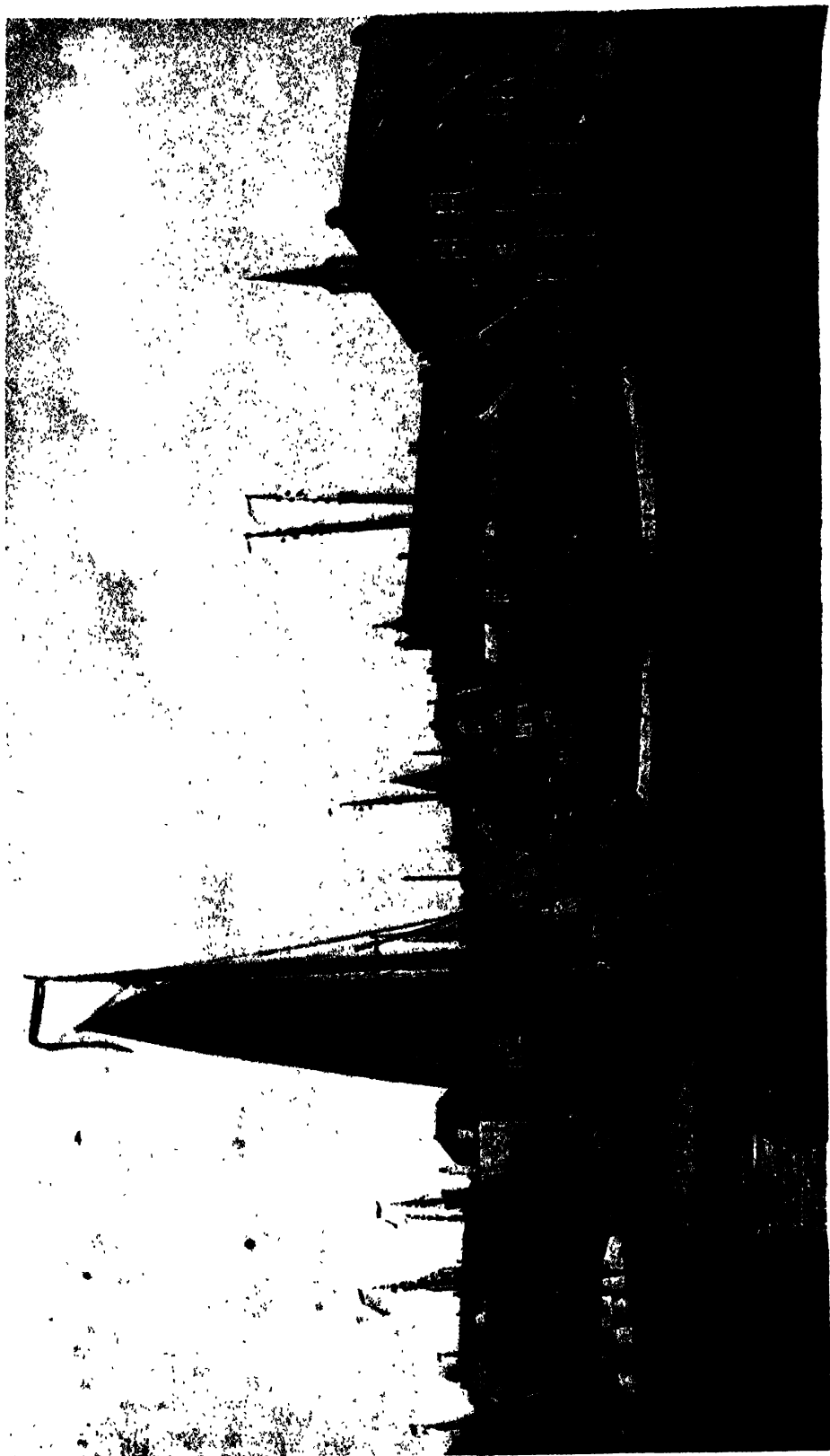
The Netherlands is not a sheep-rearing country, though some flocks are seen in the south and central districts. There are very many cows, however, mostly large, black and white Frisians. In this low-lying land many of the roads are raised above flood-level, since they run along the tops of the great dykes that keep the water within bounds. Farther inland we can often see a great, circular canal with a high, strong dyke inside it, the other side of which, below water level, is a stretch of good farming land. This land was once a lake.



#### AT WESTKAPELLE IS ONE OF THE LARGEST DYKES IN A LAND OF DYKES AND WATERWAYS

At the very westernmost point of Walcheren Island, not far from Zoutlande, which we see in page 68: nestling beneath natural sand dunes, stands the village of Westkapelle. It has not been provided with protection from the sea, and so man has built there a great

dyke. Rows of stout wooden piles driven into the shore keep steady the innumerable stones that have been heaped between them. It is said that the men who keep this dyke in repair are the direct descendants of Danish fishermen who settled here in Norman times.



**THE HARBOUR OF URK**, a small island in the centre of the Zunder Zee, is used by few vessels except fishing boats, for nearly all of the men who live there are fishermen, seeking herrings, eels and anchovies, oysters, shrimps and mussels in the shallow, inland sea. The men

McLain  
nearly always wear the caps of lambskin that were once worn by all Dutch fishermen, and their breeches are very baggy. The women have a queer custom of embroidering their initials and those of their sweethearts on the coloured vest each wears in the front of her bodice.



**DUTCH FISHERMEN**, like those of other countries, spend much time loitering about the piers and jetties, gossiping, looking at the boats and gazing into the water. But we must not, therefore, think them lazy, because these same men who stand here looking so idle,

though picturesque, may be at work in their fishing smacks all through the night. Sailing boats can only leave harbour when the wind is in the right direction and when the tide has risen—especially the boats of Volendam, for their fishing ground is the shallow *Zuider Zee*.



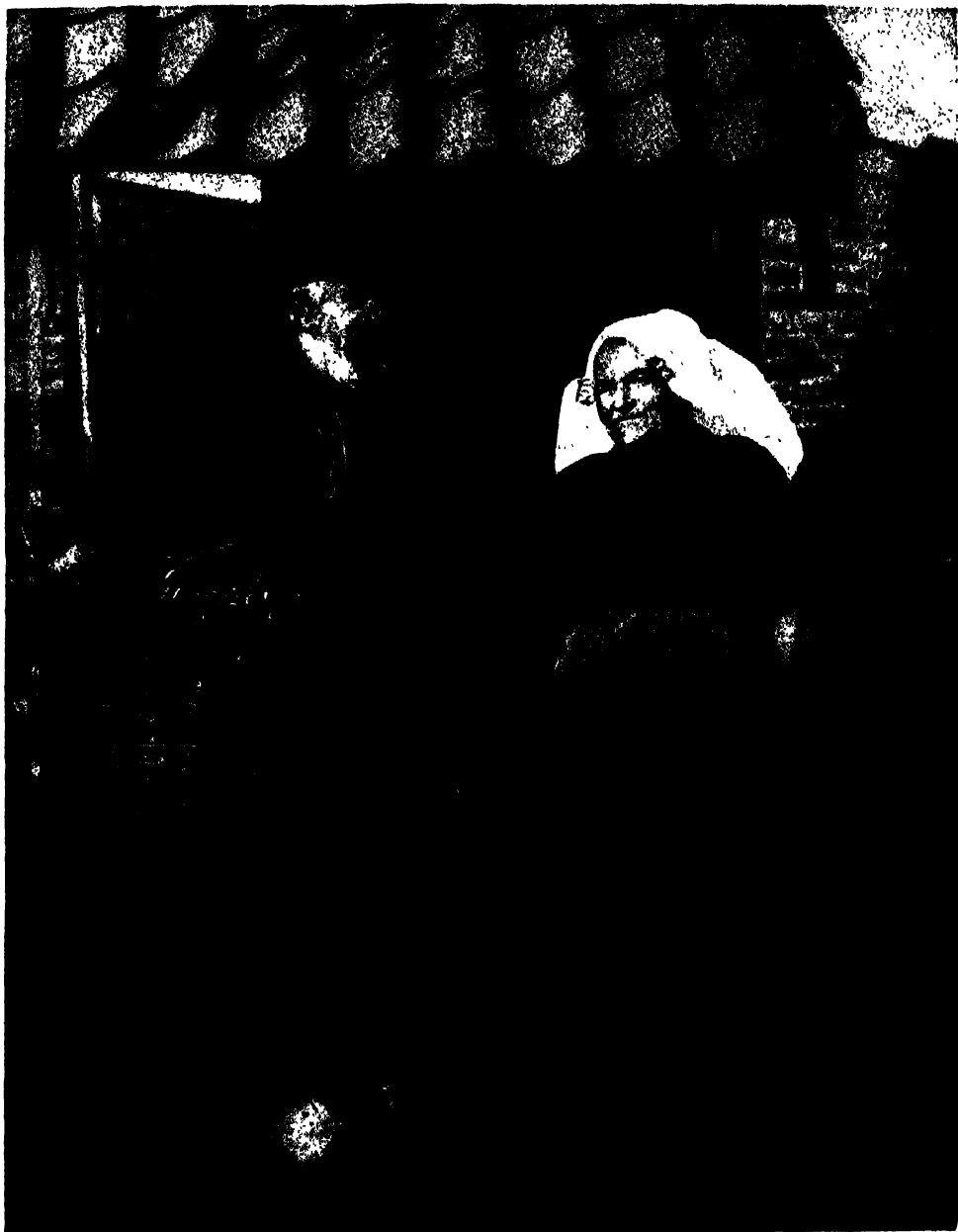
McLeish

**'BEST FISH IN MIDDELBURG MARKET,' SAYS THE FISHWIFE**

Thursday is the day to visit Middelburg, in Walcheren, for that is market day. This Arnemuïden fishwife has walked into town with her little daughter to sell her husband's catch, and she still has on her shoulders the yoke from which her baskets hung as she walked. Women of Walcheren Island wear their sleeves very short and very tight.

advantage of any chance that may help them to drive a good bargain. The reason is fairly obvious. They have had to fight so hard and to use their wits so strenuously for the preservation of their land and the bare necessities of existence, that the habit of looking after their own interests to an exceptional extent has gradually become part of their nature.

As regards the Dutch woman, she has always taken a very important place in Dutch national life. A visitor to the Netherlands wrote: "To be master of his own house is an idea which seems never to have occurred to the mind of a genuine Dutchman; nor did he ever commence any undertaking, whether public or private, without first consulting the



Nicholls

# **OLD PEASANT COUPLE FROM OUDE BEIJERLAND, SOUTH HOLLAND**

Much of South Holland is "polder" land, or land reclaimed from the sea by dykes and dykes and yet more dykes. On its fertile soil flax is grown. South of the island of Beijerland, in the north of which dwells this homely couple, is the Hollandsch Diep, an arm of the sea which was formed during a great flood in 1421.

partner of his cares." The same authority suggests that the most important and far-reaching decisions taken by Dutch statesmen in the olden time were directly inspired by their wives.

And this is probably true, for history has recorded the exceptionally heroic part played by the Dutch women in the struggle for national freedom. They were

particularly active fighters in the famous defence of Haarlem against the Spaniards, and there is a distinct suspicion of feminine cunning about the trick whereby one of the enemy attacks was defeated. The inhabitants of Haarlem secretly built and fully armed an inner fortification behind the outer one, so that when the enemy, having battered a breach in the latter,



McLeish

**WINDMILLS** are to be seen all over the Netherlands, for the sails once worked the pumps that help the dykes and dunes to keep the waters of sea, canal and river from overflowing on to the land. If it had not been for them over a third of the country would have been flooded at high tide. This windmill stands on the dykes near Flushing.

## FOLK OF A WATER-LOGGED COUNTRY

poured through, expecting to find a town defenceless and at their mercy, they were confronted instead by a new fortress even more formidable than the first. The surprise completely demoralized them.

The shipping trade is the backbone of the two chief commercial cities, Amsterdam and Rotterdam, and agriculture and fishing are the main occupations of the rest of the country.

The black and white cows of Friesland are famous, and the trade in cheese, of which Alkmaar and Edam are the great centres, is world-wide. One of our illustrations is a picture of the Weigh House and cheese mart at Alkmaar, which is held every Friday in the season. A day or two before, countless cheeses are brought to Alkmaar by rail, road and canal, and stacked, covered by tarpaulins, in the huge open space until the opening of the market. This takes place at 10 o'clock on Friday morning, and all day long stolid-looking Dutchmen stand about the piles of cheeses, tasting with a scoop, bargaining about the price and watching while the purchases are duly weighed. There are dozens of Weigh Houses in Holland, many of them being very old. But to-day none does harder work than that of Alkmaar.

### *Acres and Acres of Tulips*

Almost as well known an industry as cheese-making is the growing of tulips and hyacinths. This is centred round about Haarlem, where a "Tulip Sunday" is observed—about the third week in April—when as many people as can get there journey to the famous old town, just as Londoners make their way to Bushey Park at Hampton Court, near London, on Chestnut Sunday.

Anybody travelling by the railway from Leiden to Haarlem can get an excellent view of the acres upon acres of rectangular beds covered with gorgeous blossom, and can smell the delicious scent they give to the air. The Dutchman, however, does not grow flowers chiefly because he enjoys their beauty or scent, but as a hard, though fairly profitable business.

The towns and villages round the

Zuider Zee and in Zealand are still dependent on the fisheries, and their boats venture far into the North Sea and as near to the English coasts as international regulations permit. In the inland towns the distilleries for the production of gin and similar spirits form a thriving industry. Amsterdam boasts its own particular industry—diamond cutting. One district in the city, close to the Jewish quarter, is entirely devoted to this trade.

### *Arnhem, the Gay City*

There are not many "idle rich" in the Netherlands. Neither the large, busy cities nor the villages provide them with the kind of amusement for which they are supposed to live. If anywhere, they are to be found at The Hague, which, besides being the official Dutch capital, is also the least Dutch of the Dutch towns, or at Arnhem, which has maintained its medieval reputation as the gayest of the cities of Gelderland.

Your real Dutchman is orderly in all things. In planning his house or his garden he prefers straight lines to curved ones. The rambling old British house or cottage would not appeal to him in the least, and the wildness of many British gardens would probably drive him wild. That may be a fault in him; and the strictly practical outlook of the modern Dutchman has often been contrasted with the artistic spirit that made the Netherlands in the seventeenth century famous among the cultured nations. Many of the modern Dutch artists, however, have worthily continued the country's artistic traditions, and there is no real evidence that the average Dutchman is more lacking in good taste than a member of any other race.

### *Great Desire for Cleanliness*

Whatever defects he may have in this respect are largely compensated by his passion for cleanliness, which is famous throughout the world. The Dutch towns, especially the smaller ones, are kept spotlessly clean.

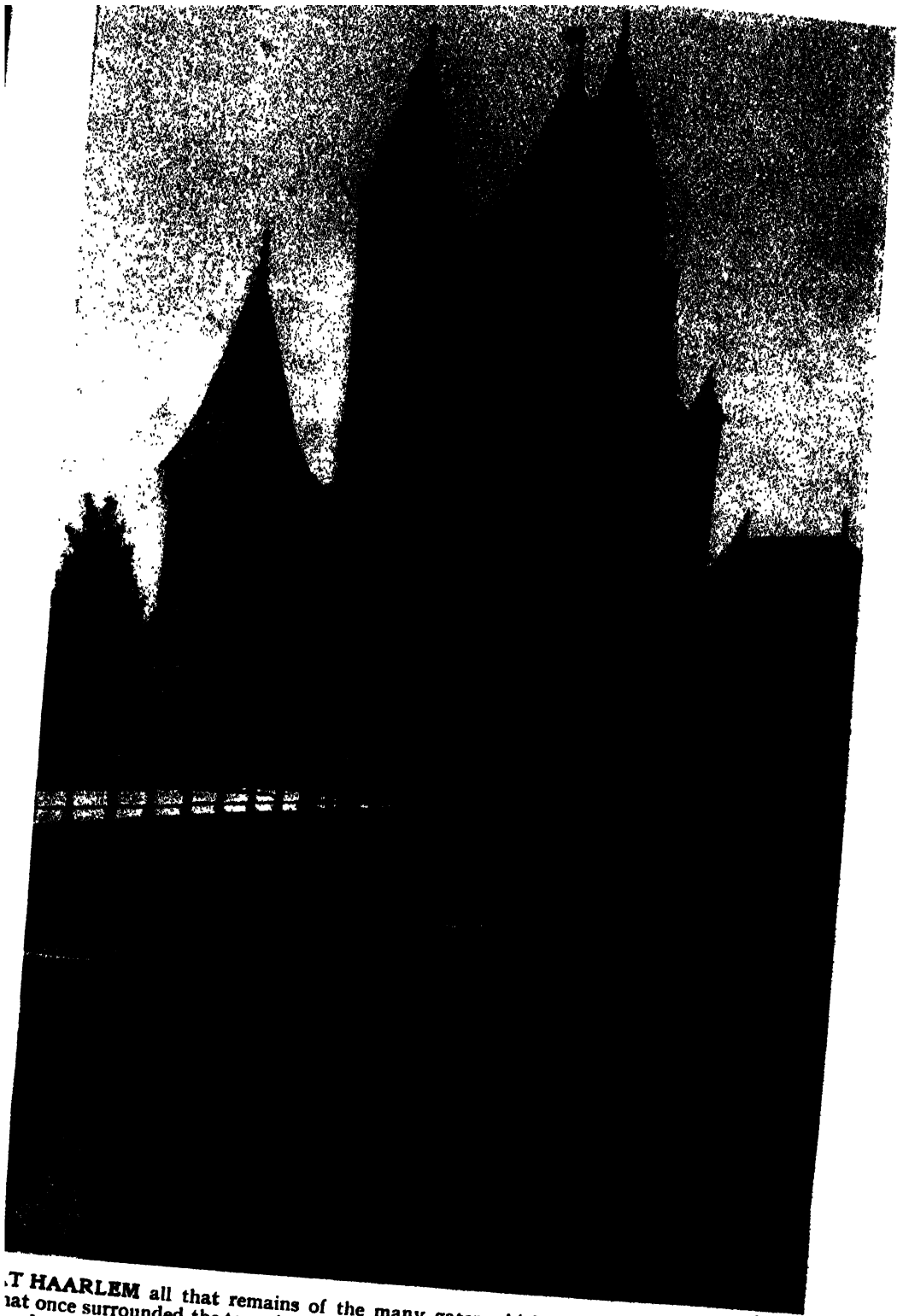
The village of Broek, in the Waterland of North Holland, has long been supposed





McLisab

**UTRECHT** is a very old and interesting town, dating back to Roman times. In the thirteenth century its cathedral was built on the site of a church founded by S. Willibrord, Utrecht's first bishop, in 720. The graceful tower that we see here has been separated from the rest of the cathedral since 1674, when the nave collapsed.



**AT HAARLEM** all that remains of the many gates which pierced the protecting walls E. N. A.  
that once surrounded the town is the Spaarnewouder or Amsterdam Gate. Haarlem, which  
lies between Amsterdam and the North Sea, is one of the most attractive towns in  
the Netherlands. In the spring it is encircled by fields of hyacinths and tulips.



McLeish

#### ZEALAND MILKMAID GOES HER MORNING ROUNDS

Dogs are not kept simply as pets by Dutch tradespeople. Usually fine, strong creatures, they must work for their keep between the shafts of their master's cart. In Belgium and France as well dogs are employed where in England a horse or donkey would be used.

In page 544 we can see a Belgian milkwoman with a team of four dogs.

to lead all the rest in this matter. At one time it was said that in Broek men were forbidden to smoke except with a covered pipe bowl, so that the ash might not be scattered; and that cows were not allowed to pass through the village, but had to be conducted round the outskirts. Boys were paid, so runs the legend, to blow the dust out of cracks in the pavement four times an hour, and it was an unwritten law that if a villager, from his window, saw a leaf fall, he should come out, pick it up and drop it into the canal.

Yet whatever may have been the special virtues of Broek, that very pleasant little village is to-day no more spick-and-span than many dozens of similar ones. It does indeed struggle hard to maintain its position. At one of its farms we may still see the cows' tails tied up to a beam in the stable roof, so that the animals may not soil the glossiness of their flanks by swishing them! Whether the cows like it does not seem to matter. But plenty of other places have their own customs of cleanliness. The solitary spot in the country, where this truly Dutch tradition is not

observed is the Jewish quarter of Amsterdam, where an absence of orderliness accompanies a complete indifference to soap and water.

It has been said that a Dutch housewife's idea of happiness in a future world is to have a dwelling on the Dutch model, in which she may rub and scrub and polish throughout eternity. Even in the barges on the canals the same passion prevails. A detachable washing tray can be seen on every bulwark. It would be strange perhaps if this were not so, for the barge is as important to Dutch national life as the house itself, and the woman whose home it is, is as anxious to keep it beautifully clean and tidy as if it were a palace.

Dutch churches are swept and cleaned with quite as much care as Dutch homes. In other respects, perhaps, the majority of these churches are a little dull and disappointing to the visitor. What strikes us most is their bare expanse of whitewashed wall and the absence of decorations or paintings of the sort to which the traveller is accustomed in other parts of the Continent. The Netherlands is



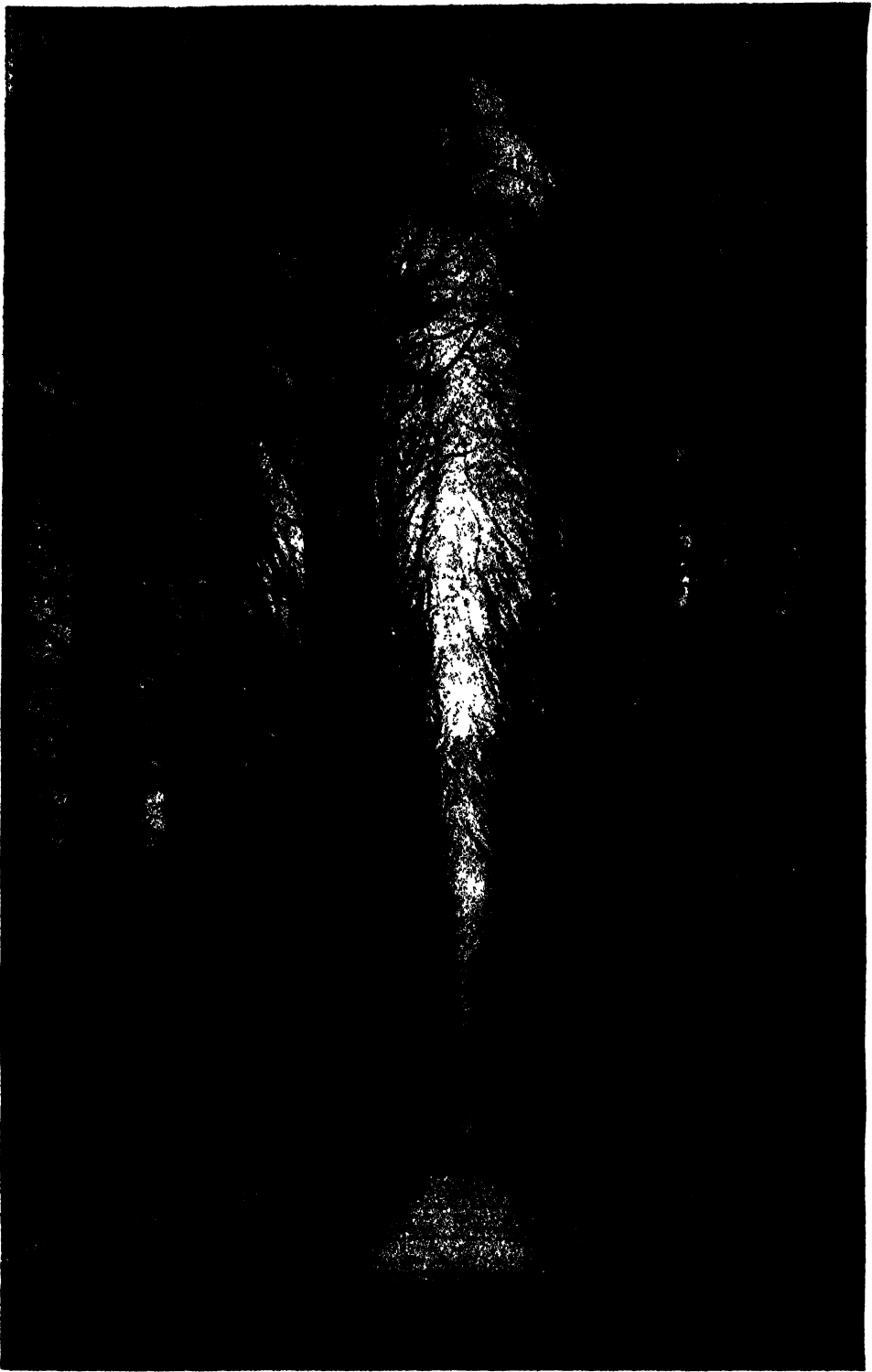
#### **PREPARING TO TURN A SEA INTO FRUITFUL FARMING LAND**

The fishermen of Volendam and Marken and Urk and all the other villages on the shores of the Zuider Zee will soon have nowhere to fish, for that shallow inland sea is being drained. This is to be done by means of a great dyke stretching from the north of North Holland to the island of Wieringen, and thence to Friesland.

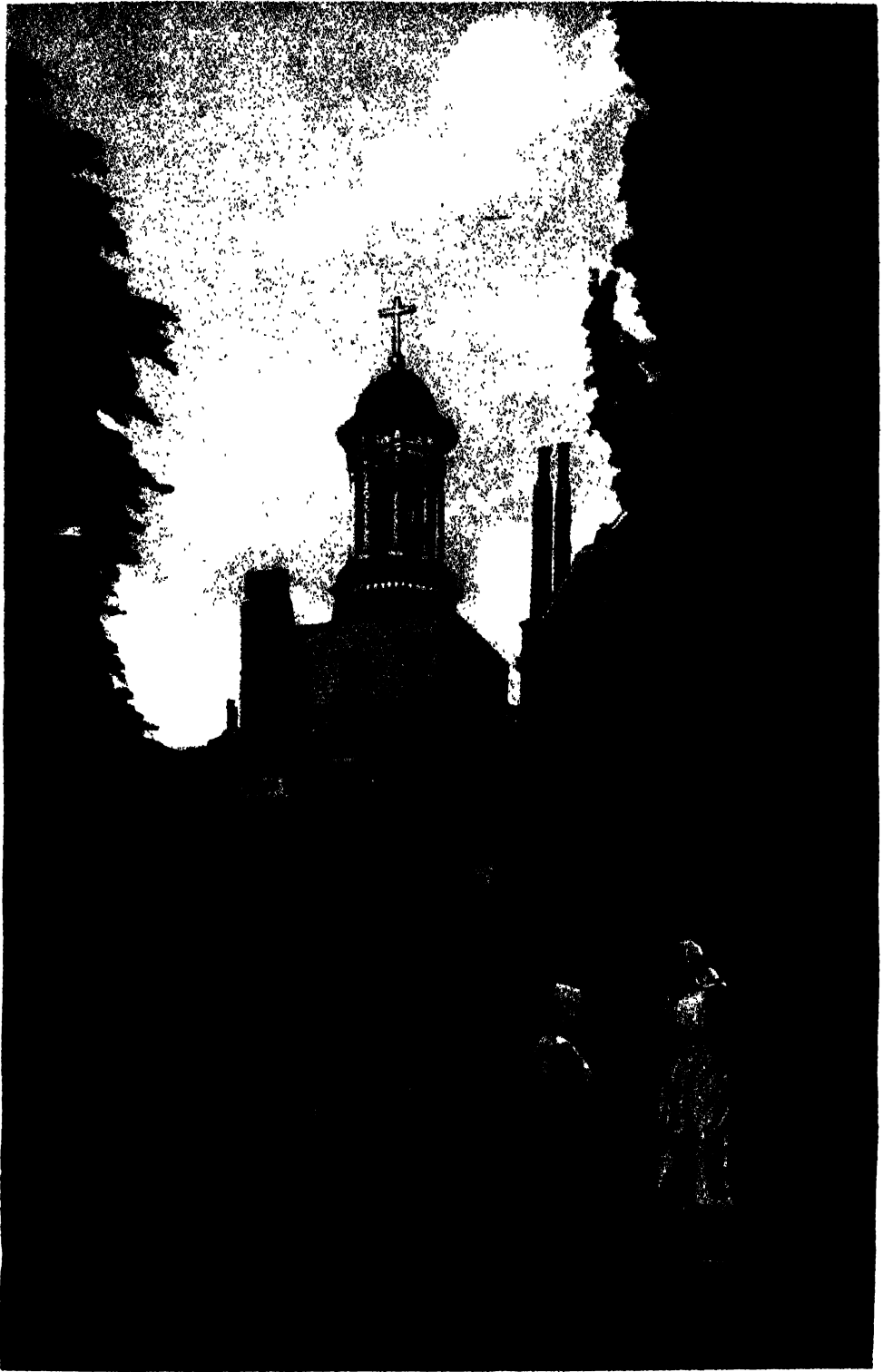


#### **LAYING THE FOUNDATIONS OF A DYKE NINETEEN MILES LONG** E.N.A.

This great dam will turn 500,000 acres of water into fertile ground and will add a sixteenth to the present size of the Netherlands. It was begun in 1920, but it will be a long time yet before it is finished. The foundation is made of brushwood, which we see in the upper photograph being tied into bundles, and in the lower being laid down.

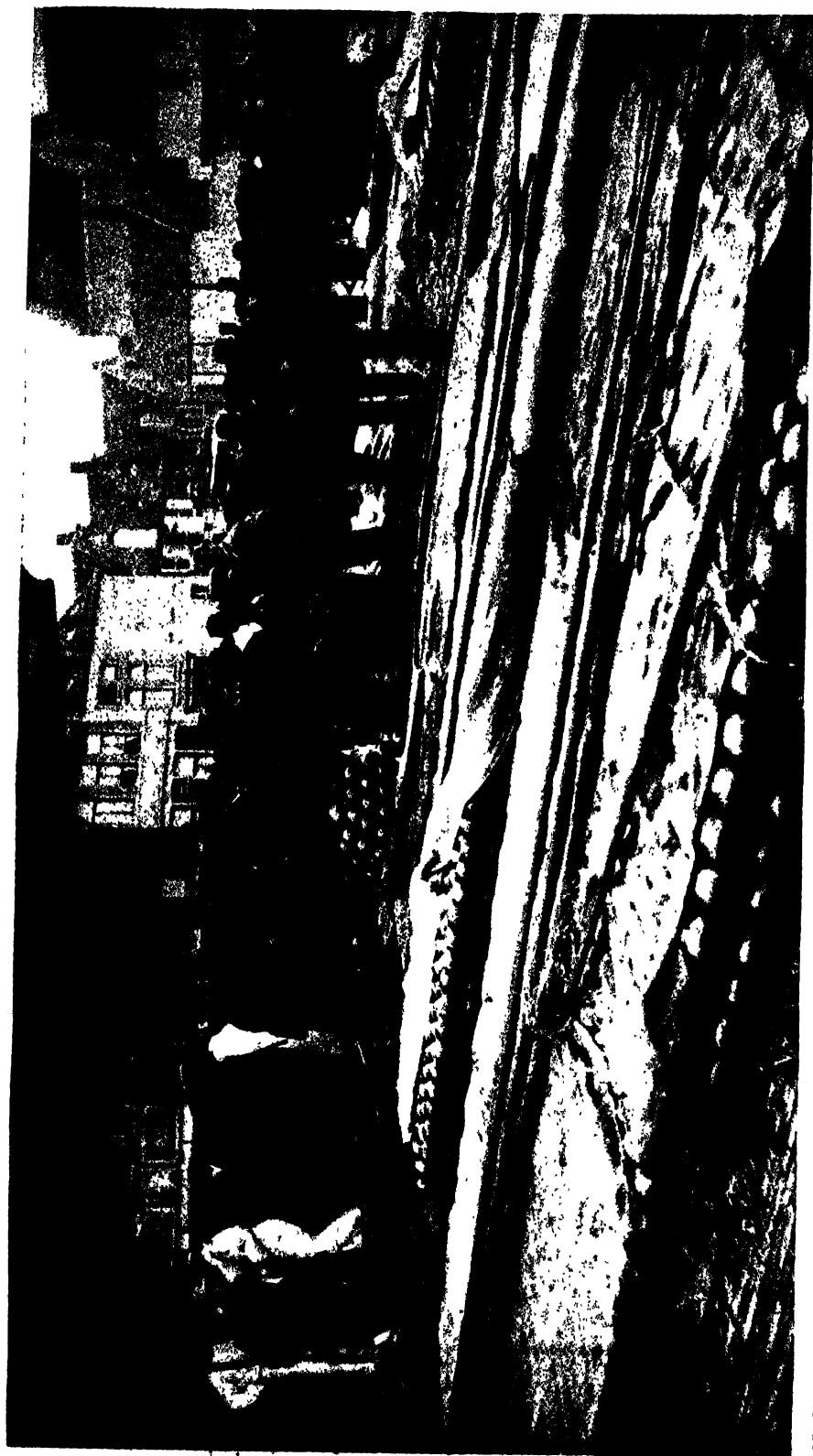


**ARNHEM, IN GELDERLAND**, lies in a very beautiful, and even slightly hilly countryside. All around are handsome mansions in fine, wooded grounds. One of these possesses this avenue of lofty beeches. About the people of this province there runs an old proverb, "Great in courage, poor in goods, sword in hand, such is the motto of Gelderland."



McLellan

**MIDDELBURG**, the capital of Zeeland, always a pleasant spot, is at its best on fair days and market days, for then the country people from all the islands of Zeeland flock to the town in their varied costumes. In Middelburg itself, as in Flushing, the Dutch dress is not very much worn, though occasionally we may see it in such quaint streets as this.



**IN THE MARKET PLACE OF ALKMAAR ROUND DUTCH CHEESES LIE IN HEAPS LIKE GREAT RED CANNON BALLS**  
Alkmaar, in North Holland, is the great cheese market of the Netherlands, the place to which, on Fridays, the dairy farmers of North Holland bring the cheeses they have made. Once all the cheeses came from farms, but now many are factory-made. The whole square is covered with cheeses on market days. Gradually they are piled on to boat-shaped, wooden trays and carried by burly porters into the old Weigh House to be weighed. Then they are loaded on barges and sent away at the rate of about a hundred thousand every week.



Nikolla

#### A GAME THAT CANNOT BE PLAYED IN EVERY STREET

It is not marbles that these old Zuider Zee fishermen are playing, but a game called "Nika," which is played with a marble and coins inserted between the uneven bricks of the path that skirts the harbour. The girl who is looking on still wears her pretty bonnet and two-coloured apron, but her spotted blouse is not a Dutch fashion at all.

essentially a stronghold of the Protestant religion and the thoroughness with which its inhabitants did away with every sign of Papist rule can easily be explained.

Nowhere was the hand of the Spanish Inquisition felt more heavily than in the Netherlands during the sixteenth century. More than a century passed before the bitter memory of the struggle that Philip II. of Spain and his generals forced upon the country became the least bit softened in the hearts of this dour, tenacious people of the North. By that time they had found the simple style of religious building that exactly suited them; and, being conservative in this as in all things, they have maintained it ever since.

The province of Brabant is mostly Roman Catholic, but otherwise the only notable exception to the Protestant communities of the country is the fishing village of Volendam. Several of the older

churches elsewhere still contain carvings and tombs of historical interest; but the typical Dutch church is the small, unpretentious building of brick and stone, with its whitewashed walls, plain pulpit and plainer pews.

It is in the Dutch houses that we see the Dutchman's effort to make up for the natural dullness of the country. In this land of monotonously low horizons the houses, which, in the towns at any rate, are high and narrow, are built with steep gables, straight or stepped, that break the sky line. To compensate for the grey skies that brood over the Netherlands, these houses are painted in bright colours.

In Brock, the little dwellings show an amazing variety of paint, greens and reds predominating, and the painted wooden houses of the isle of Marken, with their red tile roofs, are similarly attractive. Coloured glass is often used for the windows,

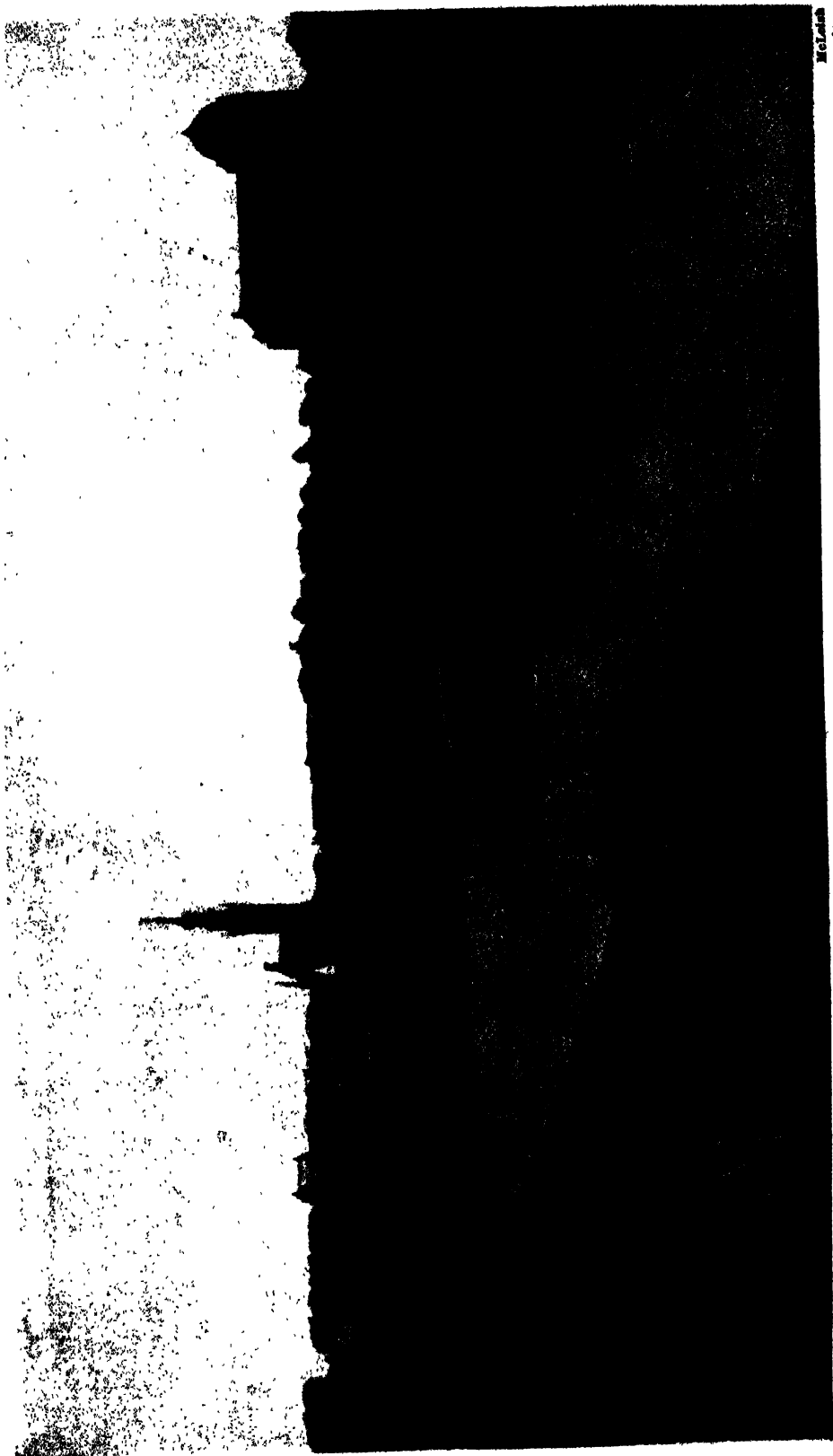




Galloway

strong wind lessen their height. The coarse grass that grows upon the dunes is the Zoutlander's friend, for it binds together the loose, shifting sand. The starched caps worn by Dutch women vary greatly in shape in different districts, as we can see in the various photographs.

**GREAT SAND DUNES** are Zoutlande's only protection against the North Sea, for this little Zealand village on the island of Walcheren lies below sea-level. The dunes are natural, but, needless to say, the people who live behind them quickly repair them if storm or



**ANCIENT, WALLED VEERE**, on Walcheren Island, is not now the important place that it was once. Its enormous church, built in 1348, which is now far too large for its congregation, its fifteenth century town-hall with a graceful tower, and the many houses of the

same period that line its streets, all point to its former prosperity. But the town has fallen into decay, and the people who go there are mostly artists and sightseers. Much of the island of Walcheren is below sea-level, but here in the north-east it is rather higher.

## FOLK OF A WATER-LOGGED COUNTRY

and even the plain glass windows are kept so carefully polished that their gleaming brightness is a feature of the house. Nor must we forget the charming effect of the shutters checkered in blue and yellow, or in red and black or white.

The interiors of the houses vary with individual tastes, but there is generally plenty of colour in them. Modern Delft ware is inferior to the older product, but it retains all its popularity in the Dutch household, whether for tiles or china. Brass and copper utensils made in the country not only appeal to the housewife's fondness for rubbing and polishing, but, properly burnished, they help to make a room sparkle with light and warmth.

Many picturesque, national costumes survive. The style of dress that travellers talked about as a curiosity more than a century ago is still worn in Volendam. Women with embroidered bodices and huge, mitre-like caps, and men in their less colourful but distinctive short jackets with two rows of buttons and enormously wide trousers, are still to be seen about the Volendam quays. Other

Dutch fishermen also wear the capacious trousers fastened by a band round the waist, and the use of wooden clogs for shoes is practically universal among the country and sea-faring folk.

A wedding celebration is a joyous affair, commonly lasting all night. Betrothals, on the contrary, although more ceremonious than in Great Britain, do not call for much public rejoicing. One surviving custom in betrothals is so very characteristic of the race that one may conclude with a brief account of it. The prospective bridegroom begins by speaking to the parents, and if approved by them, he is asked to spend the evening at their house when the maiden herself is there. At an early hour the parents discreetly retire to bed. Meanwhile the young man has been keeping by his side a cake which, as soon as the couple are alone, he places upon a table—and waits. If the girl intends to accept him she promptly puts some more peat on the fire. If not, she does nothing, and the young man, knowing his fate, packs up his cake and departs without further loss of time.



Nicholls

### WOODEN SHOES ARE NO HINDRANCE TO FENCE CLIMBING

The little girls and boys of a Dutch household are not sent to play in a nursery, but may romp as they please all over the house, and even then they often overflow into the streets, like these six little Dutchmen, who look ripe for any mischief. Though there is no nursery in the house, there is sometimes a schoolroom, however.

# The Lovely Land of Kashmir

## A BEAUTY SPOT OF THE HIMALAYAS

Beyond the mountains that bound the northern edge of the sun-scorched Punjab, in India, lies the mountain land of Kashmir. The beauty and richness of this country have through the centuries attracted to it such conquering races as the Moguls, the Pathans and the Sikhs, and, though now it is a semi-independent state, it suffers every summer an invasion of a different sort, when large numbers of European officials, merchants and others go there to escape from the dreadful heat of the Indian plains. That is why Kashmir has been called "The Playground of India," and in this chapter we shall see that it fully deserves its name.

WE can get the best idea of Kashmir, which lies to the north of the Punjab in India, by thinking of it as three parallel strips lying north-west and south-east. First comes the range of the Pir Panjal, the barrier that separates "the happy valley," as the land has been called, from India; then the valley itself, the plain of Kashmir, which is admitted to be the nearest approach on earth to the Garden of Eden; and lastly, the chain of sheltering hills which rise in tiers of extraordinary grandeur up to the mountain wall on the north.

Kashmir has been likened to an emerald set in pearls, for the valley is always green, and during nine months of the year the inner circle of hills that rings it is snow-capped. Further north lie the eternal snows. Nanga Parbat, 26,620 feet, is visible from certain points in the valley, and K2, or Mount Godwin-Austen, 28,278 feet, the second highest mountain in the world, can be seen from a spot only a day's journey distant.

### *Beautiful Himalayan Playground*

The Pir Panjal, the southern wall, through the passes of which Kashmir is entered from the plains of India, is the most delightful playground in the Himalayas. In it there are open spaces, where we can gallop over downs of short turf and through forest glades. We can look down into the green valley over meadows dotted with clumps of birch and maple and pine, and walking along we crush the flowers which grow so thickly.

But it is not the flowers alone that make the land so beautiful. Nearly every

mountain range in a temperate climate, given sufficient rain, is more or less a garden. It is the position of the garden that gives the Pir Panjal its unusual beauty. To say that it commands a wide view of the plains is to convey little.

### *All the Fruits of the Earth*

From most Indian hill-stations or their neighbourhood one gets an extensive view of the plains. But the plain on which we look down from Gulmarg, in the Pir Panjal, is a mountain plain, another garden under the rock garden, quite different to the sun-burnt expanse of the plains of the Punjab. The green and golden valley of Kashmir is over 80 miles long and from 20 to 25 miles broad and lies at an elevation of some 6,000 feet above the sea. In it are all the fruits of the earth and there is no corner of it which is not beautiful.

From the Pir Panjal the traveller does not look out over an endless stretch of country as he does from the southern slopes of the Himalayas. The Vale of Kashmir owes most of its loveliness to the fact that it is not very large. If a mist hid the lakes and mountain buttresses, it would still make a picture of unforgettable beauty and mystery. But when the mist lifts and we can see all, we understand then why the valley with its encircling hills is famous as the most wonderful natural garden in the world.

The visitor to Kashmir seldom sees the Pir Panjal in spring. Up to the end of the second or third week of April, Gulmarg, a favourite resort, is uninhabited; all through the winter the huts lie deep in



E. N. A.

**KASHMIRI WOMEN** are fortunate in having such a becoming native costume to heighten their beauty, for which they have been praised by travellers and poets. The dress of these ladies, and the fact that they can take their ease instead of working hard, as most women in the East have to do, show that they belong to the wealthy class.



**CHILDREN OF KASHMIR,** it is said, are always pretty. But they would have to be very ugly indeed not to look charming in their bright, gold-embroidered clothes. Most Indian children go bareheaded, but as this brother and sister are dressed in their best, the little girl wears a light shawl on her head, and the boy a large and magnificent turban.



Underwood

#### SUSPENSION BRIDGE OF ROPES OVER THE JHELUM AT URI

Although the people of Kashmir appreciate the comforts of modern civilization enough to make electric power from the swift current of the Jhelum near Uri, primitive bridges such as this are still to be found in their country. The crossing of the river is made on a swinging seat, which, hung to one rope, is drawn along by another.



E. N. A.

#### **HORSE-DRAWN EKKAS AT REST BY THE WAYSIDE NEAR SRINAGAR**

The ekka is a heavy, springless cart drawn by horse or oxen and having two wheels. It is much used all over India and by the natives of Kashmir. For wealthy travellers, however, there is the tonga, a superior type of carriage, or, in certain districts of Kashmir, the houseboat, which is poled or towed along the navigable rivers.

snow. It is only in July and August when the valley grows hot and the mosquito becomes a nuisance that folk flock to this upland town. The place is nothing more than a huge inn—a collection of tents and wooden huts, the maharaja's palace, the Residency, where the representative of the Indian Government lives, and one sprawling hotel.

We might leave Kashmir without setting foot in the Pir Panjal and still think of it as the most delightful country in the world. The road from the railway at Rawalpindi, in the Punjab, to Srinagar drops into the Jhelum valley below Murree and follows the bank of the river,

cut into the edge of the cliff, until it comes to Baramula under its cedar forest and enters the Vale of Kashmir.

In the last few miles before Baramula the torrent becomes a wide, placid stream; the valley broadens out into rich corn-fields and pasture land; walnut, willow and elm enfold snug villages. At Baramula the Jhelum becomes navigable.

This is the gateway of Kashmir, and the visitor, if he is wise, will leave the road and continue his journey to Srinagar, the City of the Sun, in a houseboat. He will be poled and towed to the Wular Lake. He will visit Manasbal, the most beautiful lake in the world if we except the Dal.

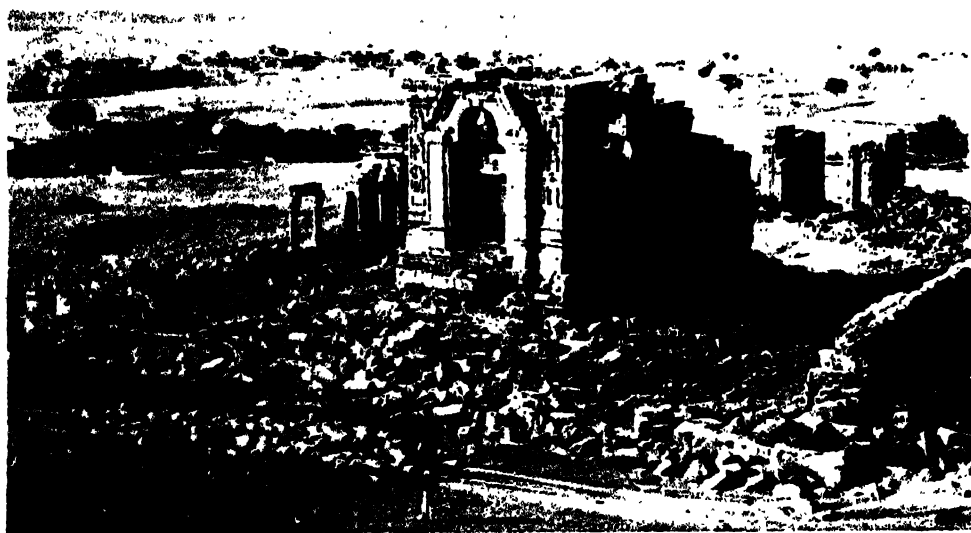




E. N. A.

#### **HAZRAT BAL, A GREAT MOSQUE ON THE SHORE OF THE DAL LAKE**

Overlooking the clear Dal Lake, near Srinagar, is the mosque of Hazrat Bal, in which is preserved as a precious relic what is supposed to be a hair of the Prophet Mahomet. The majority of the Kashmiris, being Mahomedans, hold the mosque in great reverence. The maharaja and a large class of his people are of Rajput stock and are Brahmans.



#### **NEGLECTED REMAINS OF THE GREAT TEMPLE OF MARTAND**

The ruins of the temple of Martand, once the largest in Kashmir, stand on a bleak plateau five miles from Islamabad. The temple is built in a mixture of Indian and classical Greek styles, and is, therefore, a typical example of ancient Kashmiri architecture. It was largely destroyed by Sikander, who ruled Kashmir at the end of the fourteenth century.



Underwood

### **WANDERING SHEPHERD OF KASHMIR WITH TWO OF HIS FLOCK**

A great part of Kashmir lies in a fertile valley which is well watered by rivers and streams, and rich in gardens and orchards. The people who live in the valley work on the land and at carpet-making and silk-weaving. The north-eastern districts are, however, mountainous, and it is there that we find large numbers of shepherds with their flocks.



E. N. A.

#### GAY SCENE ON THE JHELUM RIVER AT THE FESTIVAL OF THE MAHARAJA'S RETURN TO SRINAGAR

During the summer months the maharaja and his court are in residence at Srinagar, but he moves to Jammu, in the south of Kashmir, for the winter. The day of his return to Srinagar is an annual holiday for the inhabitants, who, dressed in their gaudiest finery, throng to do honour to their prince. Life afloat at Srinagar is very pleasant, for the boatmen can sail not only on the beautiful Jhelum, but on the Dal Lake. The lake is crowded with floating gardens, each ablaze with flowers, and over its clear waters dart birds of magnificent plumage.

## THE LOVELY LAND OF KASHMIR

On the fourth day he will enter Srinagar. Like all dirty, quaint, dilapidated, old eastern cities, built on a river bank, it is best seen from a boat.

The smells are not so noticeable in midstream and the dirt which has been accumulating for many years cannot be seen. The houses are brown, built of wood and brick and have two or three stories, with carved lattice windows and ornamented balconies and with roofs covered in moss, grass and flowers. On the mosques and some of the houses the projecting roofs are carved and ornamented, generally in the shape of hanging bellflowers.

Women and children crowd the balconies and river steps. They wear a long garment in bright colours with loose, turned-up sleeves. The Kashmiri women are pretty and the children are often beautiful, with regular features, fair complexion and large, bright, black eyes. Their hair is worn in long plaits, bound

with coarse woollen threads and tassels. Their lives are hard, however, and they soon lose their good looks.

Srinagar lies between two hills. On the top of the one to the north is the straggling, yellow fort of Hari Parbat; that to the east is the Takht-i-Suleiman, or Throne of Solomon, rising a thousand feet above the plain. The Dal Lake washes the bases of both hills, and both are reflected in its clear waters. It is a spring-fed lake and the water is as clear as crystal. The surface, five miles in length and two and a half in breadth, is broken by belts of gigantic reeds, bulrushes, floating gardens and islands.

There are gardens of cocks'-combs in the dry patches between the dykes, a rich warm glow of colour, and fields of bright marigolds, which the true Hindu plucks daily to strew on the altars of the god Siva. At every turn in these creeks there is a new glimpse of the hills. The Nishat, Shalimar and Nasim Gardens,



**TOWNSFOLK OF SRINAGAR WATCH THE MAHARAJA'S BARGE PASS**  
To the river banks, to windows and open galleries in their houses and to boats the loyal Kashmiris crowd to watch the progress of their ruler's barge, of which we only see the prow and part of the deck-house. The waterside houses of Srinagar are built to allow their occupiers to enjoy the cool breezes and changing scenes of the river.



Hookless

#### RESPECTFUL SUBJECTS LINE THE BANKS OF THE JHELUM WHEN THE MAHARAJA SAILS IN STATE

The magnificent progress of the Maharaja of Jammu and Kashmir through Srinagar, his summer capital, is made the occasion for an exhibition of loyalty on the part of his subjects, who line his route to see him pass. The long, royal barge, with its squat deck-houses and rows of paddlers would look a very primitive vessel to us, but to the inhabitants of Srinagar it seems entirely suitable to the majesty of their ruler. The maharaja ranks as one of the most important Indian princes, and is entitled to a salute of nineteen guns.

## THE LOVELY LAND OF KASHMIR

on the shores of the lake, were made by the Moguls, who were the rulers of India for over 200 years, and are the most beautiful gardens in the world. The Nasim, or garden of breezes, which is more like a park than a garden, is famous for its chenars, or plane trees, planted by the Mogul emperor Akbar in the sixteenth century.

All these gardens are built on the same plan. A spring-fed canal runs down the centre, dropping from terrace to terrace by a series of cascades into reservoirs in which fountains are playing. The walls of the canal are of marble or old limestone, and have niches for lights, which glisten on nights of festival behind the falling water. The central canal is bordered by paths with flower beds on either side, which are intersected at right angles by other paths between the lawns, where grow magnificent chenars.

### *Varied Grandeur of the Himalayas*

The Nishat garden is finer than the Shalimar owing to its surroundings. Its spacious lawns and terraces slope down from the steep rocks behind it to the green shores of the lake, so that the last pavilion, covered with roses and jasmine, overlooks a bed of lotuses. The Pir Panjal, twenty miles beyond the opposite shore, forms the southern screen. The eye takes it all in at a glance; it is a portion of the landscape, as though no part of it was the work of man.

The mountain scenery of Kashmir, wild or peaceful, never becomes monotonous; there is always something new to see. This great variety of landscape within so small a space is not found elsewhere in the Himalayas. From Bandipur on the Wular Lake, we may climb the zigzag path to Tragbal which leads over the Burzil and Kamri passes to Gilgit and the Pamirs. Ten days out of Srinagar, camp can be pitched under the Tarshing glacier at the foot of Nanga Parbat. Or a visit may be paid to the cave of Amarnath, the natural temple of Siva under the snow, where pilgrims worship a pyramid of ice.

Or leaving the houseboat at Ganderbal, after seven days' march we cross the

Zoji-la, which is 11,300 feet high and the lowest pass in the northern wall, and are well on the road to Leh in Ladakh, a province of Kashmir. The scenery of the mountain country beyond the heights of the north is of a different grandeur. Kashmir, whether we enter it from the south or north, is an ideal contrast to the barrenness we have left behind. Some of the pleasantest haunts of the side valleys may be reached in a morning's walk from the houseboat.

### *Ruined Temple of the Sun*

Islamabad, at the eastern end of the valley, where the Jhelum ceases to be navigable only a few miles from the springs where it rises, is a favourite camping ground. Within a circle of a few miles lie the blue springs of Bawan, where the pilgrims feed the holy carp, the Mogul garden of Achibal, with its background of cedars, covering the spot where the spring wells out of the mountain in a rushing stream, the rock caves of Bomtzu, the monastery of Eishmakam, and Martand, the ruined temple of the Sun.

The valley is strewn with ancient temples. Martand is believed to date from about the eighth century A.D., during the period of early Hindu civilization in Kashmir. The ruins should be seen in the early morning, or at sunset in spring or late autumn. They are of a bluish-grey stone with a tinge of pink or mauve in it.

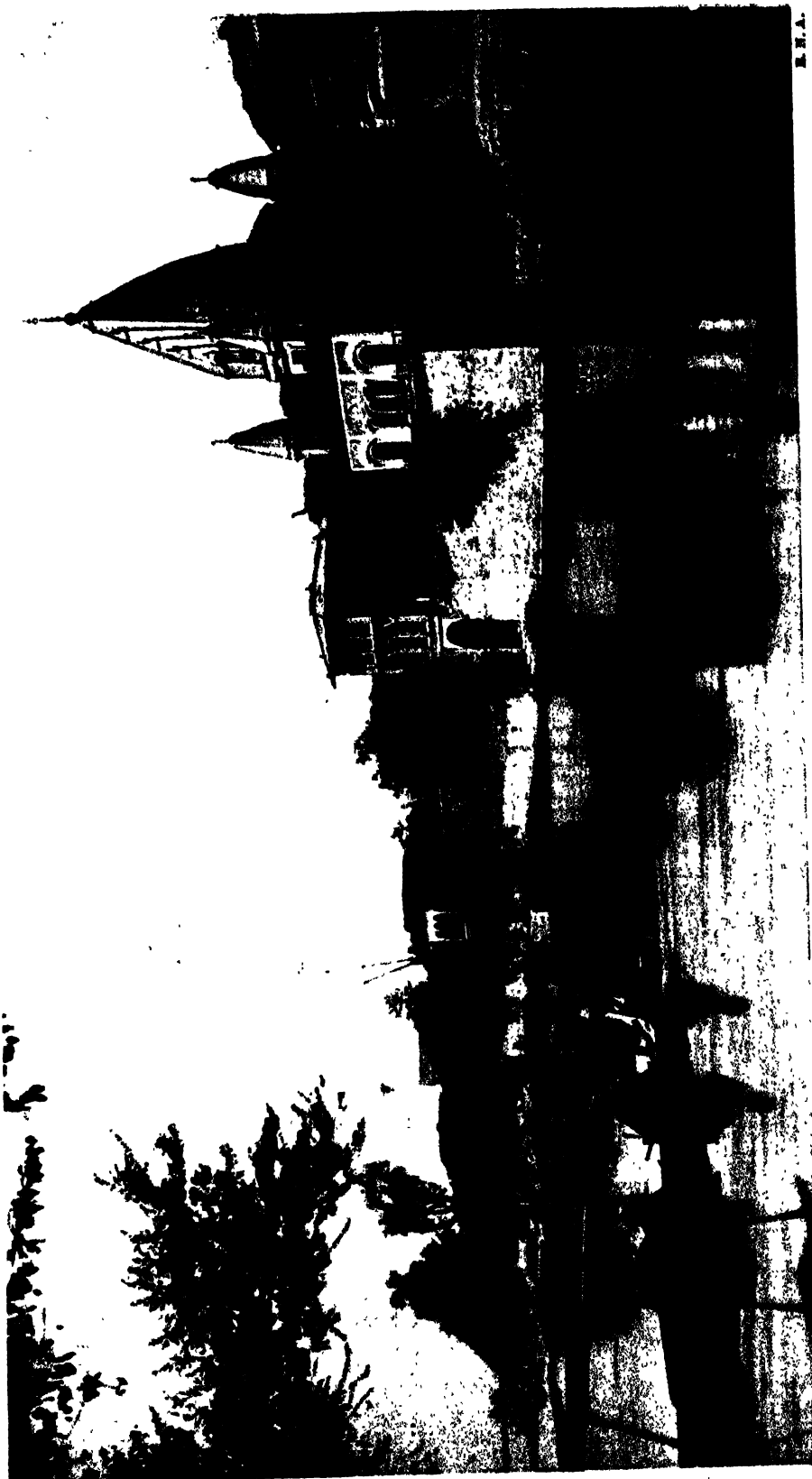
### *Fields of Purple Amaranth*

The temple stands on one of the flat ridges which are peculiar to the plain. In the valley on either side a river appears and disappears among villages in poplar clumps and groves of walnut and willow. In the foreground stands the lonely arch of what used to be the outer chapel. Through it we look down on a well-irrigated plateau, where the fields of purple amaranth and the green and chocolate coloured rice crops stretch away to the yellow hills at the foot of the Pir Panjal. It is a bright world, and bubbling water-



E. N. A.

**ONE OF THE SEVEN QUAIN T WOODEN BRIDGES THAT MAKE BEAUTIFUL THE JHELM RIVER AT SRINAGAR**  
In Srinagar we appreciate the truth of the saying that "distance and is the centre of many thriving trades. At one time the towns- people were largely employed in the manufacture of Kashmir shawls, which were exported in great quantities to Europe, but this industry very dirty and filled with evil smells, so that it is best viewed from a boat on the Jhelum. Srinagar has a population of about 127,000, died out as a result of famine and of the closing of Western markets.



R. M. A.

**IN SRINAGAR, TOWERS, GALLERIES AND EARTH-COVERED ROOFS ADORN THE BANKS OF THE JHELUM**  
No two buildings in Srinagar, it is said, are alike. The majority, have been made into gardens, which add their wealth of colour to from the flimsy houses of the poorer people to the two great and the beauty of the curiously shaped buildings. The canals that run richly ornamented mosques, the Jami Masjid and the Shah Hamadan, through the city—one joining the Dal Lake with the Jhelum, others are of wood, and many are wonderfully carved. Gently sloping roofs connecting various parts of the town—carry much of its traffic.



## THE LOVELY LAND OF KASHMIR

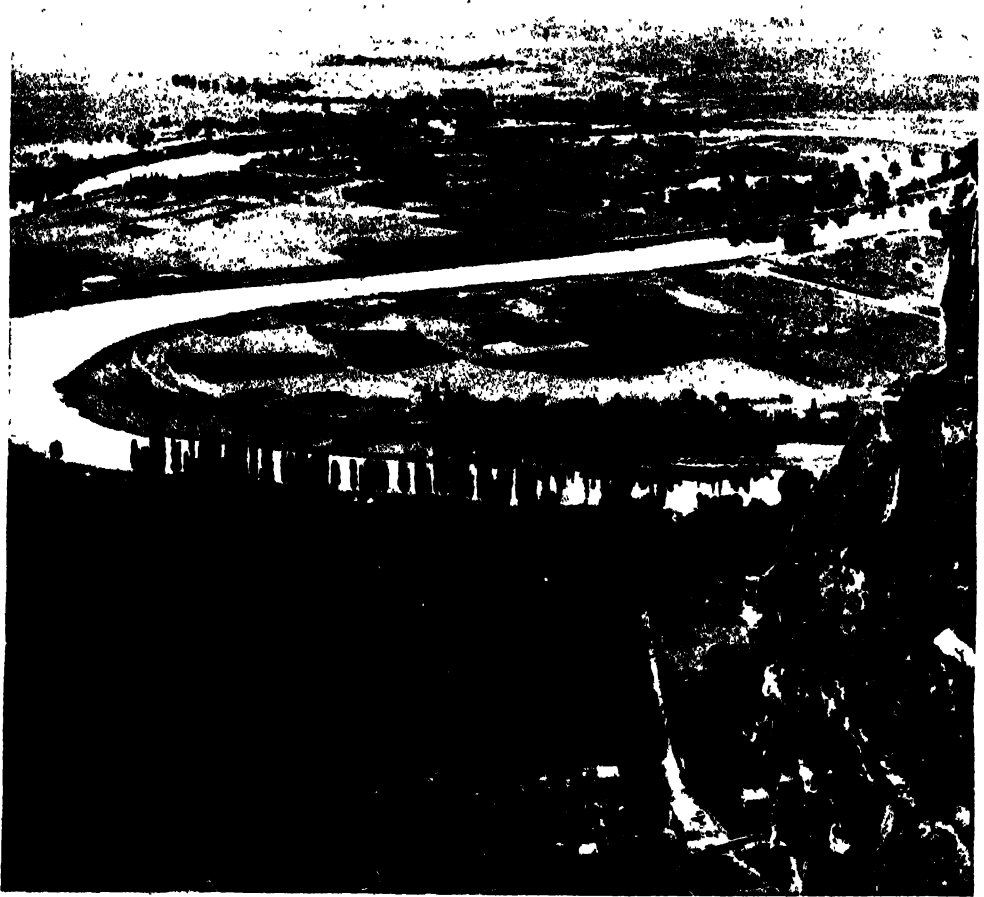
courses chatter among the poplar and chenar trees and run underneath the road, feeding the rice fields and turning little mills, that look like rabbit hutches.

Such is the valley in spring. Summer has other charms. The window of the houseboat opens on to a garden. The Dal Lake then is ablaze with tall, pink lotuses, acres and acres of them, through which a channel is with difficulty preserved for navigation. There is a great deal of talk about the heat, but the temperature seldom rises above 85° or 90° Fahrenheit.

Still, in July or August most of the visitors will have gone to the upland

plateaux, either to Gulmarg or to the camping grounds in the valleys of the northern tributaries of the Jhelum. There is good trout fishing in the side streams preserved by the State; and sportsmen who have time to go farther afield can generally manage to shoot markhor, a wild goat with large horns, ibex or red bear. The season of the black bear and Kashmiri stag is the autumn.

Many people consider this lovely valley to be at its best in the autumn. The mosquitoes go away in September. The October mornings are delightful, a turquoise sky with barely a cloud and a fresh, nipping air which makes you feel



Underwood

### THE WINDING JHELUM SEEN FROM THE "THRONE OF SOLOMON"

Srinagar lies between two hills, one called the "Throne of Solomon," rising about 1,000 feet, on the east, and the Hari Parbat on the north. On the Throne of Solomon is a magnificent temple of stone, which is said to have been founded in extremely ancient times, although the present buildings are probably not more than 400 years old.



#### THE FORT-CROWNED HEIGHT OF HARI PARBAT BEYOND SRINAGAR

At the end of the sixteenth century Akbar, the great Mogul emperor of India, conquered Kashmir, and built the fort on Hari Parbat. Srinagar must have been a prize well worth winning, since in the districts around it are grown quantities of fruit—apples, pears, mulberries, grapes and pomegranates—while valuable timber is to be found.

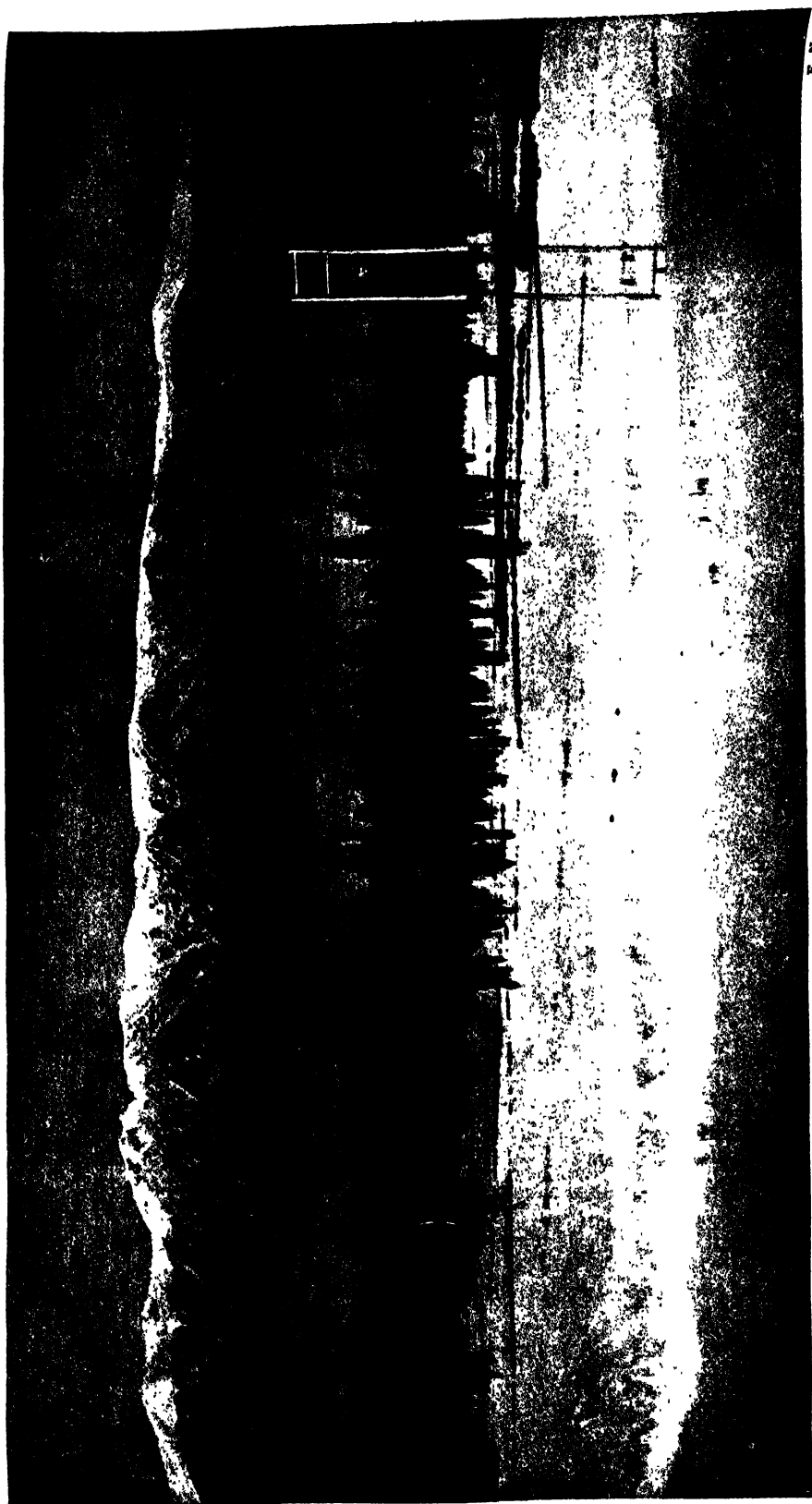
as if you had just bathed. The reed beds on the lake are brown or the colour of sulphur; there is a reddish fringe under the bank, and in the water the surface weeds are tinted. Orchards of apples and yellow, crinkled quinces and cherries are reflected in the lake.

One thing which I have never seen in the valley, but have always hoped to see, is an early fall of autumn snow, when the carpet of crimson and gold chenar leaves sparkles on the glistening, white ground.

Every season has glories of its own, but the Kashmiri, of course, is unconscious of his paradise. Like the sheep or goat he lives blindly, without seeming to notice his surroundings. I was reminded of the

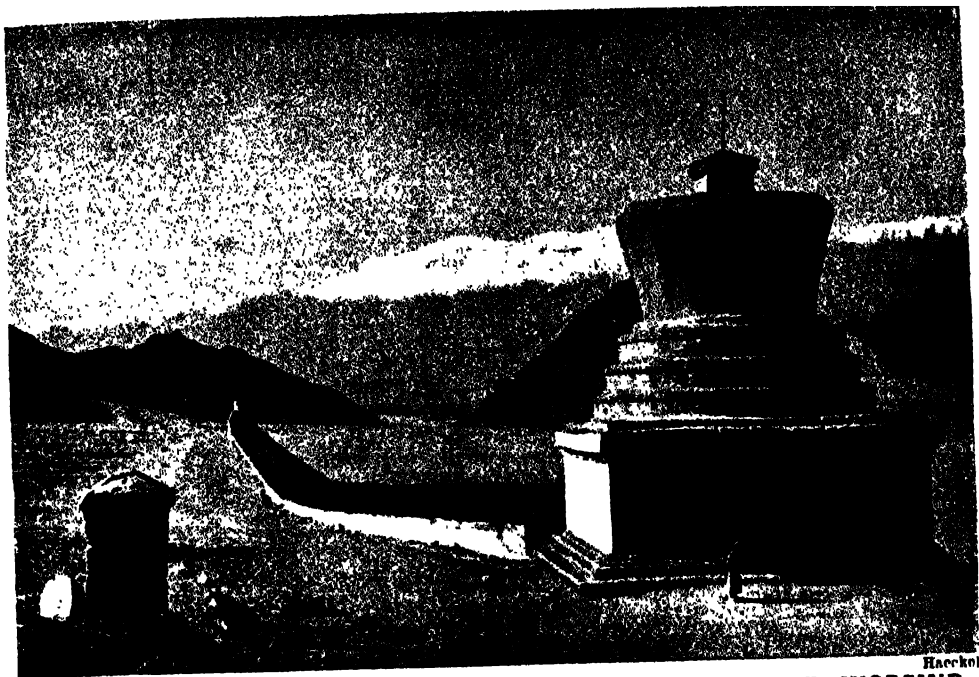
likeness when I watched the sheep being washed at the autumn shearing in Islamabad. They are dragged out of the stream and their hind legs are held up in the air, while the relentless wooden scoup scours their fleeces.

It was a long time since I had watched a shearing, but the look of hopeless helplessness on the faces of the sheep reminded me that I had seen the expression elsewhere. I had noticed that look of meek obedience on the faces of the shearers. The small crowd who followed me up the hill above the sacred spring at Anant Nag, where the priests feed the sacred fish, looked as if they had just been through the same process, except for



**ETERNAL SNOW ON THE MIGHTY MOUNTAIN PEAKS THAT RING THE HAPPY VALLEY OF KASHMIR**  
E. N. A.

The wonder of this great mountain range, the top of which is about the top of Ben Nevis. The snow never melts on the higher range, four miles above the plain, will be appreciated when we remember and lies for nine months in the year even on the lower peaks. The that the Kashmir valley, from which this photograph was taken, is Kashmir valley is about 84 miles long and from 20 to 24 miles broad, itself 6,000 feet above sea level, or more than 1,500 feet higher than and is always freshly green amidst the surrounding snowy masses.



Hackel

### **MILE LONG WALL NEAR LEH BUILT AS AN ACT OF WORSHIP**

The lamas, or Buddhist priests, believe that the righteous can worship Buddha constantly by means of certain devices. In page 252 we saw how prayers could be said by the wind; here is a wall carved with invocations to Buddha repeated again and again. The builders of the wall hoped to benefit in a future life by their pious work.



Bushby

### **MOUNTAIN SLOPES CLOTHED IN PINE WOODS NEAR SONAMARG**

Situated high in the Sind valley, and surrounded by Alpine meadows covered with flowers and dotted with groves of maple and pine, Sonamarg was once the principal health resort of Kashmir. Wild life abounds in the mountain valleys—ibex, black bear, species of chamois and goats, and birds of the pheasant and partridge families.

## THE LOVELY LAND OF KASHMIR

*the cleansing. The old-tin-shop man in the bazaar at Islamabad, the dried mushroom seller and druggist, the loafers in the street, the washermen standing barefooted in the icy stream, looked as if they were only waiting to be clutched and sheared like the sheep. This, in fact, is exactly what has happened to them, or if not to themselves, to their ancestors, time out of memory.*

The Kashmiri is born in bondage. The peasants are physically a robust race, hillmen in muscle at least, but they have been practically slaves too long. The people of the valley have been down-trodden for centuries, the prey of invaders. Three generations of security under British

*protection have not given them the appearance and bearing of free men.*

Even under the Sikh government men were forced to work without getting any pay, and the cultivator was deprived of three-fourths of the produce of the threshing floor. The Pathan who came before the Sikh was a more exacting taskmaster. It was a pastime of his to tie up the mild Kashmiris in grass sacks and drown them in the Dal Lake. He thought no more of lopping off the head of a Hindu than that of a thistle. The descendants of the Kashmiris who fled from their paradise still live in the Punjab.

Those bad old days have passed, but the Kashmiri has become the prey of parasites



**STREET CORNER IN ISLAMABAD, ONCE THE CAPITAL OF KASHMIR**

Islamabad's importance has gradually declined, and it is now only the second most important town in Kashmir. It stands on a hill above the Jhelum, and still has some beautiful buildings, among them an old summer palace. The town was once known as Anant Nag, after its holy reservoir, which still contains swarms of sacred fish.

## THE LOVELY LAND OF KASHMIR

of his own race. I remember an exceptional harvest one August, the crops standing solid and compact right across the valley. Yet in this fat and fruitful land, rice, the staple food of the country, was costing as much as if there were a famine. This was due to the locking up of the great granaries—in which the grain had all been stored away after it had been harvested by the farmers—by the middlemen, who buy the grain from the farmers and then sell it to the shopkeepers.

The Kashmir government was keeping the people of Srinagar alive by doles of grain issued at cheap rates to half the population of the city. But I wondered at the patience and submissiveness of the Kashmiri who had not discovered a more rapid and ready way of dealing with the middlemen.

There are disadvantages, it seems, in living in a paradise. The Kashmiri has become what he is because of the country in which he lives. He might have been sturdy and independent but for the attractiveness of his land to the robber. The former paradise of Eden on the Euphrates has little to offer now except a few date palms and pomegranates, but its inhabitants are at least perfectly able to take care of themselves.

Even they, however, when their land was a paradise were conquered again and again, as we may read in the chapter "In the Garden of Eden," pages 577-596.

It is to be hoped that as time passes by, and given settled conditions, the

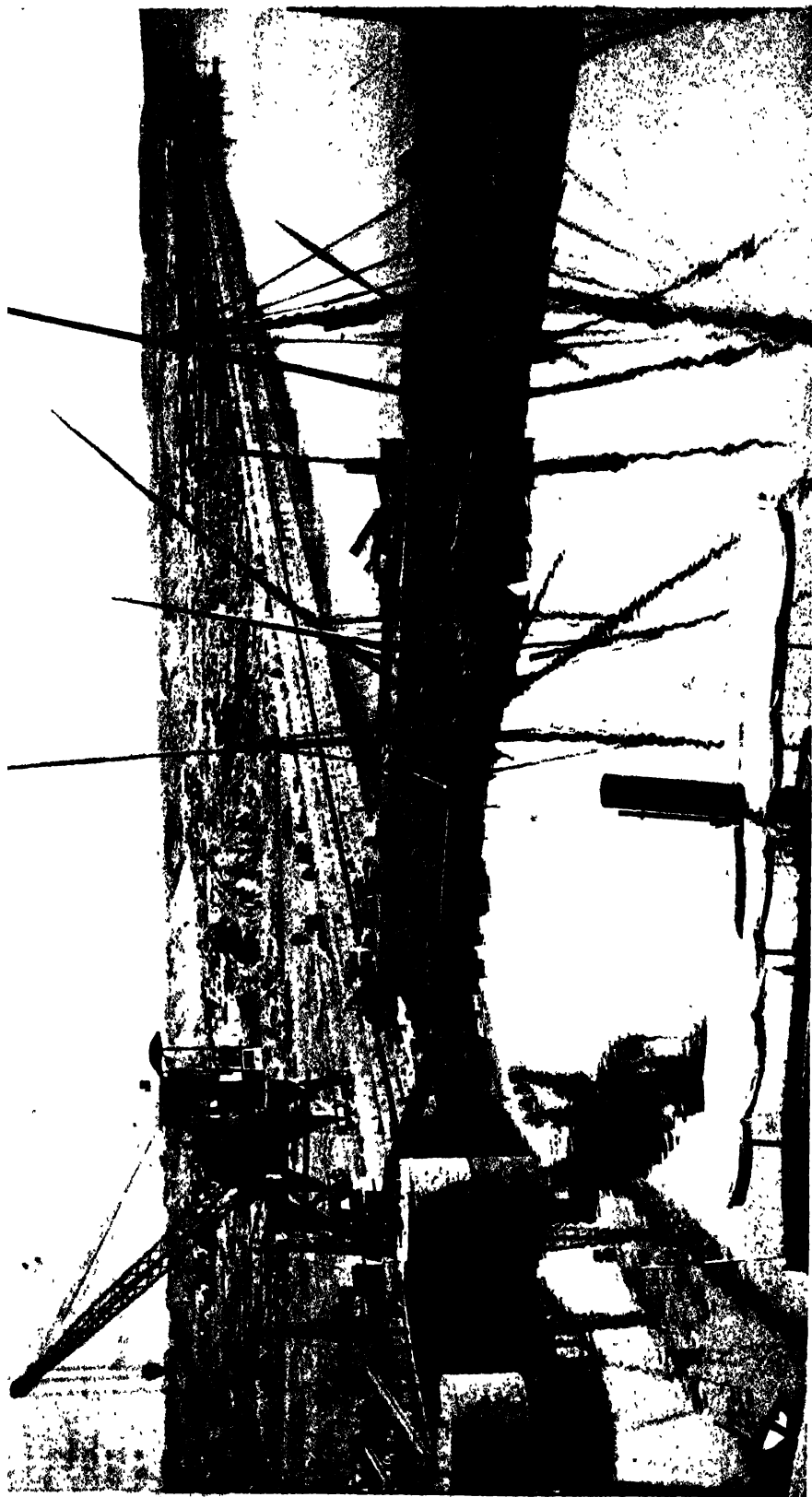


FOURSON

### DAUGHTER OF THE HEADMAN OF A VILLAGE

This Kashmiri lady assumes a dignity equal to her father's importance. He enjoys great authority in the village, since he acts as landlord and tax-collector, and can deprive any villager of his house and land.

Kashmiris will recover some measure of their self-respect, and will endeavour to make their beautiful and fertile country something more than a playground for visitors from all parts of India.



E. N. A.

### GREAT DAM AT ASSUAN THAT CONTROLS THE NILE FOR THE BENEFIT OF EGYPTIAN FARMERS

The Nile floods regularly every year, and the amount of the increase of its waters never varies much. This is fortunate for the Egyptian farmers, who depend on the river to water their crops, since there is only a small rainfall in Egypt. Irrigation canals proved inadequate here the interior of the dam, which is very well filled with water.

# Where Water is Wealth

## HOW MAN BRINGS MOISTURE TO THE THIRSTY EARTH

It is so easy in a country like ours to turn on the tap that we are apt to forget that water, which we take as a matter of course, is in many parts of the world very nearly worth its weight in gold. Before some people can get water to quench their thirst they may have to work very hard, and in order to irrigate their crops they must toil for days in the burning sun. In this chapter we shall see how people of different countries have watered the earth for centuries, and how great engineers have imprisoned rivers and, by this means, have turned tracts of desert into green fields.

Most atlases contain some maps dealing with the world's climate.

They show which countries are hot and cold at various times of the year, they show the prevailing winds, the warm and cool ocean currents and the distribution of rainfall over the earth's surface. Among these maps we generally find one showing what is called the Mean Annual Rainfall, or the average amount of rain that falls during the year in various parts of the world.

From such a map we learn that the greatest amount of rain usually falls in the northern half of South America, in Central Africa, in China and in the peninsulas and islands lying between China and Australia. What such a map does not tell us is whether this total amount is produced by very heavy rain during one particular period of the year, or by less heavy rain falling at all seasons. In order to learn this, we must look at a map showing the quantity of rain which falls during various seasons.

Such a map will give us the earth's land surface divided into three groups of regions, two large and one small. The small one will be found to correspond roughly to the regions where the annual rainfall is scanty, and in it will be found the great deserts, such as the Sahara of northern Africa, the Gobi desert of central Asia and the great desert of Australia.

### *Always Rain Somewhere on Earth*

One of the large divisions has rain at all times of the year. This includes practically the whole of Canada, the eastern half of the United States, all Siberia and all Europe except Spain, Italy and Greece.

With these lands are included the valley of the Amazon River and the east coast of Brazil, a small part of Central Africa and the islands which lie between Asia and Australia.

There remains the second of the large divisions. Here we find a quite different and much more complicated state of affairs. The countries included in this section, instead of having their rainfall distributed more or less evenly over the whole of the year, get it all at once during a "rainy season," the rest of the year being a "dry season" with little rain.

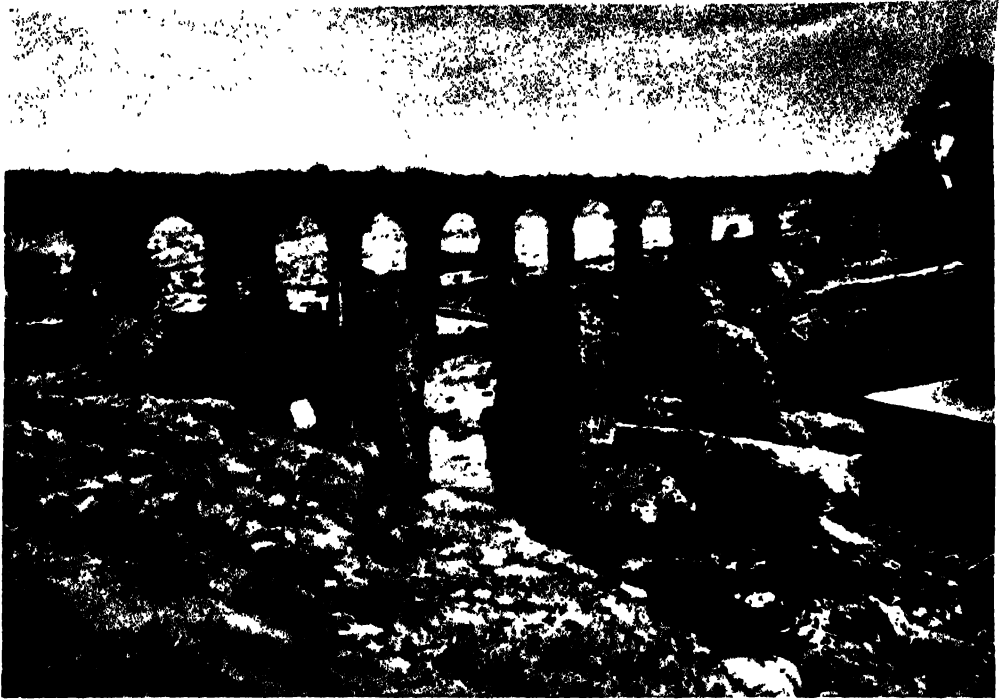
### *India's Regular Rainy Season*

India, for example, has three seasons. The "rains" in certain parts last from May to October, but the dry season is partly cold and partly hot.

India is a peninsula extending south from the earth's greatest mass of land, namely Asia. This vast region is very hot in summer and very cold in winter. As warm air is light and tends to rise, its place must be taken by air moving in from the neighbouring areas, which means that the wind always blows towards a warm region. As during the summer months the hottest area is in central Asia, to the north-east of India, the prevailing winds in this season blow over India from the south-west.

These winds have come over the warm Indian Ocean, and are therefore laden with moisture, which they deposit in the form of very heavy rainfall when they meet with the Western Ghats, the hills which fringe the western coast of India, and especially with the great wall of the Himalayas. These winds, known as the





E. N. A.

#### MOULDERING ARCHES OF A ROMAN AQUEDUCT NEAR SMYRNA

The Aqueduct of Paradise is a typical though small example of the waterways built by the Romans in most of the lands that they occupied. Constructed of stone, it bears on its topmost arches a channel lined with cement and gently sloping, so that water which was intended mainly for drinking purposes might be carried along it over valleys.

south-west monsoons, are therefore rain-bringing winds, and a rainfall map of India for the period from May to October will show that, along the west coast and over the great plain that extends from the Punjab to Bengal along the foot of the Himalayas, there is a rainfall which would leave the land nearly five feet under water if it did not soak into the dry earth or was not drained away.

The winter months show a great contrast to this. Central Asia then is very cold, and the prevailing wind now blows from the cold land to the warm Indian Ocean. This is the north-east monsoon, and as it has travelled over the dry desert region of central Asia, it brings little or no moisture, with the result that during the six months from November to April the rainfall over the Indian peninsula amounts hardly anywhere to as much as five inches.

In most parts of India the rainfall is usually sufficient for the crops, but about every eleven years the monsoon arrives late, and there is a more or less serious drought, which means famine to millions

of small farmers. The most terrible famine was that of 1877, when nearly five million people are recorded to have perished in southern India alone.

In view of the possibility of such a disaster occurring again, it has been found worth while to construct canals for the purpose of carrying a water supply to the threatened districts from other regions in which the rainfall is never known to fail, and which, therefore, have a surplus to dispose of for the benefit of less fortunate areas. Here, then, we have modern engineering science in the service of the world's oldest industry—namely, agriculture, and that in a country which possessed one of the earliest civilizations. The result is that India now has one of the best canal systems in the world.

A canal system constructed to serve the needs of an agricultural population has two different things to do. It has to store and to distribute water. Four of our pictures show various methods of raising water from wells, pools or canals, so as to enable it to irrigate the small fields.

## WHERE WATER IS WEALTH

These methods are quite effective so long as the wells, pools and canals contain water. This is where the engineer steps in with his reservoirs and canals. The reservoirs store the water for use in a drought, and the canals convey it to districts which are threatened with a shortage.

As agriculture is the world's oldest industry, so naturally man's earliest engineering works were planned and carried out with the object of giving the farmer that water supply which was a necessity to him. There are, indeed, instances of such engineering works on a large scale in quite early times.

Effective as primitive methods are for small areas, they are wasteful when

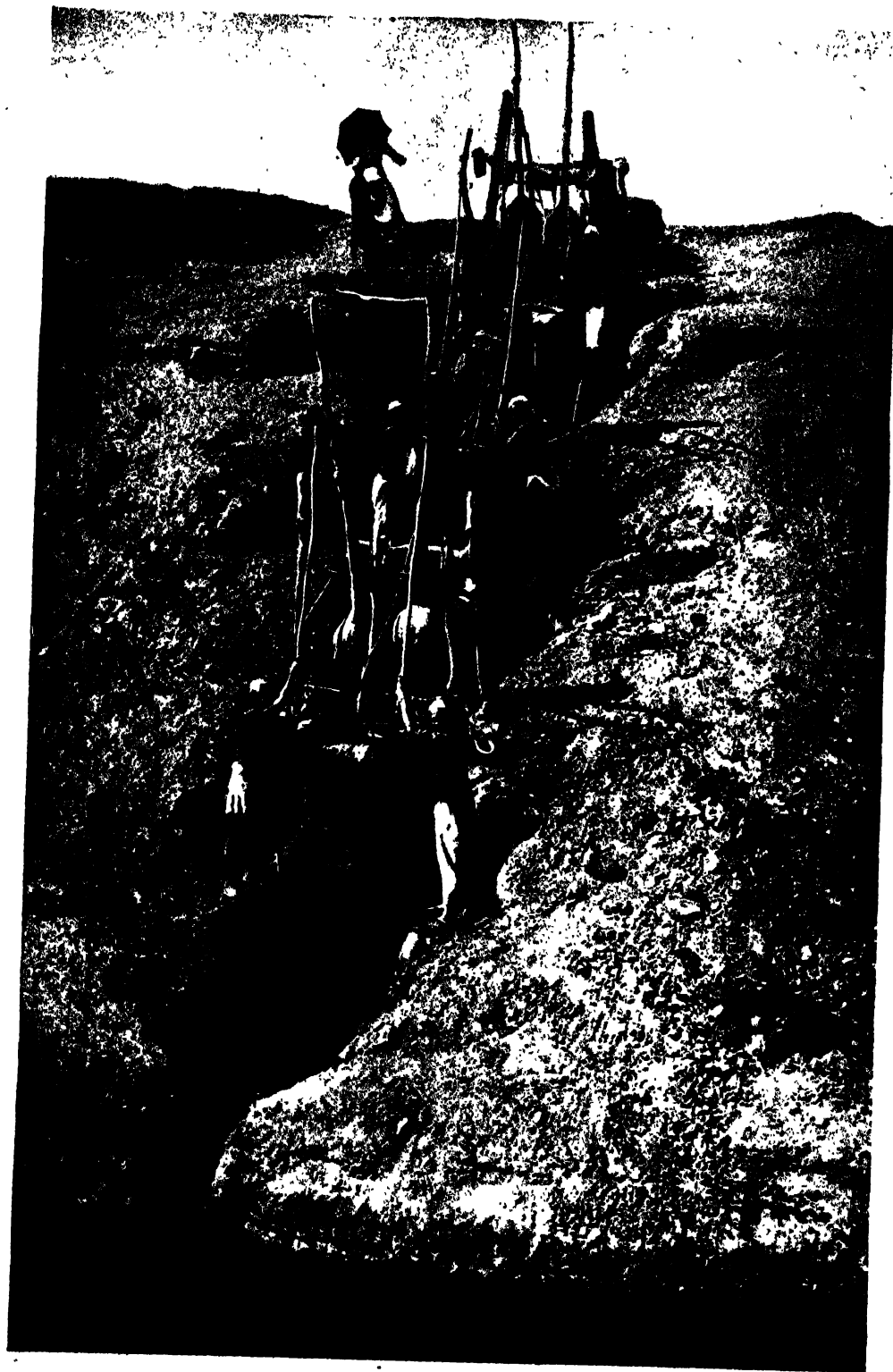
applied to extensive tracts of country. India, as we have seen, is the best example of how modern engineering is able to achieve what primitive methods fail to do—namely, to make certain that even in a time of drought a sufficient supply of water shall be available.

Let us take another example—Egypt. Here we have a country of which the only densely inhabited part is the valley of a single river, the Nile. On either side of this valley is the desert. Moreover, rain is practically unknown even in the valley itself. Agriculture is possible only in consequence of the annual flooding of the Nile, which not only waters the soil, but also spreads over the land the fertilising



*Fryer*

**WATER DRAWN FROM THE WELL IN INDIA BY MEANS OF WEIGHTS**  
In dry districts, where wells are often very deep, this machine helps the natives to draw water. A bucket is fastened to each of the ropes that these two men are holding, and the thin end of the long pole is then pulled downwards to lower the bucket into the well. It is raised again by the weight at the thick end of the pole.



**PRECIOUS NILE WATER SLOWLY BROUGHT TO THE THIRSTY LAND** McLeish

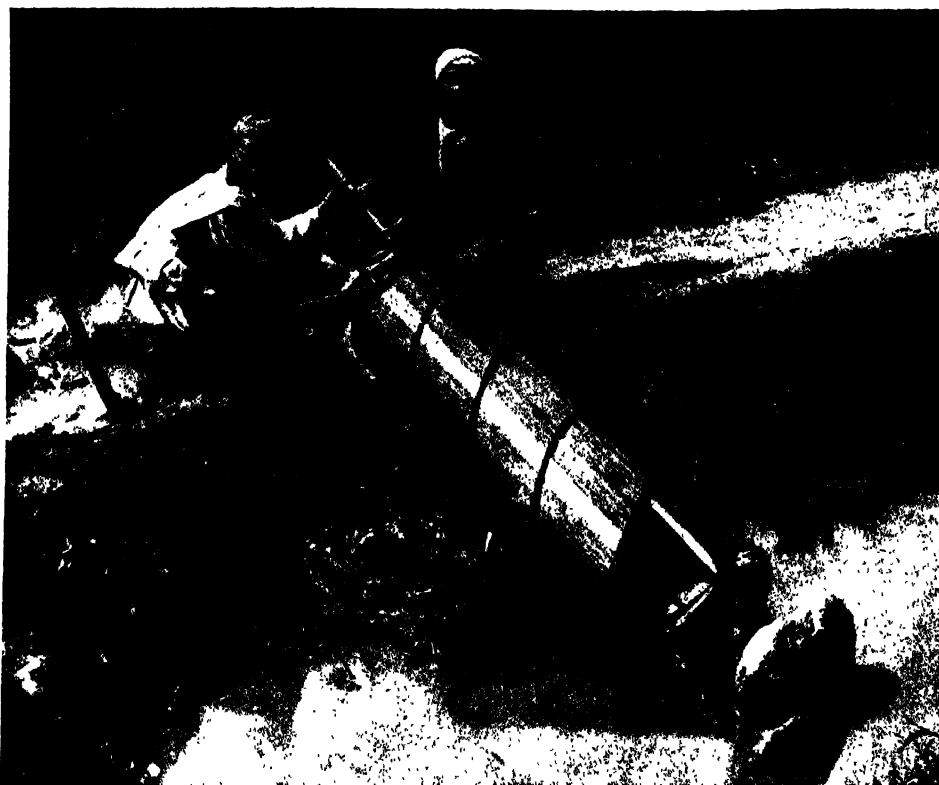
The Egyptians have a machine called a shaduf for raising water, which is similar to the device shown in page 707, that is used in India. It is of great value to the farmer in carrying water from river or canal to the level of his fields. Where the bank is high, a series of shadufs, which raise the water step by step, is erected.



M. N. A

### **HARD-WORKING SEE-SAW THAT HELPS THE INDIAN CULTIVATOR**

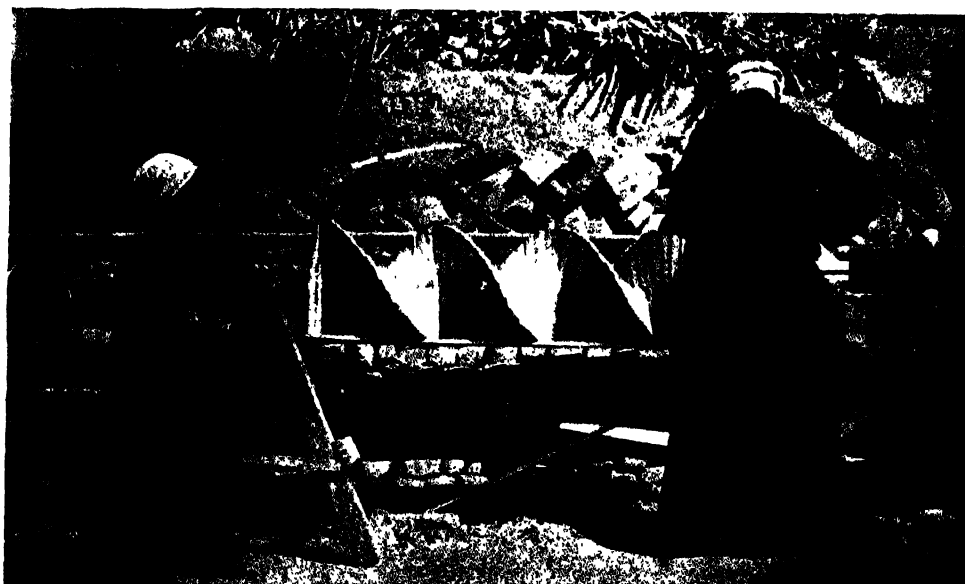
In those parts of India in which the rainfall is slight, the denkli, a kind of see-saw, is largely used to draw the life-giving water for the fields from the wells. The beam of the denkli has a bucket at one end and a weight at the other, like the shaduf, and a man at the point of balance, by rocking it to and fro, can raise and lower the bucket.



E. N. A.

# **LOW-LYING FIELDS OF THE NILE DELTA ARE EASILY WATERED**

The Nile delta produces great crops of cotton and rice, and is watered all the year round by means of numerous canals which are filled by the river. To raise water to fields that are not more than five feet above the level of the river, the fellah, or labourer, finds the Archimedean screw both efficient and easy to work.



Cutler

# **MAKING THE SCREW THAT WAS AN ANCIENT GREEK INVENTION**

The Archimedean screw, believed to have been invented by the ancient Greek mathematician Archimedes, consists of a cylinder containing a spiral screw, like the one on which this Egyptian carpenter is at work. The lower end of the cylinder is immersed in water, when the screw is made to revolve and so raise a constant stream of water.



#### **PATIENT DROMEDARY AS A DRAWER OF WATER IN PALESTINE**

Round and round goes the dromedary, pulling the great shaft which works the well-wheel. A chain on which are a number of wooden vessels is fastened to the wheel, and each time that it revolves these are dipped into the water, filled, and emptied into some receptacle. Sometimes a donkey takes the place of the dromedary at the shaft.



#### **OLD WATER-WHEEL STILL IN USE NEAR MERIDA IN SPAIN**

Like many things in Spain, this water-wheel, or noria as the Spaniards call it, suggests that we are in Africa instead of Europe. The pole that we see on the right of the small boy turns a huge, clumsy cog-wheel. This works the water-wheel, to the rim of which are attached jars to bring the water up from the well.



Galloway

# **SIAMESE WOMAN ON A TREADMILL IN THE UPPER MENAM VALLEY**

To a Siamese woman of the lower classes work is not a case of stitch, stitch, stitch, but often of tramp, tramp, tramp. Where there is not sufficient rainfall to flood the rice-fields, a common happening in many districts, women drive water over the thirsty crops from irrigation ditches by a paddle-wheel worked with a kind of treadmill.

mud brought down from the mountains of Abyssinia.

Like India, Egypt has three seasons, but they are measured, not by temperature or rainfall, but by the height of the river. From April to June the river is very low, but where water is obtainable for irrigation, cotton, millet, rice, sugar-cane and vegetables can be grown. Here, as in India, we find very primitive appliances used for the actual watering of the fields.

The Archimedean screw is really useful only when, as in the Nile delta, the water has to be raised not more than a few feet. The shaduf, which is in use where the fields are at a greater height above the river, requires more persons to operate it and is very slow, so it can only be employed in a country where labour is cheap and time not very valuable.

Early in June the river begins to rise, reaching its greatest height late in

September—the flood season. The river overflows its banks, and water is plentiful. The third, the winter season, lasts from December to March. The lands covered by water in the flood season now bear winter crops of wheat, barley, clover, lentils and beans.

The Nile flood never fails altogether, though it may vary in height, with the result that in a year of a low flood the higher areas may get no water at all. This difficulty has been met from very early times by the construction of reservoirs, which store water collected in a year of high flood to be used when needed. But there has still been something for the modern engineer to do. The great Nile Dam at Assuan has been of enormous advantage to the country, by storing water to be used for irrigation purposes from April to June, when the Nile is low. Mesopotamia is another instance of a



#### CHINESE METHOD OF IRRIGATION THAT GOES WITH A SWING

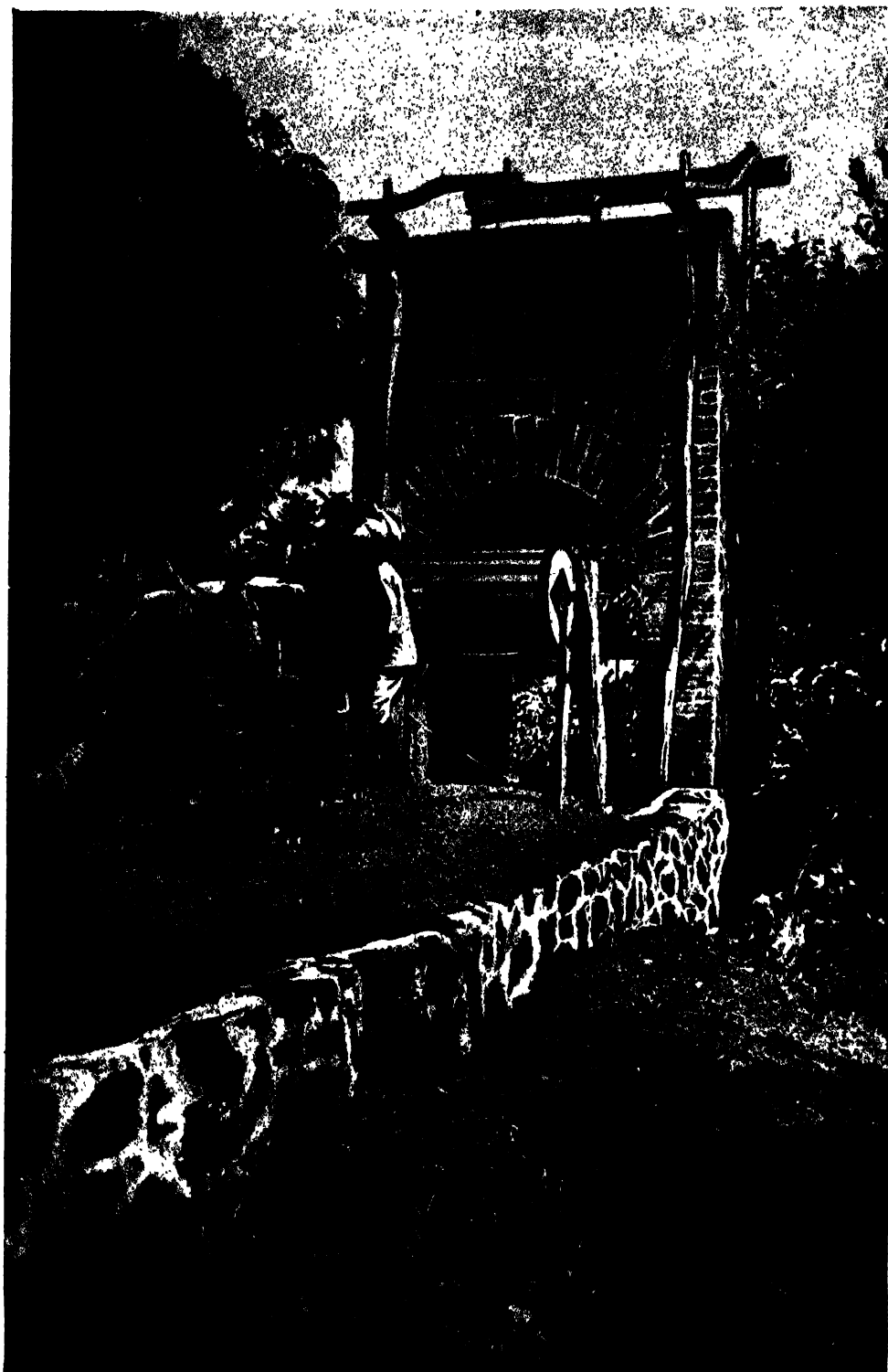
There could be no simpler way of watering fields that lie alongside a stream than that employed by the Chinese farmer. Two labourers swing a shallow bucket on ropes into the stream with a smooth, rapid motion, fill it with water, and swing it back to land to jerk its contents into the ditch that carries the water through the fields.



#### WORKING THE TREADMILL IS A FAMILY AFFAIR IN CHINA

Rice needs a great deal of moisture during the growing season, and the Chinese farmer who has a water-wheel driven by a treadmill to water his crops is fortunate compared with those who have to use a bucket like that in the top photograph. The farmer's family helps in the work of irrigation and does not find a spell on the treadmill unpleasant.





Comyn

#### **OX-POWER FOR RAISING WATER FROM AN INDIAN BUNGALOW WELL**

Every Indian bungalow has a well, and oxen may be used to raise the heavy leather bucket. Here, the bucket rope is attached to the yoke of a pair of oxen. When the bucket has been lowered into the well and filled, they walk along a causeway, which is as long as the well is deep, and so bring the water to the surface.



Forbes

**ANIMAL WATER-DRAWERS IN AN OASIS OF THE ARABIAN DESERT**  
Oxen, walking along a causeway of definite length, also raise the buckets from the well at Shagra in Arabia, one of the worst watered countries in the world. Most of the streams are dry for months every year, and the rainfall is very scanty, yet even here a certain amount of agriculture can be done with the help of water from wells.



Roud

### **MASSIVE BARRAGE ON THE RIVER EUPHRATES AT HINDIEH**

The crops of upper Mesopotamia depend for irrigation on the Euphrates. At Hindieh the river divides into two branches, and until the barrage was built here to send an increased supply of water down the Hilla branch, which passes through districts made fertile by canals, much water was wasted by flowing down the Hindieh branch.



Underwood

### **REVOLVING JARS THAT BRING WATER TO THIRSTY FIELDS**

Turned by hand, this water-wheel is invaluable to the Mexican farmer during a drought. Water is scooped from the well by jars, and emptied into a small, wooden trough, from which it flows into channels that conduct it among the crops of wheat, barley and Indian corn. The water supply, however, is too small to allow much agriculture.



Barber

#### **WATER-RAISING DEVICE THAT IS SIMPLE AND EFFICIENT**

This Indian cultivator uses a pole, so balanced that it becomes a kind of seesaw, on which is hung a long, narrow trough, to flood his small fields. The end of the trough nearest to the man is lowered into the pool and so is filled with water. The pole is then pushed upwards, to tilt the trough and pour the water over the soil.



Christie

#### **PART OF THE EXTENSIVE IRRIGATION SYSTEM OF KHIVA**

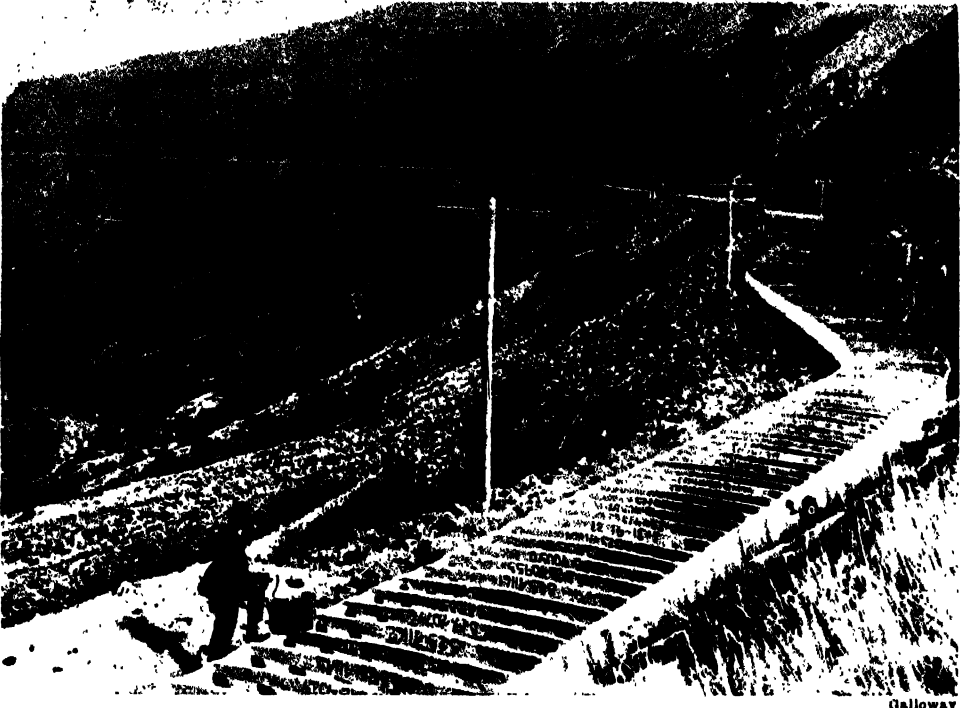
The sandy soil of Khiva in Turkistan is watered by a network of canals fed by the River Amu-Daria. To raise water from one of these canals to a field on a higher level, however, it is necessary to use a water-wheel. To drive this, a horse walks round and round a track, turning a shaft connected with the water-wheel by large cogs.



Galloway

# **RICH LAND COVERED WITH PROFITABLE TREES AROUND THE DAM HEAD ON THE RIO COBRE CANAL.**

As the rainfall in Jamaica, though often very heavy, is extremely uncertain, scientific systems of irrigation greatly benefit the planter. The Rio Cobre Canal, from which run many smaller channels and ditches, is fed by the Rio Cobre River, and waters more than 16,000 acres of agricultural land. Owing to the abundant supply of water that can always be taken from the canal when it is needed, rich crops of bananas, sugar, coconuts, oranges, and guinea grass grow on this land. The planter pays fixed rates for water he uses from the canal.



#### **HIGH-LINE CANAL THAT BRINGS WATER TO DRY PLAIN-LANDS**

Before this flume, or high-line canal, was built to draw water from its upper course, the Yakima River was useless to the farmers of the Yakima Valley, since here it flows through a deep gorge. In the photograph the canal looks like a series of steps, but the "steps" are merely bars across the top of the channel along which the water flows.



#### **DITCH, FED BY THE RIVER GOULBURN, AT TATWA IN AUSTRALIA**

Near Nagambie, a weir has been built across the River Goulburn, a tributary of the Murray. A large volume of the river-water is directed down two channels by the weir, to water dry districts so that fruit may be grown. One of these channels fills the Waranga Reservoir, from which extend many irrigation canals and ditches.

## WHERE WATER IS WEALTH

very ancient civilization in a country which is largely dependent upon a river, or rivers, for its water. The Hindieh barrage on the Euphrates is not only an irrigation work, but is intended also to keep the main river-channel navigable.

For a modern irrigation system on a very large scale we must go to the United States. The lower Mississippi valley is a district which has the rainfall necessary for the cultivation of cotton. But west of that, in such states as Arizona, New Mexico and others, is a mountainous region, whose many rivers mostly flow in deep gorges and, therefore, are not easily made available for purposes of agriculture.

The photograph of the Yakima River shows how that stream has been tapped in the upper part of its basin, so that its water, instead of being allowed to run to waste in the gorge, which can be

seen on the left, can be conveyed to areas which otherwise would be mere deserts.

Australia has an irrigation scheme in the Goulburn River district of Victoria. Australia's problem is of a very difficult kind, owing to the fact that it has no really big rivers, and that its rainfall is very unreliable.

One of the most highly developed irrigation systems in the world is to be found in north Italy, in the great plain of Lombardy. The Po River and its tributaries, since they take their water from the Alps, would be flooded to a dangerous extent when the Alpine snows melt in the spring, and be almost dry during the summer, if it were not that the elaborate system of canals, large and small, serves the double purpose of preventing disastrous floods, and of storing for use during the summer the water which would otherwise run to waste in the spring.



**RICKETY, OLD, DISUSED WATER-WHEELS AT HIT ON THE EUPHRATES**

Although huge quantities of grain and fruit were once grown in Mesopotamia, it now produces very little of either. Extensive irrigation may, however, give great fertility to its soil. When we compare the modern barrage at Hindieh shown in page 716 with these old water-wheels, we realise what the engineering of to-day is capable of doing.

# Isles of Unrest

## AMONG THE FIERCE TRIBES OF THE PHILIPPINES

A huge collection of islands, great and small, numbering more than seven thousand, the archipelago of the Philippine Islands, which lies due south of Formosa, has been the scene throughout its history, written or traditional, of fighting, piracy, rebellion and unrest. Yet the people were highly civilized when our level of culture was that of the ancient Britons. Overrun successively by Malays, Chinese and Spaniards, the islands were taken over by the United States of America in 1899, but it was not until after several years of hard work and fierce fighting that the Americans were able to establish peace and order.

Though now somewhat tamed, the Filipino is still a picturesque figure.

BOUT the name "Philippines" there has ever hung a fascinating air of romance. The islands—over seven thousand in all—form a Pacific archipelago, situated in what is called the China Sea, and in the course of centuries they have belonged to several races. In early days Malay pirates descended upon them, and this seafaring race eventually overran the islands. As a consequence Malayan influence is very marked in the different tribes.

Later on, the Chinese, the great traders of the East, steered their junks to the Philippines and gained a firm hold. Repeated attempts were made to drive out the Chinese immigrants, and wholesale massacres of them took place; but in the end they remained, to mix with the native population and to establish themselves more firmly.

At the present day there are many thousands of Chinese in the Philippines, and these carry on by far the larger proportion of trade; indeed, they are reckoned among the wealthiest members of the community. A curious feature is that, although there has been much inter-marriage between the Chinese and the natives, their half-breed descendants display very few of the excellent business qualities of the Chinaman.

### *Coming of Spanish Sea-Rovers*

In the sixteenth century the Spanish sea-rovers, fresh from their South American and West Indian conquests, turned to ravage this Pacific group, and there followed a long tale of wars and settlement. What is important to remember

at this point is the fact that the Filipino natives were not a race of primitive, uncultured savages when the Spaniards arrived upon the scene. They were a warlike people, with a high standard of civilization derived from their neighbours.

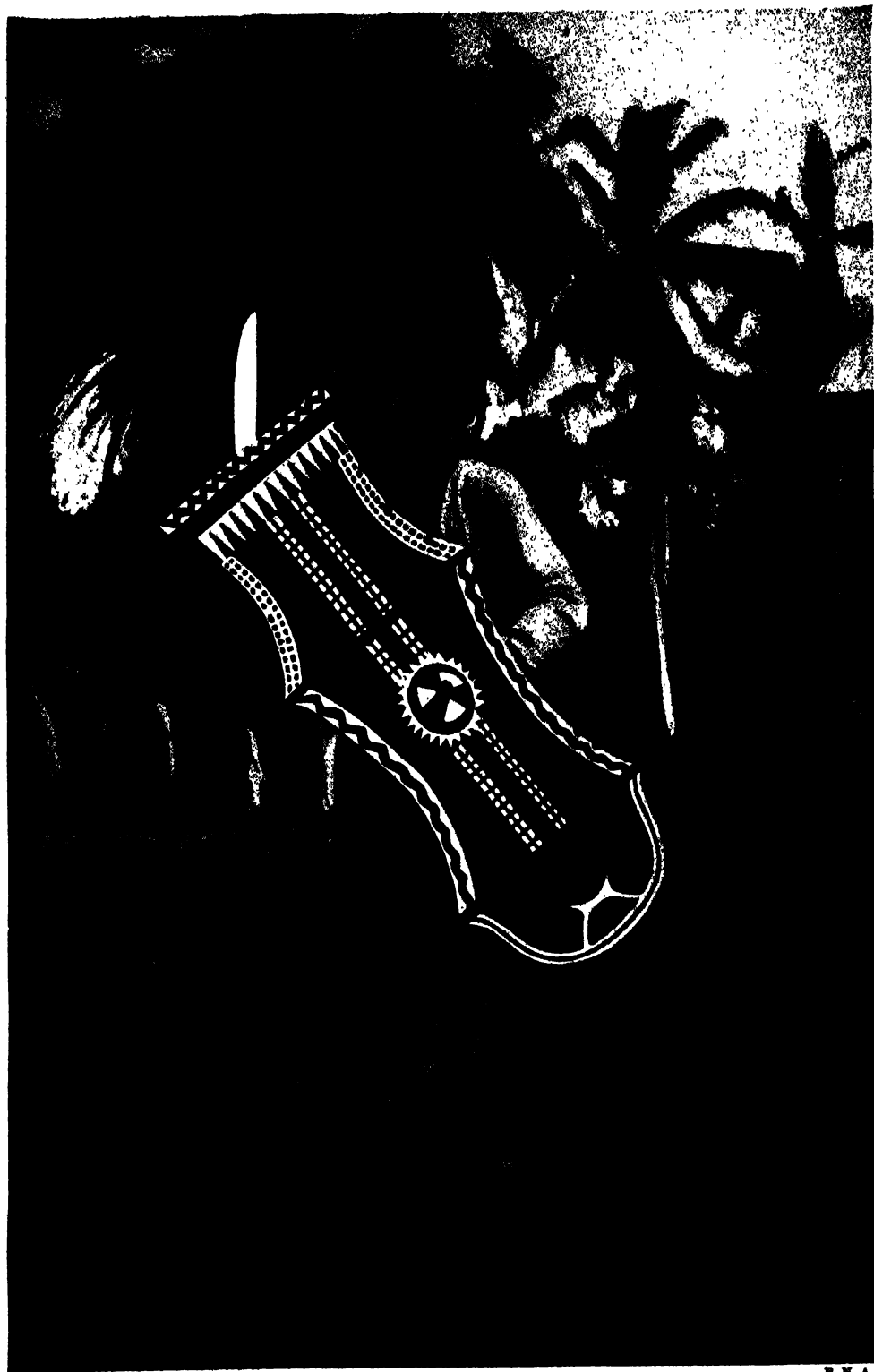
### *Early Filipino Civilization*

They knew the use of gunpowder even before its introduction into Europe, and, in their town of Manila, had a factory for the production of bronze cannon and firearms. At a time when the Early Briton was going about in skin garments and painting his body with woad, the Filipinos were widely known in the East for their markets, in which silks, cotton and other cloths, precious stones and jewelry, the work of skilled silver-smiths, weapons of all kinds and a variety of agricultural products were offered for sale. As a glance at a map will show, the Philippines occupy a position of considerable importance in their quarter of the globe, for they lie directly on one of the great trade routes of the world—viz., that to the Far East.

In addition to their skill in metal-working and other crafts, the Filipinos enjoyed a reputation for being poets, musicians and literary people of no mean order. They possessed a written alphabet and accumulated valuable libraries of books. Unfortunately for succeeding generations, most of these treasures were ruthlessly destroyed by the Spaniards in their progress with fire and sword through the islands.

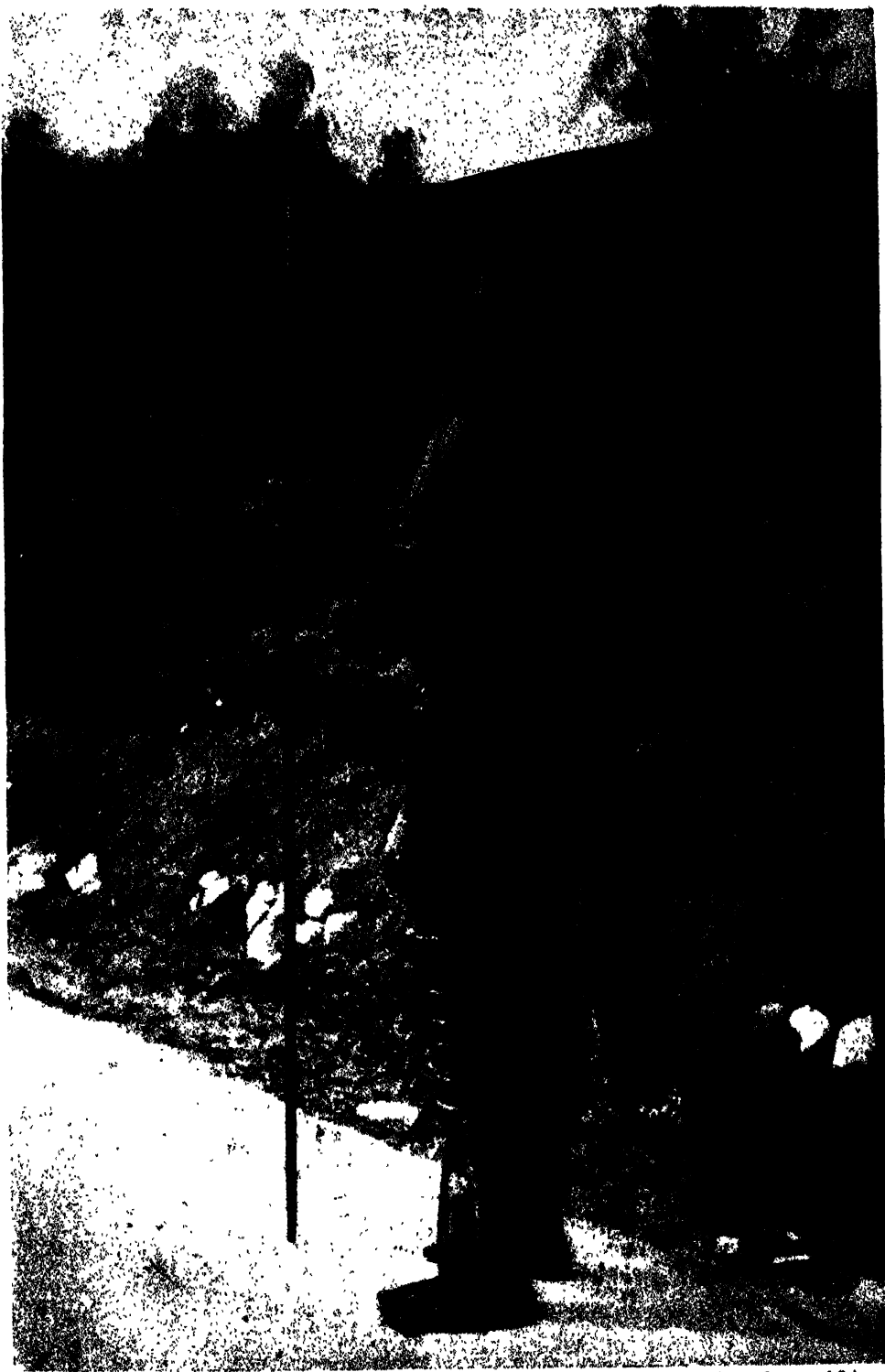
An immediate result of the white conquerors' invasion of the Philippines





E. N. A.

**DARK-SKINNED MORO WARRIOR WITH SWORD AND PAINTED SHIELD**  
Although, by far the greater number of the inhabitants of the Philippines are Christians, there are still many pagan tribes and also a race of Mahomedans, the Moros. These are a very fierce and warlike people, living in eastern Mindanao and the Sulu Archipelago, who for centuries terrorised their neighbours by their ruthless slave raids.



Philippine Bureau of Science

# **YOUNG "MOUNTAIN MAN" OF THE HIGHLANDS OF NORTH LUZON**

The Igorots, or "mountain people," are one of the wild tribes of the most northerly island of the Philippines, and have only recently been broken of their gruesome custom of head-hunting. Even when the Spaniards came to the islands in the sixteenth century these people were clever metal workers. They also grew crops on artificial mountain terraces.



**TIRING WORK UNDER A TROPIC SUN**

The cultivation of rice is an important part of the work of the Visayan Filipinos, who are the greatest agriculturalists of the community. Here we see two stalwart natives threshing the grain against upright stones.

was that many of the native tribes retreated before them into the mountains of the interior. It is the descendants of these peoples who at the present day represent the original inhabitants of the islands. They are known as Negritos, Igorots, Gaddanes, Itavis, Ifugaos and by other names.

We have a picture of Philippine history preserved for us in the capital, the city of Manila. For here, in fact, there are three Manilas. That of the original Malays, with its wooden, thatched huts, its "carabaos," or water-buffaloes, drawing the carts and

otherwise employed, and its quaint fishing boats—a city that has altered but little since the earliest times. Secondly, the Manila of the Spanish conquests of the sixteenth and seventeenth centuries, with its beautiful churches and convents, its solidly built walls and gates and its houses of a Moorish style of architecture; and, lastly, the Manila that has sprung up since American protection was extended to the islands.

In this modern quarter we see everything that is up-to-date, in violent contrast to the picturesque but decaying past—electric trams running through the streets, motor-cars, well constructed roads, steel bridges and imposing business houses, stores and other buildings.

Of the peoples who form the population of the Philippines nowadays it is impossible to select any particular type as being representative of the islanders. They may be divided roughly into the Christian and non-Christian peoples. Among the former, who are, strictly speaking, the Filipinos, are those of mixed Spanish and native origin.

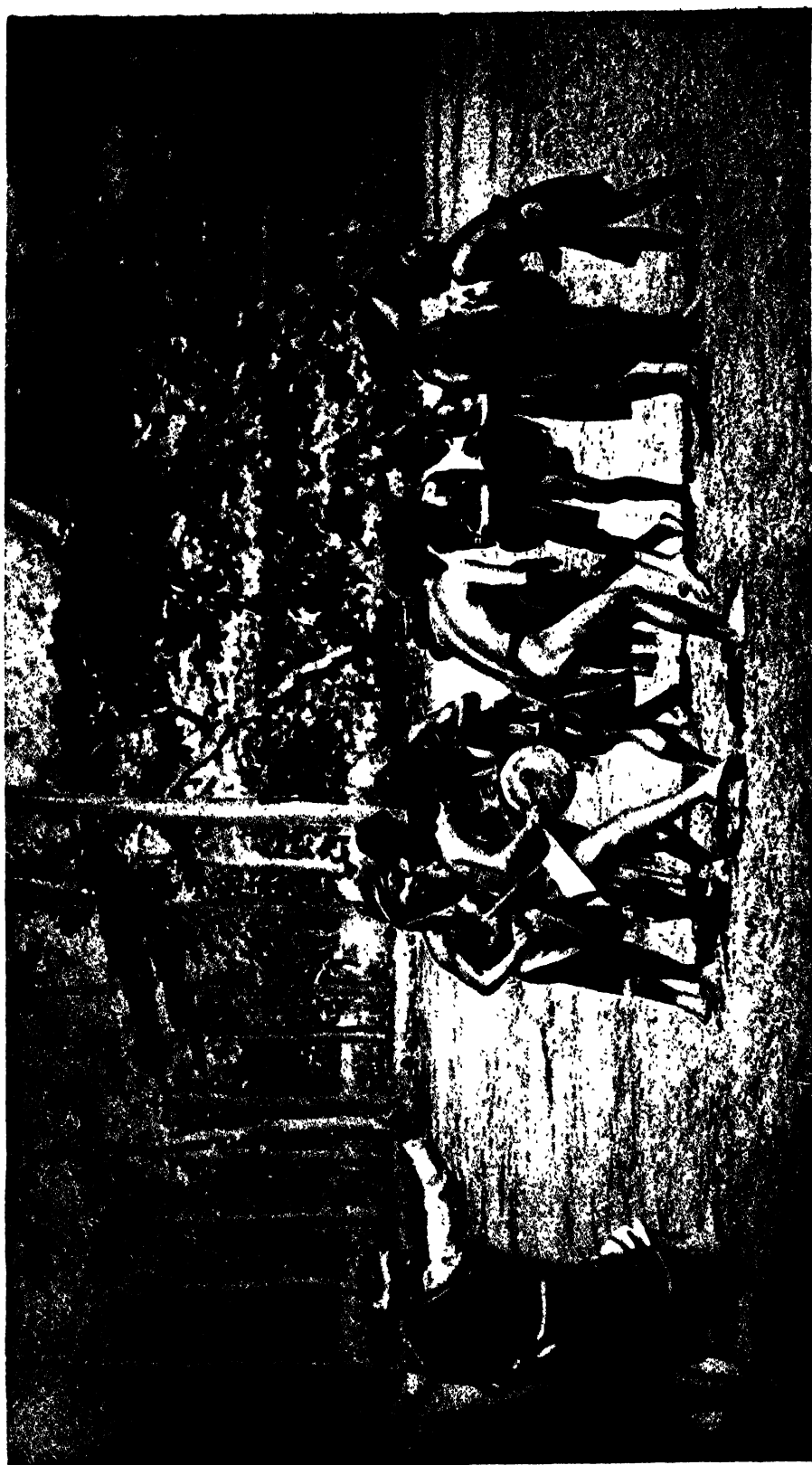
The majority wear European costume, but Spanish influence is shown in many ways—in the neckcloth of the peasant, known as the "pañuela," the long, sweeping dresses worn by many of the women, and in the wide sleeves so suitable to the tropical climate. It was the Spaniards who brought the Christian religion into the islands, a host of friars and monks following the soldiery. To them, also, is due the establishment of most of the schools, colleges and other educational buildings that are to be found. To put it in round figures, if the population of the islands totals over ten millions,



**FLOATING COCONUTS DOWN THE RIVER TO MARKET AT MANILA**  
 Coconuts are a very important item in the trade of the Philippines, for they provide copra, oil and coir fibre. In Luzón Island the unhusked nuts are formed into great rafts and floated down the river to Manila, which is the capital of the Philippines. Like the Chinese, many Filipinos live all the year round upon the water in covered boats.



**UNGAINLY BEAST OF BURDEN THAT FILIPINOS PUT TO MANY USES**  
 The carabao, or water buffalo, is easily tamed, and though slow, is very strong. It will not work for more than two hours, however, without a mud bath. The carabao is used as a draught animal, and the female provides milk from which the Filipinos make a kind of butter called ghi. The flesh is eaten, and the hide makes good leather.



**NOWADAYS THE BONTOC-IGOROT WAR-DANCE HAS LOST ITS FORMER GRUESOME AND HORRIBLE SIGNIFICANCE** The Igorot people have, through their cruel and warlike character, become divided into a number of separate communities, with distinctive languages and customs. One custom, however, was, until hunting expeditions the savage warriors performed a dance of triumph, recently, shared by them all—that of collecting human heads. The beating gongs and uttering wild cries, around their horrid trophies.



**SPLIT BAMBOO CANES ARE DEFTLY TURNED TO MANY USES BY THE SKILFUL FINGERS OF FILIPINO WORKERS** Chairs and lampshades, sofas and work-baskets—household furniture of all kinds—are made of bamboo in the Philippines. Filipinos are the days of the Spanish conquerors and after, these people, who had the civilized natives of the islands, people who have been Christian for even then considerable culture, inter-married with the Spaniards. There is also a certain amount of Chinese blood in their veins.

nine millions are Christians, the rest—the so-called non-Christian element—including the Mahomedan peoples of the southern islands, such as the Moros, who are believed to be descended from Mahomedan Dyaks of Borneo, a sprinkling of Hindus, Chinese half-breeds and the pagan tribes of the interior, some of whose names have been mentioned already.

### *Head-Hunters of Luzón*

Prominent among the tribes in the large island of Luzón are the Igorots. A fine race physically, they are of a dark-copper colour, with flat noses, thick lips and high cheek-bones. Their broad shoulders and well-formed limbs give indication of great strength. The Igorots, however, are an indolent people, disinclined to accept the newer methods of civilization, in which they differ somewhat from the more warlike Gaddanes of the north-west provinces. These people are similarly of fine physique, with long hair worn down to the shoulders in Igorot fashion, and they are quite as dark-skinned.

The Itavis of the same island are lighter in hue, and live, like their neighbours, by hunting and fishing, and on such other natural food as the bush provides. The Ifugaos, another Luzón tribe, have the reputation of having been head-hunters, like many of the other islanders. Their villages are on the mountain-sides and in passes difficult of approach. Like the Gaddanes, they are pugnacious, as the United States troops found when they came in conflict with them. It says something for the American administration that a number of the Ifugaos have been formed into a well-drilled, efficient body of constabulary.

### *Connexions with Japan*

The Tinguians, another tribe, although pagans, possess no little intelligence. They are a well-proportioned people, fond of music and personal adornment, the latter taking the form of tattooing. The Igorots are given to this practice, but in the case of the Tinguians it is supposed to be a relic of Japanese ancestry. The fact that they

wear their hair in a tuft upon the crown, a fashion of Japan, tends to support this.

In the large island of Mindanao, to the south of the Philippines, we find the Moros, the Mahomedan people to whom reference has already been made. These people spread over the whole of the island and over the sultanate of Sulu to the south-west. Both to the Spaniards and the Americans the Moros have proved most troublesome, for they are closely allied to the Malays and are fierce fighters.

Their villages, mostly pile-built, lay along the coasts of the island of Mindanao and among the islets of the Sulu archipelago. In their canoes they made frequent raids upon other tribes, gaining for themselves a name of dread.

A robust people of medium height and dusky bronze in colour, with the lank black hair and the keen eye of the Malay, the Moros are in general superior to the other Philippine natives. They are quick to adapt themselves to Western ways, and are now sober and peaceable. They have acquired a greater taste in dress than most other natives.

### *Gay Colours of the Moros*

We may see a well-dressed Moro arrayed in tight-fitting breeches of a light colour, decorated with rows of buttons up the sides; a waistcoat which fastens up at the throat, a close-sleeved jacket reaching to the hips, and with a turban on his head. Moro women are fond of gay colours. They wear dresses of brilliant scarlet and green, and they deck themselves freely with jewelry.

Another large native community is that of the Visayans, who are the agriculturalists of the islands. They are a peaceful folk who cultivate coconut plantations and rice fields in the central islands of the group, such as those of Panay, Samar and Negros. Within this area are the best sugar and hemp producing lands. With this tribe must be included the Tagalogs, far inferior in numbers but the superiors of the Visayans socially and politically. The Tagalogs have been a Christian people since Spanish times, and, being of Malay



Philippine Bureau of Science

**THIS ILONGOT GIRL** from Nueva Viscaya, in the centre of Luzón Island, was only too pleased to display her many hued splendour and her wealth of necklaces to the photographer. Until a short while ago no woman of this tribe would marry a man until he had brought her the head of one of his enemies, which was buried under her future home.





Philippine Bureau of Science

#### HOUSE FOR THE "MAIDEN LADIES" OF AN IGOROT VILLAGE

The Igorot people, unlike other Philippine tribes, build their houses on the ground in mountain fastnesses. Their dwellings are thatched with grass and have usually two storeys, the ground floor being a combined bed-room and living-room, the upper, a kitchen and store-room. Special houses are built for unmarried men and women.



Kadel & Herbert

#### HATS TO SHADE DARK FACES FROM THE TROPIC SUN

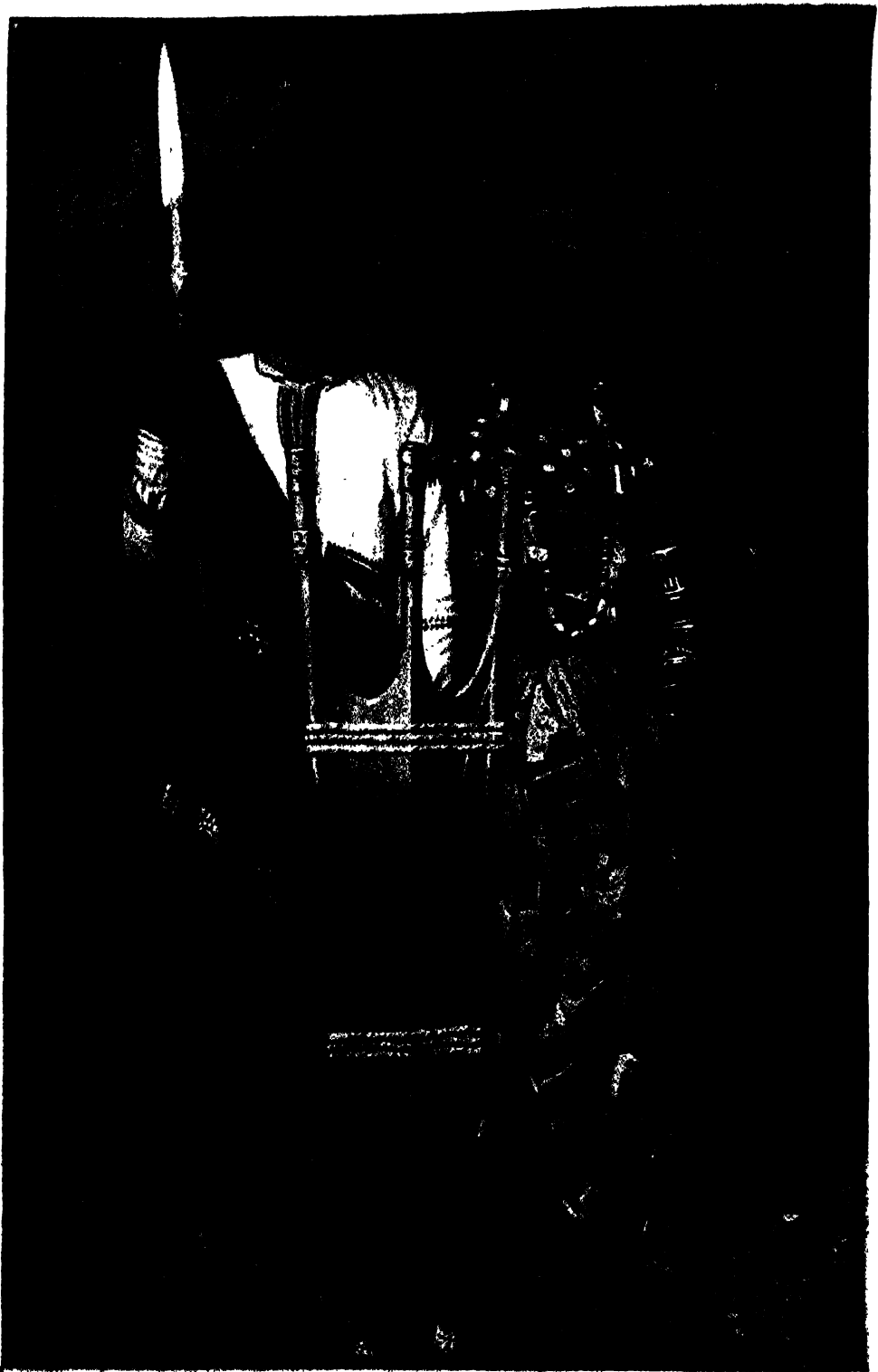
These two Filipino girls are busily employed plaiting hempen fibres into hats. On the ground before them we can see the block they use to shape the crown, and also two nearly finished hats, that only require binding round the brim. The men we see in page 727 are wearing a very different type of sun-hat—with no crown at all.



*Philippine Bureau of Science*

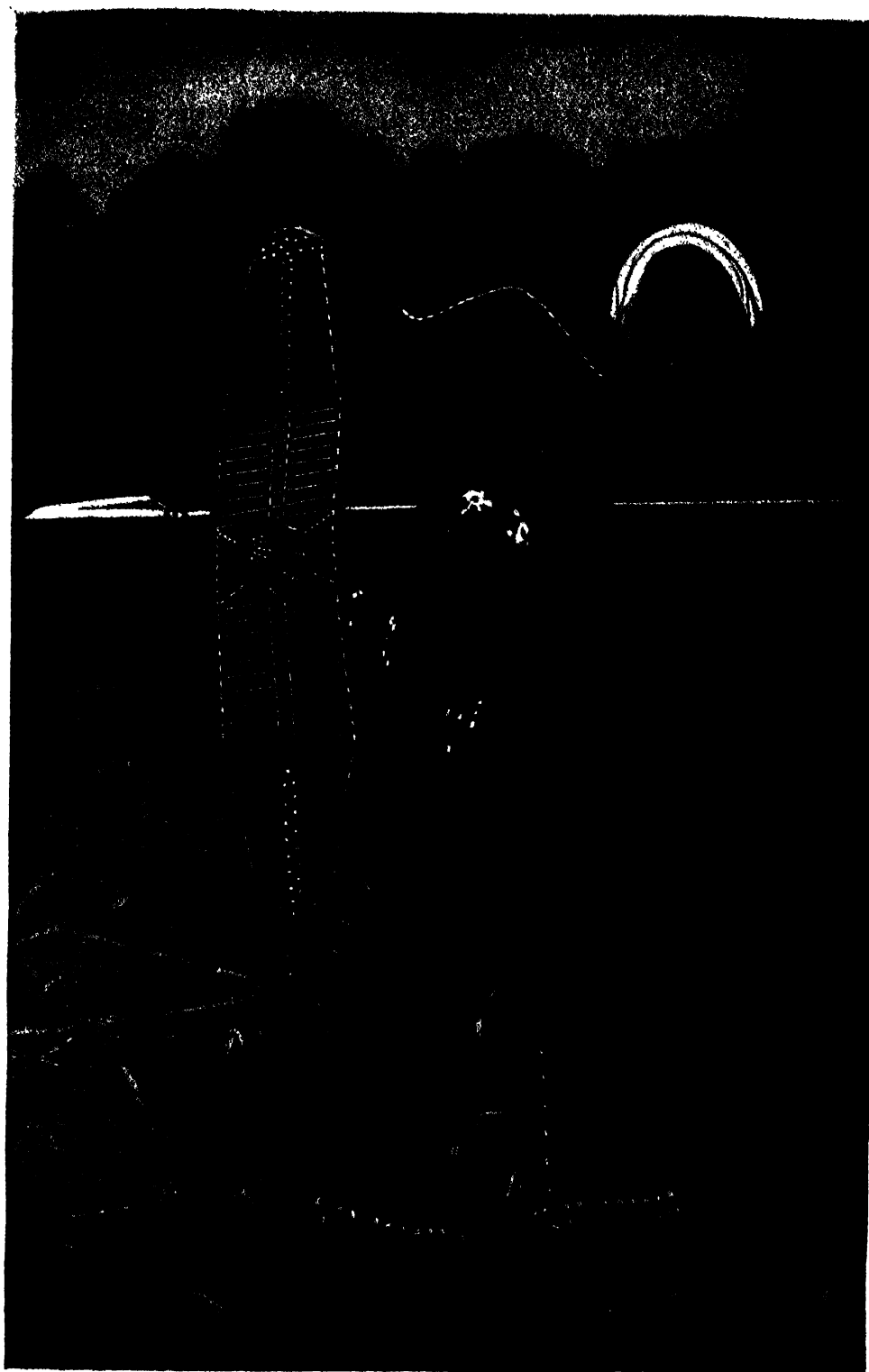
#### **WHERE HOUSES ARE BUILT FOR SAFETY ON THE TOPS OF TREES**

In western Mindanao, along the Agusan River, dwell the Manobo tribe, who were once all slave-raiding pagans, though many of them are now Christians and have taken to wearing European clothes. A house built high in the air like this seems very unsafe to us, but in this wild country a house on the ground would be too easily entered by hostile tribesmen.



Philippine Bureau of Science

**KALINGA PEOPLE** were once all "head-hunters," waging constant warfare with the neighbouring villages and carrying home as trophies the heads of those they had killed. This chief, who is accompanied by his gaudily-dressed wife, certainly looks very fierce, with his spear and queer-shaped shield, but he is a Christian, and now partly civilized.



Philippine Bureau of Science

**THIS MANDAYA WARRIOR** is one of a wild tribe that dwells in the south-west and west of Mindanao. The tribe is divided into groups, each ruled by a "bagani," who formerly to gain his position had to have killed a great many people. Mandaya women are fair-skinned, and were often carried off by the slave-raiding Mahomedan Moros.

## ISLES OF UNREST

stock, they were for centuries well in advance of many tribes of the Philippines. Some of the most prominent men among the Filipinos have come from the Tagalogs.

Lastly, and lowest in the scale, come the Negritos, or Aëtas, a small, dark people who range through the larger islands. They are of low intelligence, scarcely being able to count, and are a spiritless and docile race. Scientists believe these Negritos to be the real, aboriginal, Philippine natives. In appearance they resemble the Papuan, their skins being sometimes as black as a negro's and their hair being curly and matted, thus differing from that of the other tribes of the islands.

### *Nest of Native Trouble-Makers*

These, then, the so-called Filipinos, were the people whom the Americans were called upon to tame. Spanish rule in the islands was never happy with such persistent trouble-makers as the native tribes. When, in 1896, there was a great rising, an effort to shake off the shackles of Spain and declare Filipino independence, the Philippines became a veritable hornets' nest. Soon the United States came to the assistance of the rebels, and the Spaniards were forced to relinquish all their territory with the exception of the city of Manila, and even that was eventually surrendered to the American troops.

### *Tangle of Swamp and Jungle*

The next step of the Filipino leader, Aguinaldo, was to proclaim a republic, and a government was formed. Then came misunderstandings with the United States and a three-years' war broke out. One of the most bitter risings that took place occurred in the island of Samar, the third largest in the group and the most fertile. Here a Filipino leader named Pablo took the field, proclaiming what was in effect a holy war. In this island the progress of the white troops was greatly impeded by the difficult nature of the country.

Samar's coast of mangrove swamps may be taken as typical of the worst kind of Philippine scenery. The sea runs inland at many places for a number of miles

before a crossing from one point to another can be negotiated without the use of boats. "Only those who have tried to wade through a mangrove swamp," says the late Mr. Portal Hyatt, "can realise what it means. Words are hopelessly inadequate to express it. You are never less than knee-deep, and often waist-deep, in the ghastly grey slime. You pull yourself along by clutching the snake-like black roots, whilst abominable stinking marsh gases bubble up around you."

The jungle of a Philippine island—where such exists—is as bad as can be encountered in most of the wild corners of the globe. It is summed up in "mountains and mud," with an endless tangle of bush thrown in. The steaming heat makes passage along the forest trails and across the quagmires exceedingly arduous. That the United States soldiers had great trouble in coping with these natural difficulties will be understood. But victory eventually went to their superior forces and the risings were suppressed.

### *Problem of the Filipinos*

While a love of freedom has always been a characteristic of the Filipinos, and they have plunged into war over and over again to assert their independence, their most marked national trait is indolence. In the past this lethargy has acted against any enterprise on their part. As a worker the Filipino must be pronounced untrustworthy. He has little or no loyalty to his master, just as, in war, he shows no chivalry towards his enemies. Any kindness extended to him is regarded as a sign of weakness, and it is really only by stern measures that he can be made into a useful citizen.

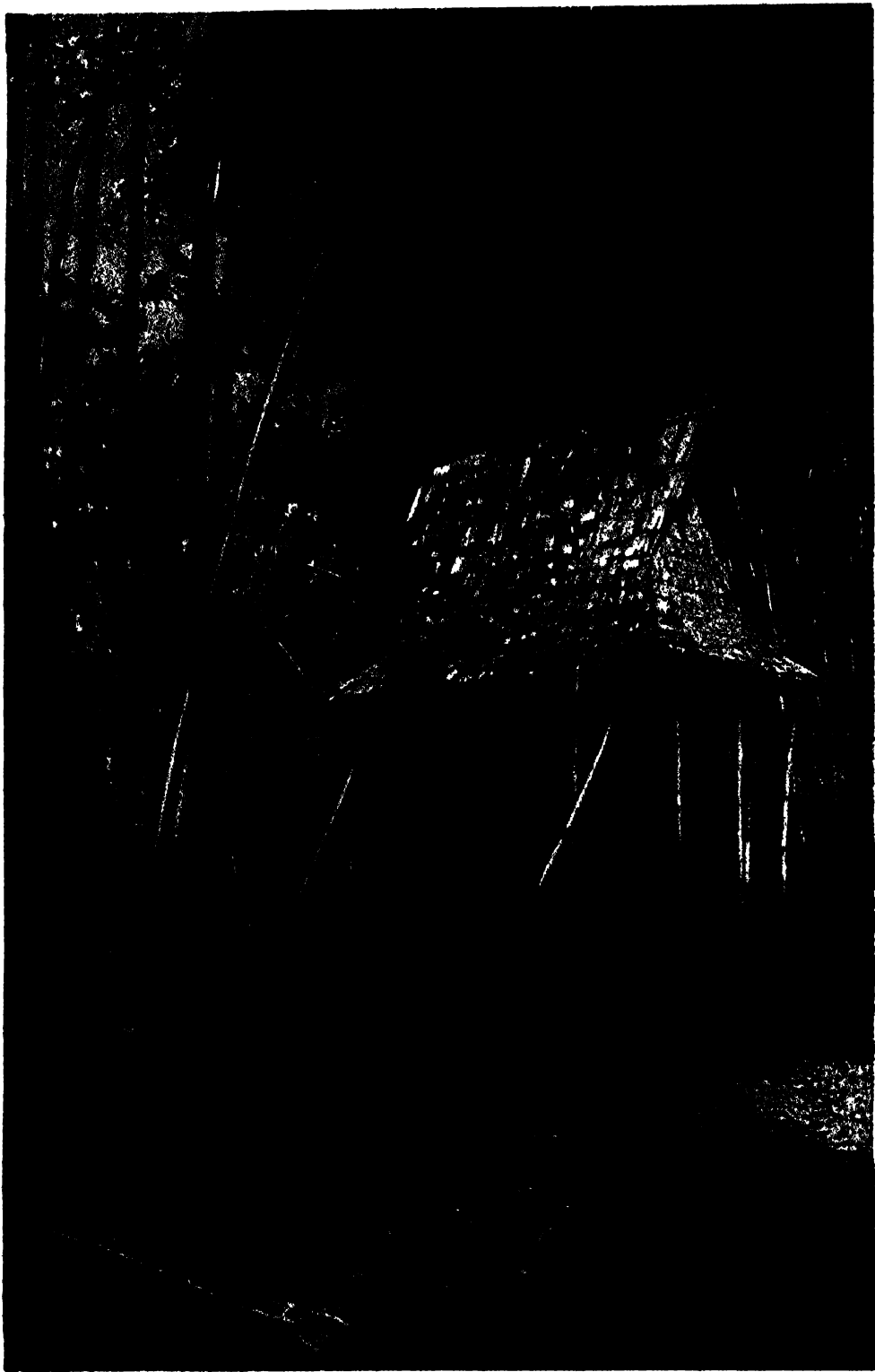
Those who know the islands declare that the Filipino can become a good servant if kept well in subjection. But he is a problem. For, after he has been thoroughly domesticated for years, a native will suddenly display the old savage instincts of his fathers, and he will employ any means to obtain what he wants. The Filipino himself cannot



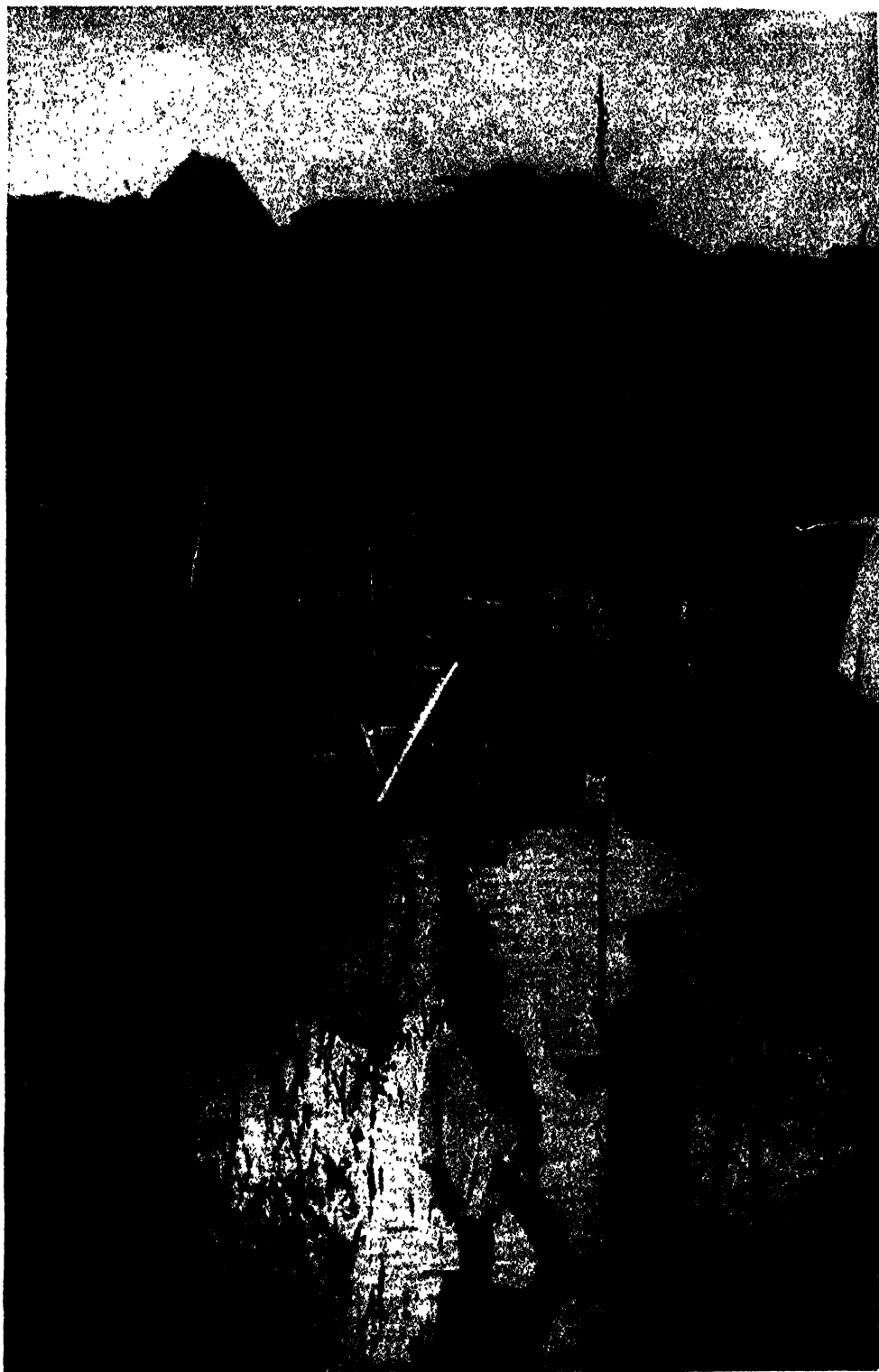
Kadel & Herbert

**THIS BOY OF BATANGAS IS AN EXPERT CLIMBER OF TREES**

Filipinos have found that coconut palms yield something else beside nuts. They know that the flower stalks secrete tupa, a juice that makes a very pleasant drink. Notches are cut in the trunks to give foothold and then boys clamber up, apparently with the greatest ease. Upon his back this lad carries a vessel in which to collect the liquid.



**BAMBOO GROVES** are found on all the islands of the Philippines, and the strong but slender canes are turned to many purposes by the natives, but, except for paper-making, are not exported. Here, in the most southern island of the group, in Mindanao, a Bagobo man has built his flimsy-looking, bamboo hut where building material is plentiful.



Underwood

**HOUSES ON STILTS** are common in the Philippines, for they are protected against enemies and are also above flood level. Of course, a village like the one pictured here, which is just outside Manila, on Luzón Island, is very unhealthy, for fever-carrying mosquitos breed in the stagnant water. Such swamps are rapidly being drained.



## ISLES OF UNREST

explain the impulse which thus seizes him. As Mr. John Foreman, the great authority on the Philippines, has placed on record, a native in these circumstances can only say: "Señor, my head was hot!" By this he means that an uncontrollable desire possessed his mind, and he cheerfully submits to the penalty of his misdeeds.

So much for the natives. What of the country in which they live? The thousands of islands which go to form the Philippine Archipelago vary from tiny, treeless coral reefs, only a few acres in area, and pretty white-beached islets to the larger, mountainous and well-wooded islands of Luzón, Mindanao, Samar and Panay. But these are not tropical paradises. As elsewhere in the Pacific, there are risks of earthquakes and typhoons. Houses in the Philippines are now generally made of wood, from the first storey upwards, in place of stone, out of consideration for public safety. In many

of the islands, too, especially among the tribes that still run wild in the jungles, the houses may be built on tall piles, high up in the branches of trees, or else on mountain terraces difficult of access, for protection from their savage neighbours and from earthquakes.

It is a mildly tropical climate, but the heat in the early afternoon is excessive during certain months of the year. Then those persons who can do so leave off work after midday in the big towns and go to sleep. Only on the plantations and in the fields, where sugar, hemp, rice, corn and tobacco or coffee are grown, does the work go forward, for there natives can endure the heat. The Philippines are rich in natural and other resources. In addition to the products just mentioned there are many gold, copper and coal mines in operation, while the forests yield many fine woods which are highly valued in the world's markets.



Philippine Bureau of Science

### A KALINGA WOMAN'S DRESS IS AN AMAZING MEDLEY OF COLOUR

The Kalinga tribe, which inhabits a part of Mountain Province in the north of Luzón Island, is a very fierce and warlike people who were never tamed by the Spaniards. The Americans, however, have partially subdued them, and, though some are still wild men of the woods, most are now reasonably law-abiding people.

# Wonderful Venice

## STRANGEST AND MOST BEAUTIFUL OF CITIES

Of all the cities of the world it has been my good fortune to visit and explore none has yielded such pleasure to the eye or greater profit to the mind than Venice. It is one of the few places in the world to which the visitor who has read about it beforehand may come with no fear of disappointment. It is a dream city that does not vanish before our waking eyes, as we might fear, but stands forth in all its soft and venerable beauty as a joyous and enduring possession of our senses. Italy is the fairest land of Europe, and Venice is the fairest flower in her garland of lovely towns.

**W**HEN, in the middle of the fifth century, Attila the Hun was ravaging the lovely old Roman cities of Italy, groups of people who lived in the towns of the north-east part of the country took refuge from the invaders on the islands that fringe the lagoons lying to the north of the far-spreading marsh lands at the mouth of the River Po. And there, through the ages, they and their descendants built the marvellous city of Venice, strangest and most beautiful of all the cities of the world.

It grew to be so rich and powerful a republic, conquering many other towns and provinces and ruling these so wisely, that for centuries of what we call "the middle ages" Venice was the strongest sea-power among the Mediterranean nations. Even in her decline she added to her beauty, and the artists who have made their names and hers immortal were at their best when Venice was ceasing to be either powerful or prosperous. She is now a loyal city of Italy, with a history that is a romance and a beauty that knows no decay.

### *Rising Fairy-like Out of the Sea*

Leaving the mainland, the ordinary jog-trot Italian train seems to run straight out into the inhospitable sea. Presently we espy a fairy vision of domes and towers rising sheer out of the water, with never a trace of land so far as human eye can see. Islands there are, a hundred or so protruding from the bottom of lagoons, but most of the buildings in Venice are built upon piles sunk through the mud.

At the station there are no cabs, no omnibuses, not the clatter of a single hoof;

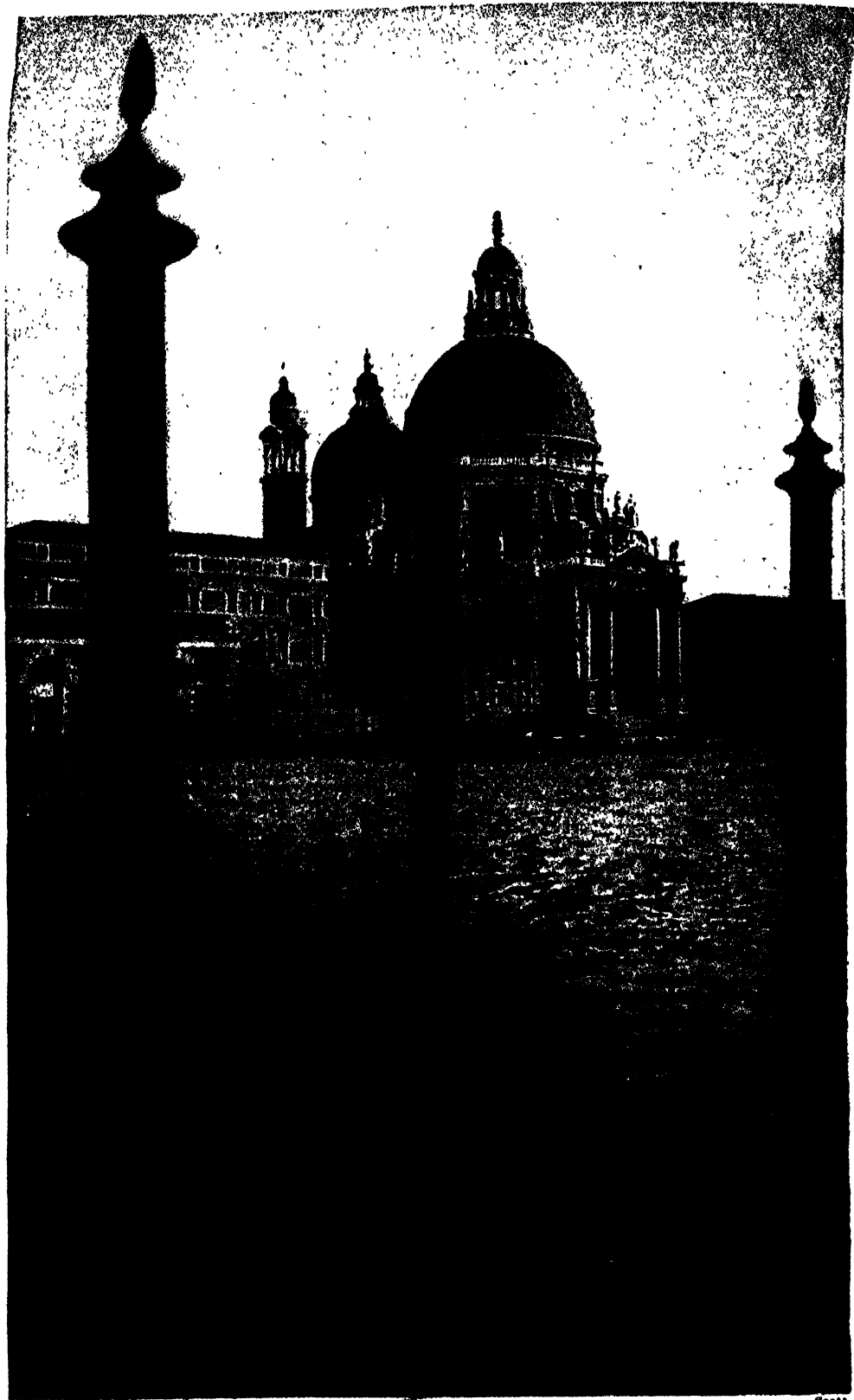
only gondolas are floating about on the still and inky waters. The black hood in the centre of the boat suggests a coffin, but the craft itself is shaped like a cradle. The gondolier, standing behind, might be miles away, but the noises of steamers and fussy motor-launches break the stillness of the canals during the day. On a star-lit summer night there are no such troubles, no sounds except the mysterious cries of the gondoliers as they give warning of their approach to a corner.

### *Gay Waterways and Dark Alleys*

We might spend a happy month or more at Venice and scarcely set foot on land, for waterways lead to almost every door. On both sides of the broad, S-shaped sweep of the Grand Canal the whole city is split up by waterways of every shape and size, some gay with festoons of flowers, others forbidding with bare, mouldy walls.

But behind the water scenes there exists another world which is formed by a maze of narrow streets and wide, paved squares and bridges over the canals, so that you may go on foot anywhere without ever getting into a boat. At first it is very puzzling to find your way through this rabbit-warren; indeed, no city in the world is so perplexing to the newcomer, especially as many alleys come to a sudden end at a wall or on the edge of the waters—a serious danger this to careless people at night-time.

Venice is indeed an ideal scene for dramatic events. In few other places would it be so easy to disappear without a trace. We are reminded everywhere we go of murder and secret societies and conspiracies and desperate deeds.



**THE GRAND CANAL**, the principal waterway of Venice, laps the steps of S. Maria della Salute, a church that commemorates the great plague of 1630. The canal is usually crowded with motor-boats and gondolas, which, when at rest, may be moored to the poles.



McLennan

**THE CHURCH OF S. MARK**, with its decorations of marble and its brightly coloured mosaics, is one of the most magnificent buildings in the world. The lofty Campanile, or bell-tower, collapsed in 1902, but has since been rebuilt according to the original plan.



McLish

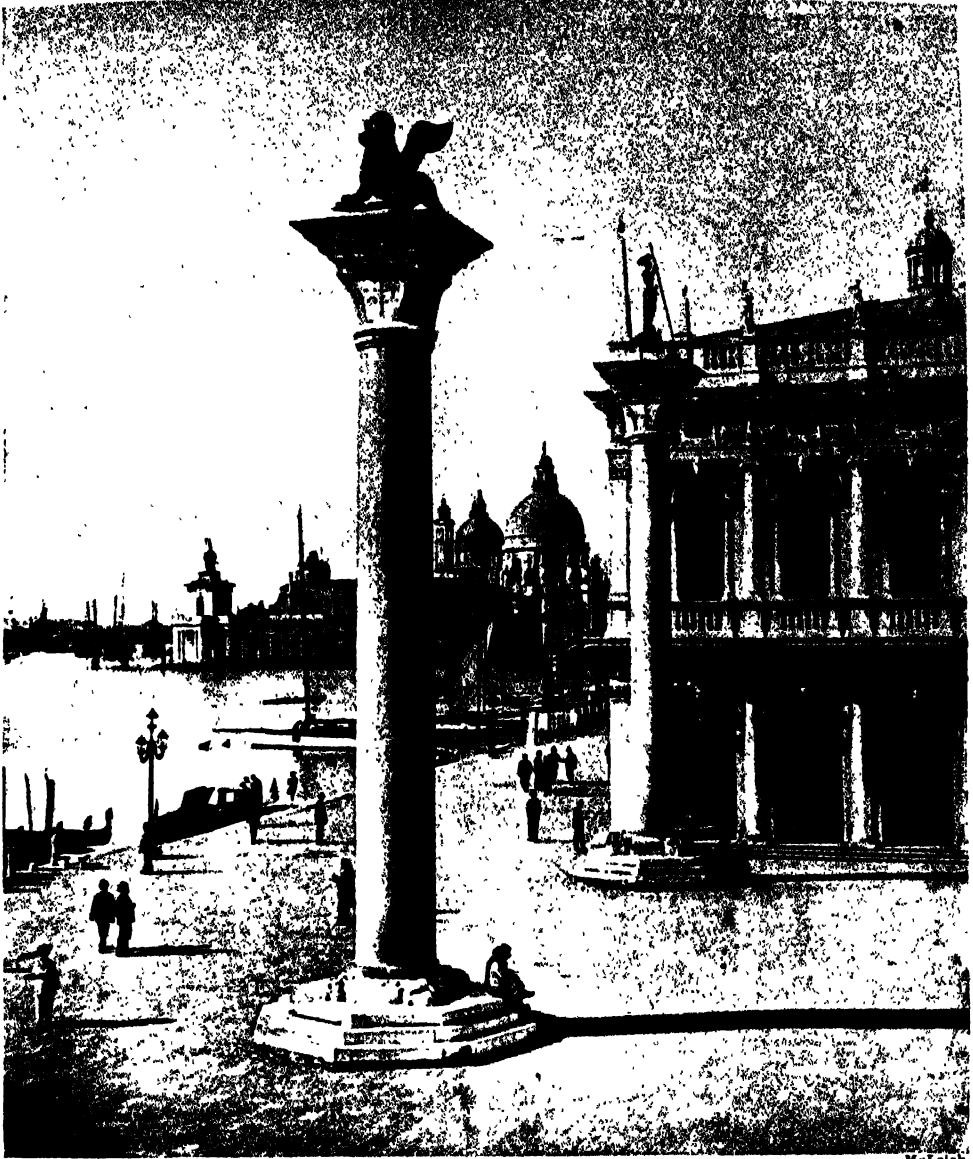
# **RICHLY ORNAMENTED COURT OF THE PALACE OF THE DOGES**

Before the Republic of Venice came to an unhappy end in 1797, the Palace of the Doges was the centre of government. Here were the apartments of the Doges, the splendid rulers of Venice, the city council-chambers and the courts of law. From the courtyard we see the domes of S. Mark's towering above the palace buildings.

The old Republic of the Doges was cruel and savage in a way that would now be regarded as utterly silly. For instance, between S. Mark's, the great cathedral, and the Rialto Bridge over the Grand Canal, we see a sort of tombstone on which is a strange inscription. It threatens the most fearful pains and punishments, from penal servitude and torture down to banishment and fines of many ducats, for anyone who—now prepare to gasp in anticipation of the hideous crime that

provoked this solemn warning—for anyone who baked round loaves exceeding a certain weight and offered them for sale to the public in any square, street, alley, thoroughfare, or on any barge, gondola, sandolo or boat of any kind!

Most of the streets, too, retain their quaint or barbarous old names, handed down from a primitive age. Just behind S. Mark's Square is the Street of the Assassins, a long, dark, narrow lane between high houses, with a suitable bend



#### THE WINGED LION OF S. MARK LOOKS OVER THE LAGOON

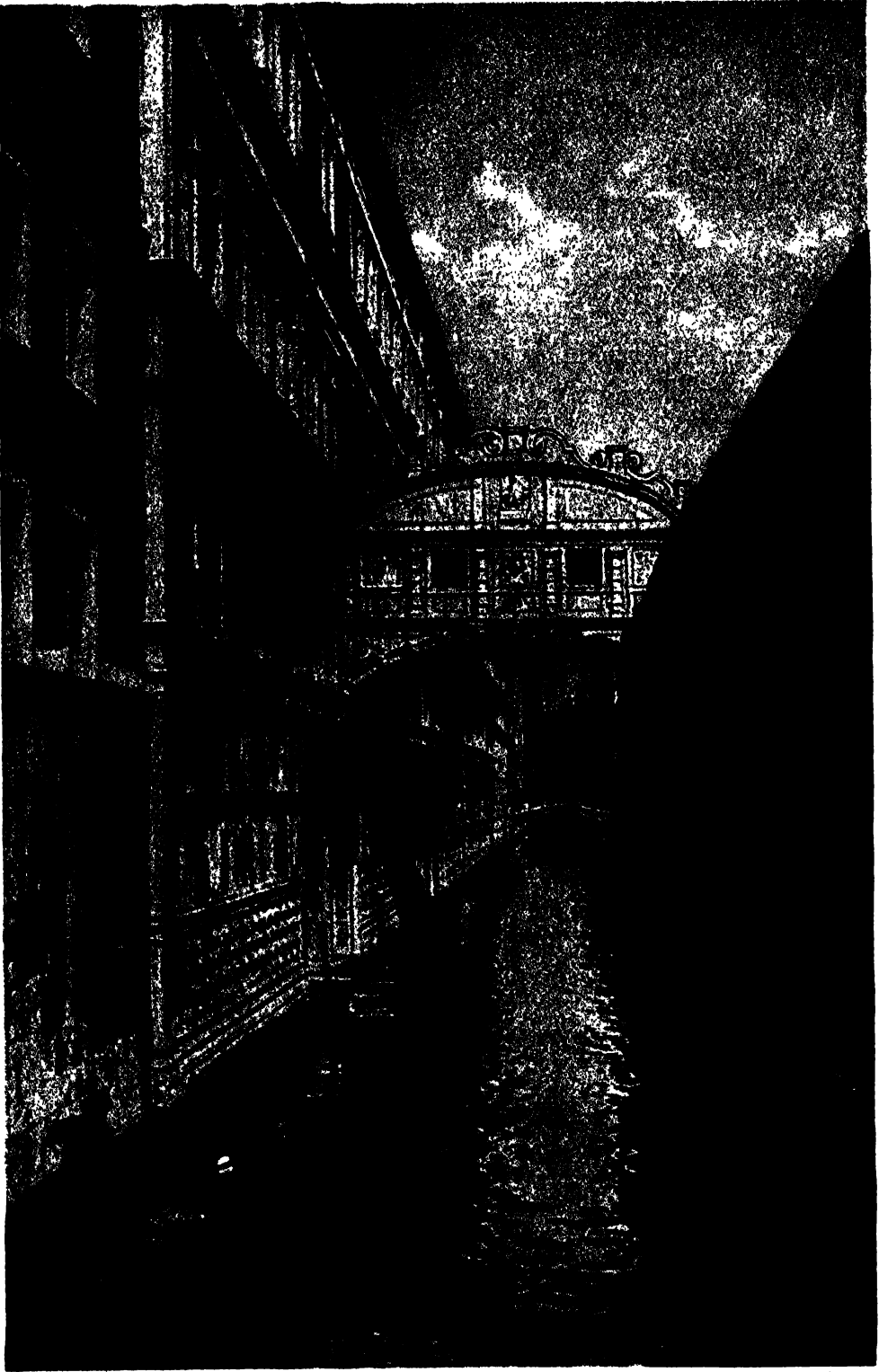
In the Piazzetta of S. Mark stand these two granite pillars, the nearer one bearing a carving of the emblem of Venice, the winged lion of S. Mark, the patron saint of the city, and the farther a statue of S. Theodore. This quay, with its view of S. Maria della Salute across the Grand Canal, was once the Venetian place of execution.

in the middle where the assassins could lurk for their prey. Nowadays it is usually deserted and would not attract the wildest desperado even by its memories.

Several streets recall a sort of bull-fight which used to be very popular at carnival-time. It arose out of a revolt by Ulrich, Patriarch of Aquileja, against Venice in the thirteenth century. The Doge, the ruler of the Venetian Republic, sent a fleet and took him prisoner with twelve of his canons. They were, how-

ever, forgiven and released on condition that their town should send a fine bull and twelve pigs as tribute every year on Carnival Thursday.

The animals were received in great state in one of the salons of the Doges' palace, which was decorated with a number of wooden models of Ulrich's fortresses. The Doge appeared in his robes and solemnly sentenced the bull and pigs to death. Presently martial music heralded a procession of the smiths'



E. N. A

**THE BRIDGE OF SIGHS** is a gracefully arched, covered passage built across the narrow canal called the Rio di Palazzo. It connects the old law courts in the Palace of the Doges with the grim criminal prison. Condemned men would naturally express grief at their fate as, hurried to their cells, they passed over the Bridge of Sighs—hence its name.

## WONDERFUL VENICE

and carpenters' guilds with flags flying and long swords in their hands. Seizing their victims, they led them into S. Mark's Square, where a dense mob received them with frantic applause. As soon as quiet could be restored, a signal was given for the sacrifice.

The bull was more or less released—that is to say, he was tied by a long rope which prevented his charging farther than a certain distance. Thereupon amateur bull-fighters danced about with huge, two-handed swords, endeavouring to strike his head off at one blow. Now came the turn of the pigs, which were chased about with swords by the populace. At last the Doge led the way back to the palace, and trumpets were sounded while he destroyed the wooden fortresses with his stick. It was a cruel, stupid game, but appealed intensely to the humour of the people.

### *Great Carnival of the Olden Days*

In the old days the carnival of Venice was celebrated throughout the world, and was far more wonderful than anything to be seen nowadays on the Riviera, visitors flocking to it from all over Europe in spite of the difficulties of travel. The masked balls in theatres and public places provided the wildest adventures; fun and frolic were almost incessant day and night for a week. Little of all this now remains beyond a few masquerades, but the various quarters of the city still keep up many of their old festivals.

For centuries, the chief characteristics of Venice have been the gondolas and gondoliers. Nowadays the frail craft are dying out and their rowers have earned a reputation for rudeness and greed, but the survivors deserve study as relics of more splendid days. Modern Venetians are more concerned with commerce and progress than with beautiful memories, and dislike the idea of a great port being allowed to remain a mere pleasure-ground for idlers. Gondolas, we are told, are too slow for modern needs.

In the sixteenth century there were no fewer than 10,000 gondolas. Their special

prows, called dolphins, but rather resembling sea-horses, were gilded; the little hut in the centre was of velvet; the cushions were of brightly coloured silk and satin. But all this display was soon repressed, and the simplicity of the republic was revealed once for all in the plain, black, wooden fittings and cold, steel prow which characterise the modern gondola. In summer the coffin-like box, which is usually fitted in the centre, is replaced by a light awning, and there are special arrangements when a gondola is used as a hearse or a prison-van. Otherwise the boat is standardised.

### *Impressive Scenes on the Canals*

Nowhere are funerals so impressive and profoundly melancholy as in Venice. In the dazzling sunlight beneath a clear blue sky, when the reflections of rose-coloured palaces are dancing in the waters, we espy a long file of black gondolas. The first attracts attention by the number of wreaths attached to the prow and a huge silver cross on a black cloth over the cabin, where priests in surplices are murmuring prayers.

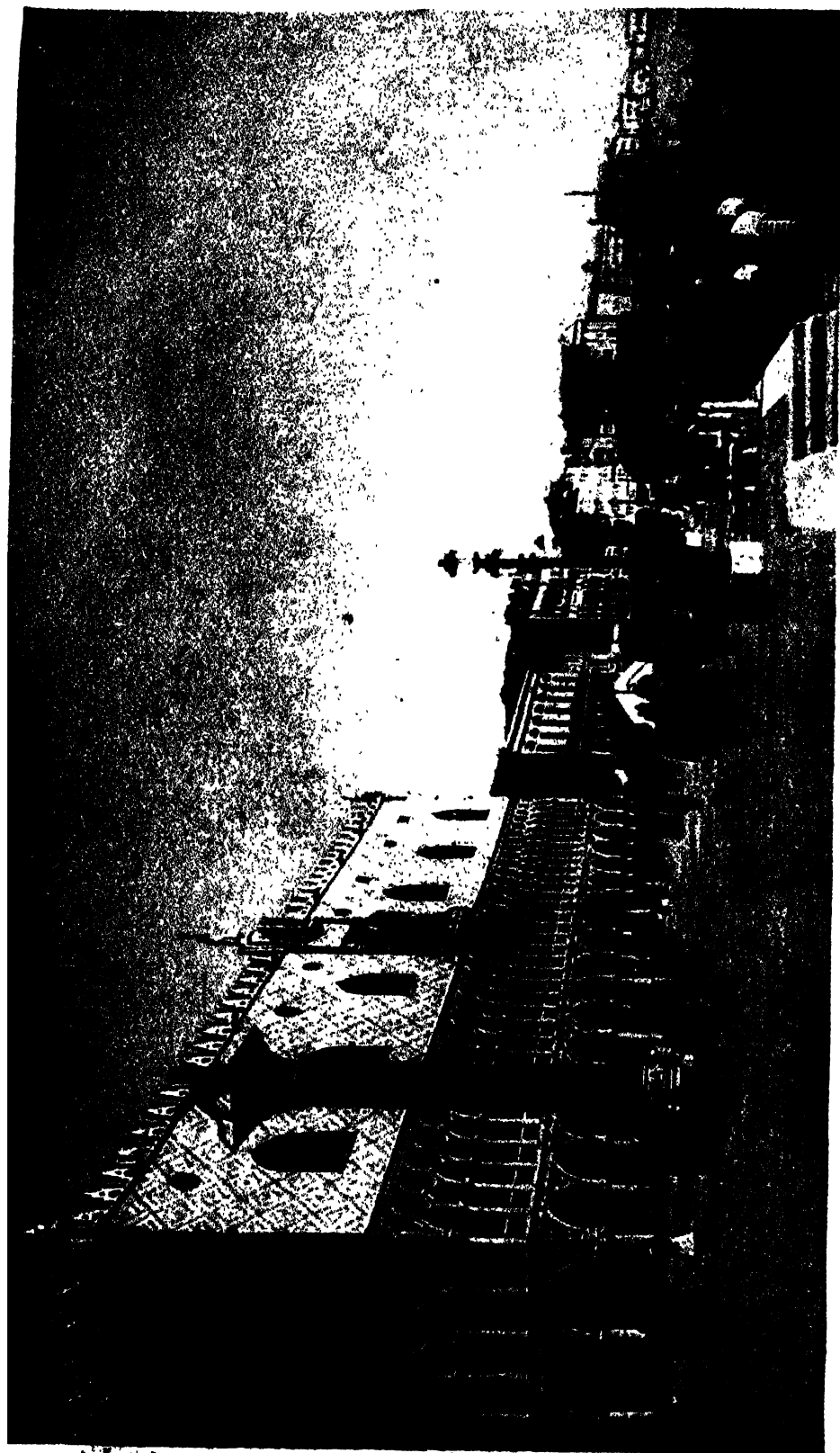
Immediately behind, propelled by four gondoliers, in black livery, glides a gondola bearing the coffin beneath an awning laden with flowers. A black cross stands out at the helm, but an angel spreads his silver wings at the prow, glistening in the sunshine.

### *Brotherhood of the Gondoliers*

The means of earning a living being few at the best of times, and gondolas almost unobtainable except in the tourist season, gondoliers rely for employment chiefly on their ferries, which have been fixed at certain points from time immemorial and form a kind of trade union, with schools and strict laws and benefits attached.

Every gondolier must join a brotherhood, paying certain fees and drawing his share of the profits. When we want to cross the Grand Canal, we can do so by bridge or steamer, but those who prefer old-fashioned ways will find one





**THE PALACE OF THE DOGES** was intended by those who built and adorned it to be worthy of the rulers and councillors of Venice, which was for centuries the wealthiest state in Europe, and is to-day a monument to the magnificence of the vanished Venetian Republic.

**Galleyway**  
Two arcades, their pillars richly ornamented with carvings, support its outer walls, which are of rose-coloured marble. Its inner walls are covered with paintings by great Venetian artists. The southern side overlooks the Molo, the quay that we see here, and the lagoon.



**THE RIALTO BRIDGE** spans the Grand Canal, which is two miles long and shaped like the letter S, at its second great bend. Along the banks of the canal lie palaces and magnificent mansions, once occupied by the Venetian nobles. This quarter of the Rialto was, however, filled with the business houses of merchants such as Shakespeare depicts in "The Merchant of Venice," and here we still find the offices of great firms. The fish and vegetable markets are also situated in this district. On the left bank we see the quay known as the Riva del Vino.

## WONDERFUL VENICE

of the ferries and step on to a waiting gondola. Or, if one is not there, you shout "Poppe!"—literally meaning "poop"—and a boat comes across from the other side. The custom is to deposit fares on the ledge of the boat.

Anything that happens in this city is soon known by everyone and the chief points from which news is spread are the ferries. For instance, one evening

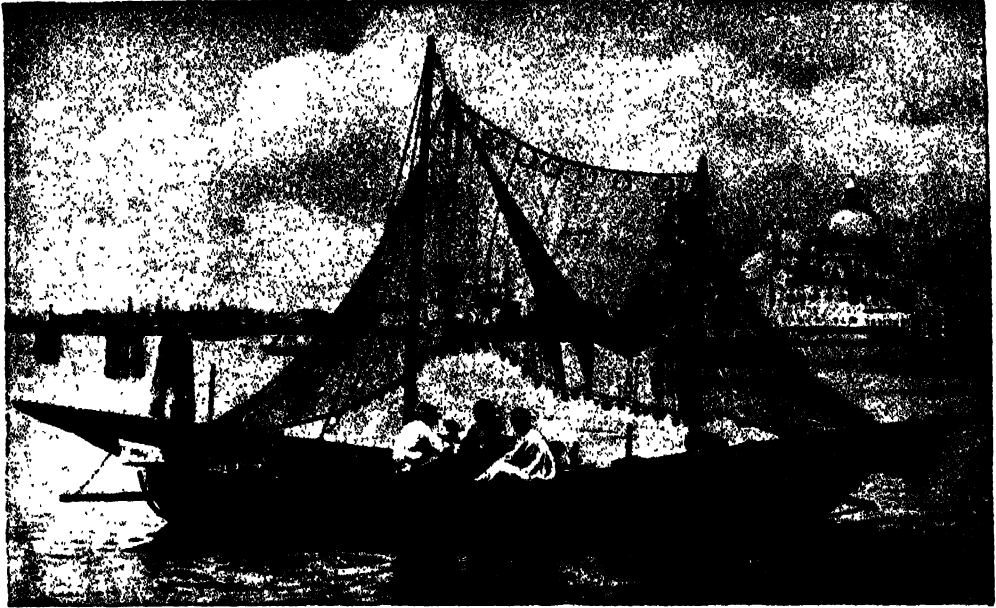
my boat tipped me into a canal after the theatre, and next morning I received a note from a friend at the other end of Venice to remind me that the bathing season had not yet begun!

Every one of the stones of Venice tells a surprising story. Weeks and months can be spent looking at the front of the Doges' palace, where lived the rulers of the old republic, and yet there is always



Underwood

**PIGEONS THAT FLOCK TO THE PIAZZA OF S. MARK FOR FOOD**  
From the roosting places among the pillars and arches of S. Mark's, pigeons come daily in huge numbers to be fed in the Piazza. Hawkers sell grain to the people who wish to feed the birds, which flutter fearlessly round their benefactors. Neither human beings nor pigeons need fear the traffic, since there are neither motors nor horses.



E. N. A.

#### **IDLE FISHING-CRAFT ON THE BLUE WATERS OF THE LAGOON**

In the lagoons that surround Venice crowds of fishermen set their nets, and when they have made a sufficiently good catch, take their loaded baskets by way of the Grand Canal directly to the fish-market, which lies near the Rialto bridge. Beyond the bow of this smack we see the groups of stakes that mark the channels leading to the city.

something fresh to be seen. The sculpturing at the top of one pillar, for instance, exhibits the whole life of man in exquisite miniature. First the baby in a cradle, then a Romeo and Juliet scene at a balcony, a wedding, the appearance of an heir and, finally, a death-bed.

The story is a special favourite with the natives, and we may often see a group of girls in their quaint, tasselled shawls discussing the incidents. Other carvings represent seasons, industries, birds and beasts and fishes, sins and virtues and Bible scenes.

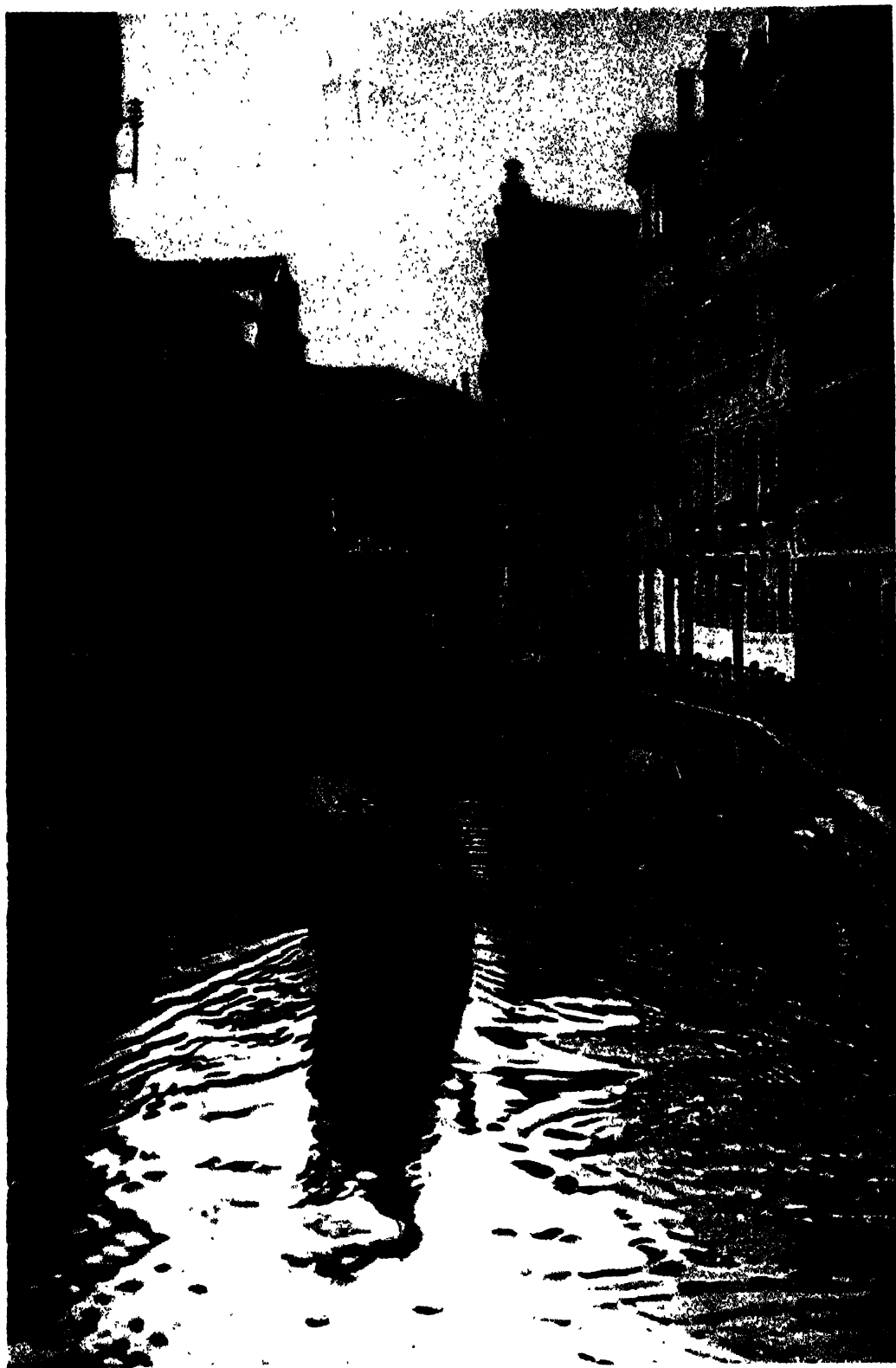
But there is no need to search for wonders in Venice. We need not stir from S. Mark's Square, surrounded by showy little shops, where noisy Jews pester us to buy their worthless wares. Let us go into one of the old coffee-houses which face one another across the square and which were open day and night until the Great War.

In winter-time, which can be very sharp here, we enter a succession of small, over-heated rooms, whose walls are lined with divans of red plush, and realise what a coffee-house was like in the seventeenth century. When spring comes, hundreds

of chairs and tables are set out far into the square. As we sit here, eating ices or drinking syrups under a star-lit sky, we may listen to the music, watch the people passing to and fro or dream of bygone days.

Most fascinating perhaps of all the wonders are the four, sturdy, bronze horses over the doors of S. Mark's. Some say they came from an arch of Nero, others that they were loot from Constantinople. Napoleon stole them and carried them off to Paris, but they were brought back after his fall, and at the outbreak of the Great War they were removed again and taken to a place of safety. Now they are restored in all their pride to rank among the most characteristic symbols of Venetian glory.

The tall campanile, or belfry, too, has had its adventures. The foundations had long caused anxiety, perhaps through the beating of the waves made by steamers and other new, swift craft. Then suddenly, in July, 1902, the tower collapsed with a mighty roar in a storm of dust and rubble. Art experts disputed over the restoration, some considering it unsightly as a stiff, solitary sentinel



Felton

**GONDOLAS** are used by the Venetians for travelling about their city, since canals take the place of streets in Venice. The gondola is a long, flat-bottomed craft, with a high and sharply curving stern and bow. The stern is slightly twisted, and, acting as a kind of rudder, helps to keep the gondola straight, although the gondolier is rowing at one side only.



**THE VENETIAN HAWKER** takes his wares in a gondola from house to house. Even the slums of Venice are well served by canals, which are much more pleasant than the mean streets that we find in such districts in other large cities. Many of the poorest people live in one or two rooms that they have rented in a once magnificent palace.

## WONDERFUL VENICE

among all the beautiful buildings. But it was decided that it broke the monotony of the great square and therefore should be rebuilt.

On certain high-days at the hour of noon the venerable clock over the arch at the entrance to the Merceria, one of the main thoroughfares, gives a unique entertainment to the curious. Scarcely have the bronze Moors beaten the hour on a gong with their hammers than a little trapdoor opens and figures of the three wise men emerge, solemnly raising their hats as they pass in procession

before the images of the Virgin and Child who are seated upon a throne.

Venice, with her shining, marble buildings and great, mirror-like stretches of water, never seems to look the same. She cannot be described, as her colours are always changing. Sometimes it seems as though the whole city was in mourning, with dark canals, grey palaces and sad lagoons beneath clouded skies. Then again the canals, lagoons, roofs and windows are red with reflected fire, the pavements are molten gold. It is hard to believe that it is the same city.



McLeish

### PIOUS OFFERINGS AT A SHRINE THAT RISES FROM THE LAGOON

Built on piles driven into the bottom of the lagoon, this humble shrine to the Blessed Virgin is especially revered by the fisherfolk of Venice who wish to pray for protection against the perils of the sea. The Venetians were at one time great seafarers, adventuring for the purposes of trade to the East and to the ports of England and Flanders.

# My Lord the Elephant

## HIS MARVELLOUS STRENGTH IN WORK OR PLAY

The elephant is the largest of all mammals except the whale, and for centuries the enormous strength of the Asiatic variety has been used by man in peace and war. Despite its size and strength the elephant is a timid animal, and it is ludicrous to see one of these great beasts frightened by the yappings of a little terrier, which it could send flying through the air with a flip of its trunk. In India, Burma and Siam the elephant can be seen to-day, as in the past, in gorgeous trappings, taking a prominent part in processions or busy at tasks suited to its strength and trained intelligence. African elephants, however, are seldom taught to work, and they are hunted for the sake of the valuable ivory of their great tusks.

"My Lord the Elephant" is no meaningless nickname given to those huge animals that are so characteristic of India, for as the elephant strides proudly down the crowded city street he looks every inch a king. Men and beasts scatter before his stately approach; no one ventures to dispute his right of way, for he towers above all. Bullock-carts and carriages move to the roadside, and even the impudent camels make room for him.

Proudly and with stately steps he solemnly advances, moving his great head from side to side, and seeming to look down with disdain on the lesser creatures around him. "My lord" indeed—every inch! Only to his mahout, or driver, does he yield obedience—and the mahout himself looks insignificant as compared with the mighty creature whose course he directs.

India would lose half her romance and splendour if she lost her elephants. All the great princes and many of the lesser personages have as many elephants as they can afford—the largest and finest their wealth can purchase. Indian princes love display, and elephants seem to have been specially created for pageants.

### *In Splendour of Gold and Jewels*

When a maharaja rides forth on some great occasion, his finest elephant is decorated from head to foot. His state howdah is of silver or even gold, and beneath it is a splendid howdah-cloth of rich, red velvet, embroidered with gold thread, covering the elephant's huge back and hanging down on each side to within

a foot or two of the ground. Enormous anklets of gold, silver or ivory encircle the animal's feet; its trunk is painted and its forehead is covered with jewels.

### *Servants of Princes and Temples*

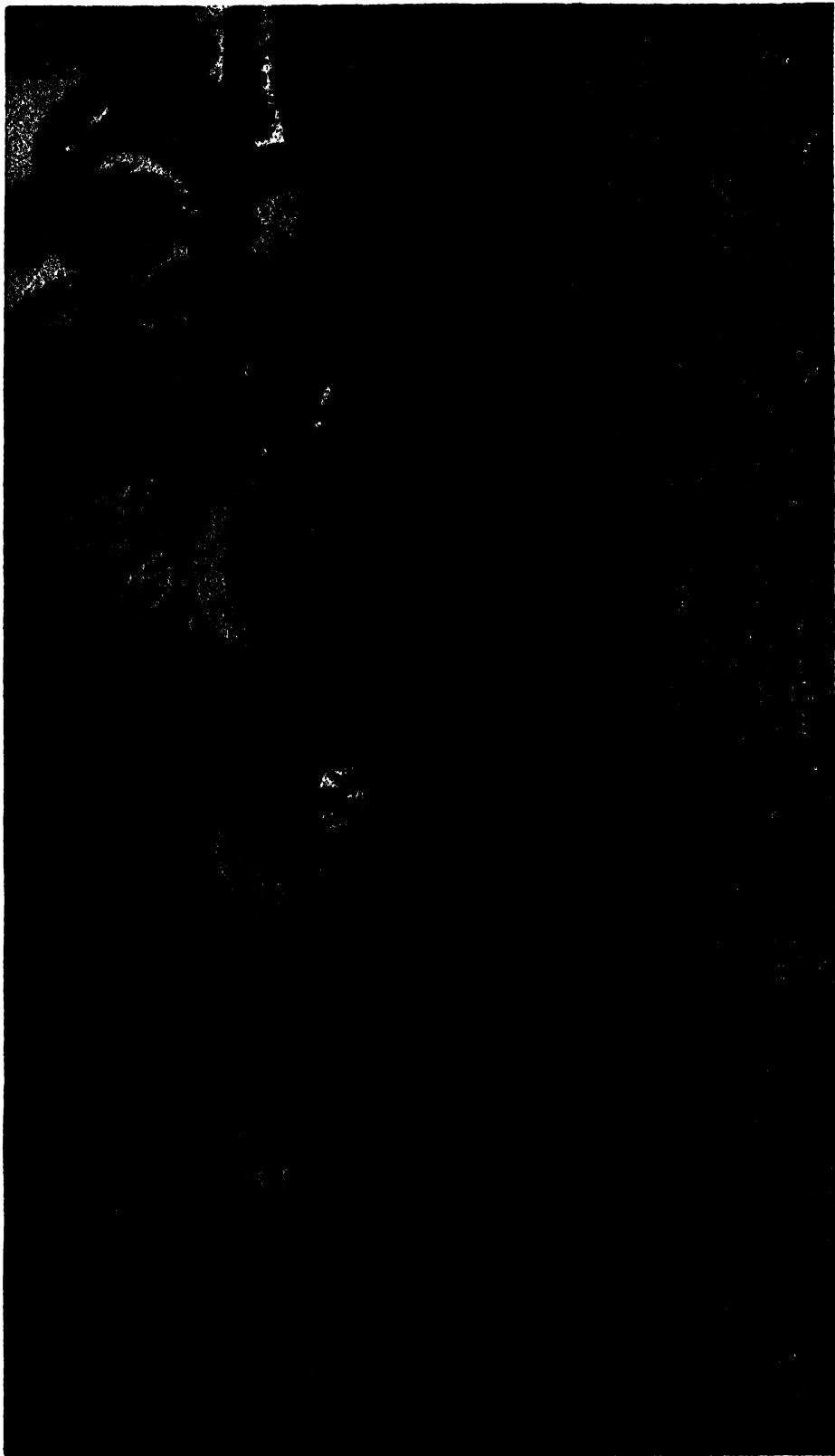
The great prince himself is dressed in the finest silks, his neck encircled with gems and his splendid turban flashing with diamonds. But in a motor-car that prince would scarcely attract attention; it is the elephant that makes him so magnificent. Surely elephants were made to carry monarchs! And as the great beast moves forward, with its curious up-and-down swaying gait and swinging trunk, it appears to appreciate the dignity and splendour of its position.

Some elephants are devoted to the service of the gods. Most of the great temples of south India have their own sacred elephants that live within the temple courts, take part in the religious processions and receive gifts.

In some temples I have seen the elephants with the symbol of the god painted in white and red upon their trunks and foreheads. In the vast Hindu temple at Madura the sacred elephants are taught to beg from visitors. In one hall of great, carved pillars I encountered two of these monsters in charge of a keeper. To my surprise they knelt before me and saluted with their trunks. "Master, the elephants salaam to you," said their keeper. "They ask you to give them money, master."

I dropped a small silver coin before each elephant—too small, alas, for in an





Galloway

**ELEPHANTS OF SIAM** are royal property, and are looked after by a special government department. The king of Siam had a stud of these huge beasts, and every now and then, to keep up the number, a great hunt was organized and wild ones were captured, as we see in page

764. The elephants we see here, each with his driver astride his neck, are about to go on a big game hunt. Therefore the "howdahs" on their backs, beneath the shelter of which the hunters sit, are as simple and as light as possible. On state occasions they are very elaborate.



Underwood

**FROM THE ROYAL STABLES** of the Maharaja of Jaipur come two of his elephants to take their exercise. All over India these dignified creatures are regarded as the proper mounts for royalty and they are, therefore, important figures in any procession. Enormously strong and surprisingly easy to train, they are very obedient to the orders of their keepers.

## MY LORD THE ELEPHANT

instant they trumpeted their disapproval and waved their trunks over my head in a most threatening manner. Feeling that, under the circumstances, discretion might be safer than economy, I promptly threw them more silver and was relieved to see them march away.

In the beautiful mountain town of Kandy, in Ceylon, there is a very interesting shrine known as the Temple of the Tooth, because the chief object of devotion is a relic said to be the tooth of the great Buddha. Once every year, at the Perahera festival, the golden casket containing the precious relic is borne through the town in a procession of elephants. It is carried in a special gilt howdah on the back of a magnificent temple elephant, which is literally covered

with decorations of the brightest colours, and is shaded by a high canopy supported on long poles carried by four attendants who walk beside the elephant. Two other fine elephants walk with the chief one, and many others follow behind, bearing the yellow-robed monks and the Kandyan chiefs.

White elephants, which are found in Burma and Siam, are of the same species as the ordinary elephant, but are a pinkish-white in colour and are treated with considerable reverence in Siam and Burma.

In past ages elephants, so magnificent in pageants, have been used as a fighting force in battle. More than two thousand years ago great Indian kings kept their companies of war-elephants. When Alexander the Great invaded India, three



Assam-Bengal Ry.

### DENIZENS OF THE WILD THAT MAN HAS TRAINED TO HIS OWN ENDS

In Assam, a mountainous province of eastern India, there are great herds of wild elephants, and every year numbers are tamed or killed for their ivory. Only some of the males of Asiatic elephants grow tusks, however, and so for ivory the African elephants are more prized, for their tusks are larger and are borne by both sexes.



Realistic Travels

#### BATTLE BETWEEN GIANTS IN A NATIVE STATE OF WESTERN INDIA

Elephants are not usually belligerent—that is, they are not quick to pick a quarrel—but when they do fight it is a wonderful spectacle. In the palace grounds of the Gaekwar of Baroda contests between two giant "tuskers" are sometimes arranged.

The elephants' tusks are blunted, and they are bound by their hind legs.

centuries before Christ, he found that the army of King Poros was strengthened with groups of elephants, placed at intervals along the battle-front, towering aloft like turrets above a city wall. The king himself fought and directed his army from the back of an elephant.

These elephants nearly spoiled Alexander's plans for, maddened by wounds, they broke through his ranks. But the mahouts lost control of the terrified animals; the Greeks re-formed and swept forward to victory.

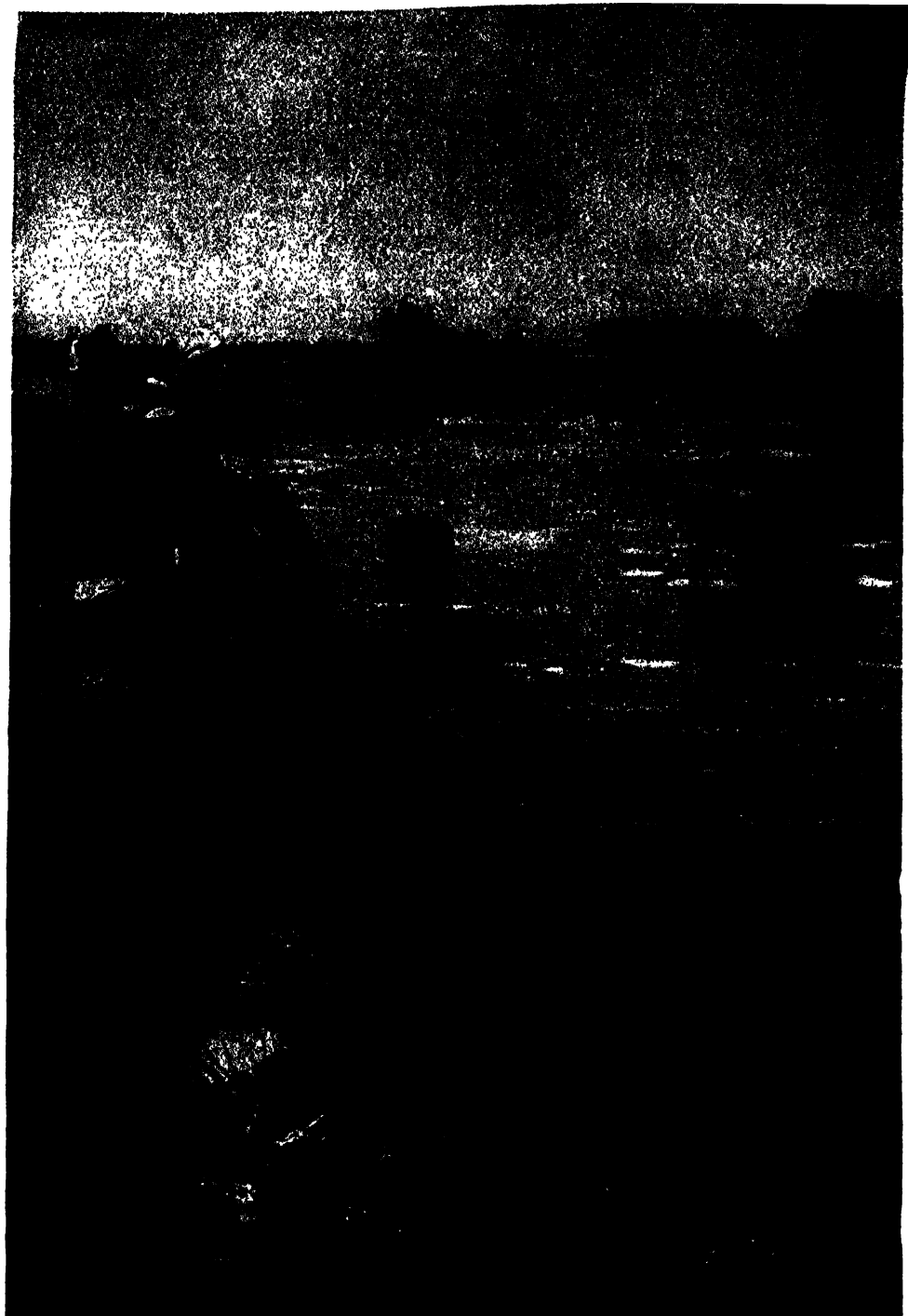
The heavy wooden doors of old Indian castles are usually studded with huge iron spikes, pointing outward, only a few inches apart. They have been put there to resist an elephant charge. In days gone by war-elephants were trained to attack the gates of a fortress with their heads. Such a charge, with the great weight of the elephant's body behind it, would be like a battering ram. So men learned to defend their city gates with spikes.

Elephants are easily alarmed and then get out of control. In the great city of

Hyderabad, for example, it has been found that motor-cars terrify the elephants that hitherto have dominated the streets. To-day elephants are forbidden in the streets of the city.

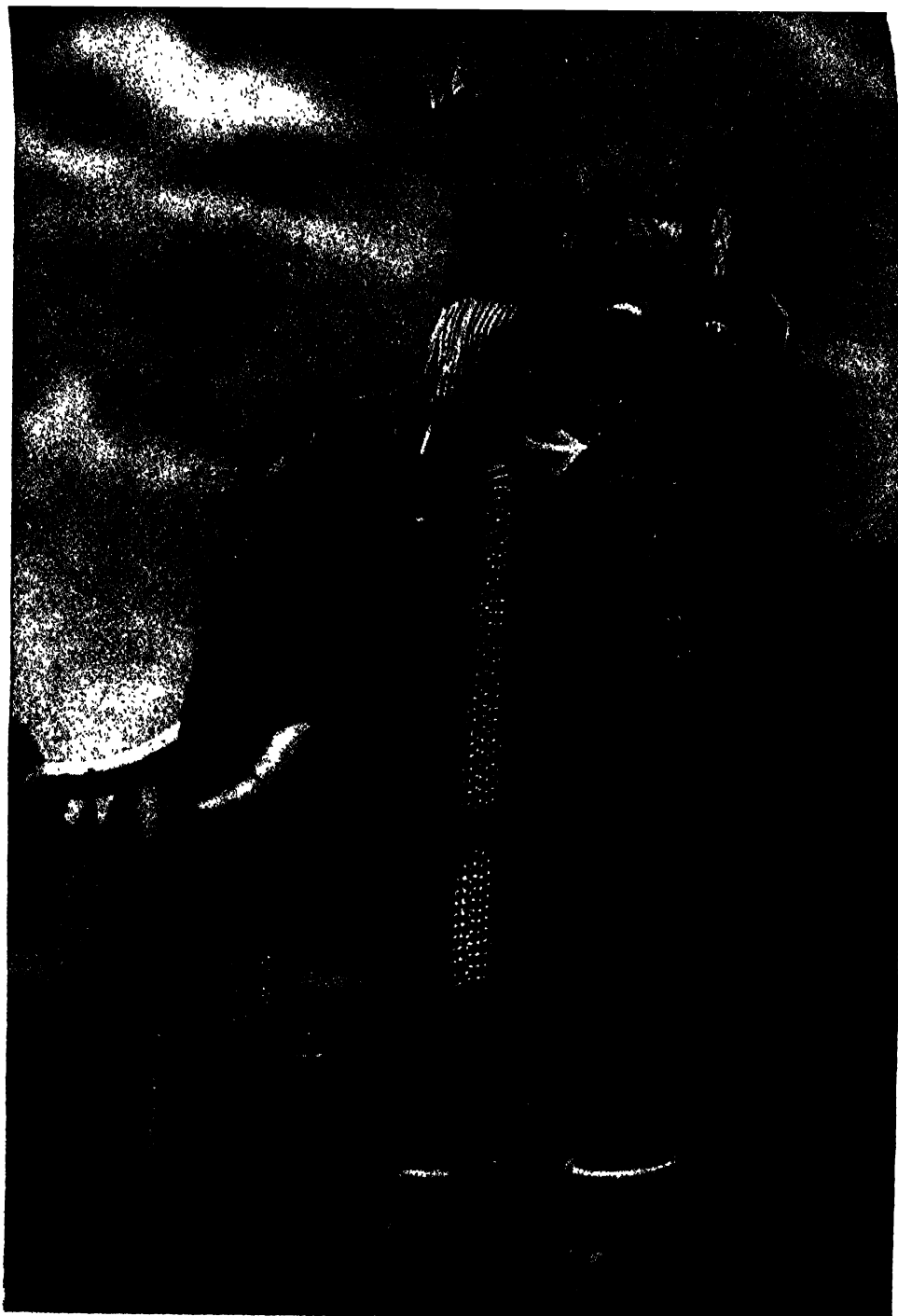
Since early times monarchs have used elephants for sport and pleasure. In the great Roman amphitheatres elephants engaged in mortal combat with one another to amuse the sensation-loving crowds of the Imperial City. In India, too, elephants have long been used to entertain princes and peoples. The Gaekwar of Baroda, one of the most powerful of Indian princes, still has elephant fights in an arena in his palace grounds.

The huge gladiators fight with blunted tusks, so as not to do one another serious harm. With their mahouts to guide them, they engage in a giant tussle of strength, butting with their mighty heads, and opposing strength to strength. Nowadays it is little more than a friendly contest for a decidedly heavy-weight championship; but in the past these elephant fights were very much more serious affairs.

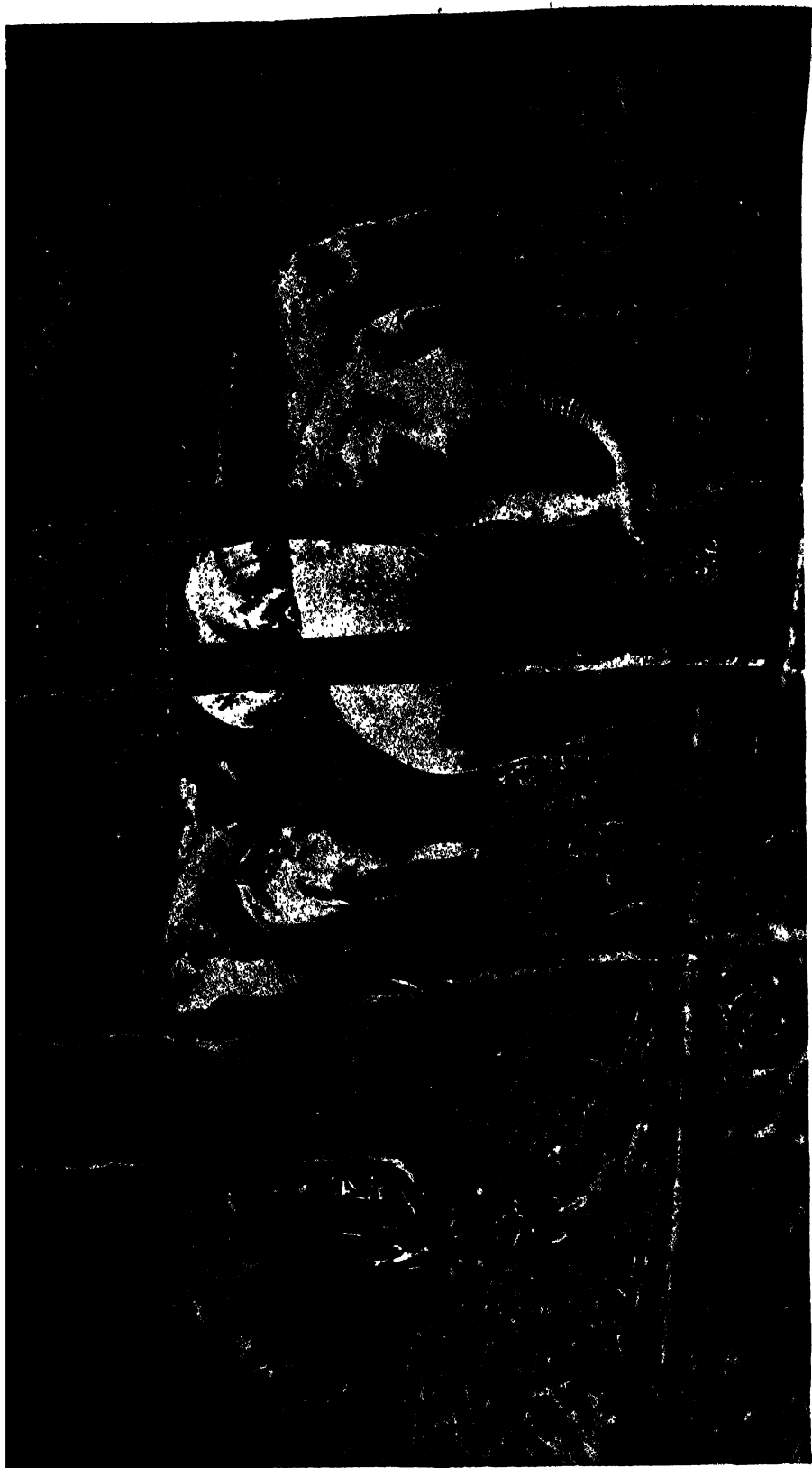


Long

**ASIATIC ELEPHANTS**, like water buffaloes, are never so happy as when they are in a river or pool. With their long, tapering trunks they draw up the cool water and either squirt it down their throats or pour it over their parched skins. In an elephant's body, near his gullet, is a reservoir for water that contains several gallons. This liquid the creature can, at will, bring into his mouth; he then draws it into his trunk and squirts it over his back—or over some man or animal that has annoyed him!



**IN GORGEOUS TRAPPINGS** of scarlet and gold, with tassels of pearls hanging over ears and from blunted tusks, a necklace of gold plates and anklets of ivory, and an elaborate silver howdah on his back, this Bengali elephant—a veritable giant among elephants—is a mount fit for a king. Though the usual height of an Asiatic elephant is about eight or nine feet at the shoulder, this one is nearly twelve. An elephant usually weighs from two to three tons, and, even in captivity, has been known to live for a hundred years.



**WILD ELEPHANTS THAT IN A FEW MONTHS' TIME WILL BE OBEYING THEIR NEW MASTER, MAN**

Wild elephants are usually caught by one of three methods. Sometimes a deep pit, nearly filled with brushwood, is dug in their path. Sometimes trained female elephants are sent out as decoys, to attract wild males, whose hind legs are then firmly bound together with ropes method. They have yet to be tamed, work often fraught with danger. before they realise that man is near. The third method is to drive a whole herd, by trumpet and drum and voice, into a prepared enclosure. These elephants of Perak, in Malaya, have been trapped by this last method.



Doverton

### DRAGGING ROUGH TEAK LOGS TO THE RIVERSIDE IN BURMA

Elephants are employed in all stages of the Burmese teak industry—both in forest and in timber yard. Although the elephant has but a small and not highly-developed brain in proportion to his great bulk, he can readily be trained to carry out particular work with an intelligence that is almost uncanny, as we see in pages 762 and 763.

For the royal sport of tiger-hunting the Indian princes and their European guests usually ride on elephants trained for the purpose. The hunters sit in specially constructed howdahs that enable them to fire easily in every direction.

Left to itself, an elephant will seldom face a tiger; but guided by its mahout and protected by the rifles of the hunters on its back, it enters into the chase with energy and loud trumpeting. It is very remarkable how, by careful training, the elephant's natural timidity in the presence of its dreaded enemy, the tiger, may be overcome.

Many elephants have to work very hard. We will go into one of the great teak forests where the lumber men are at work. Watch an elephant as he draws a huge log to the river; it is obviously child's play to him. Notice, however, that he does not carry the logs, he pulls them with the aid of a rope fastened round his body. Let us go to the timber yards at Rangoon and watch the trained elephants stacking the timber. See the casual way they lift the heavy balks of teak, carry them across the yard and stack them in piles—carefully putting them straight.

Strange tales are told of these timber-yard elephants and their intelligence. It is said that one evening, as a driver was

about to finish removing a number of logs, the bell rang for work to cease. There was only one more log to move, and the man thought he might as well finish the job. His elephant, however, struggled in vain with that last log, and the driver called to his aid another elephant that was passing on its way to the stables.

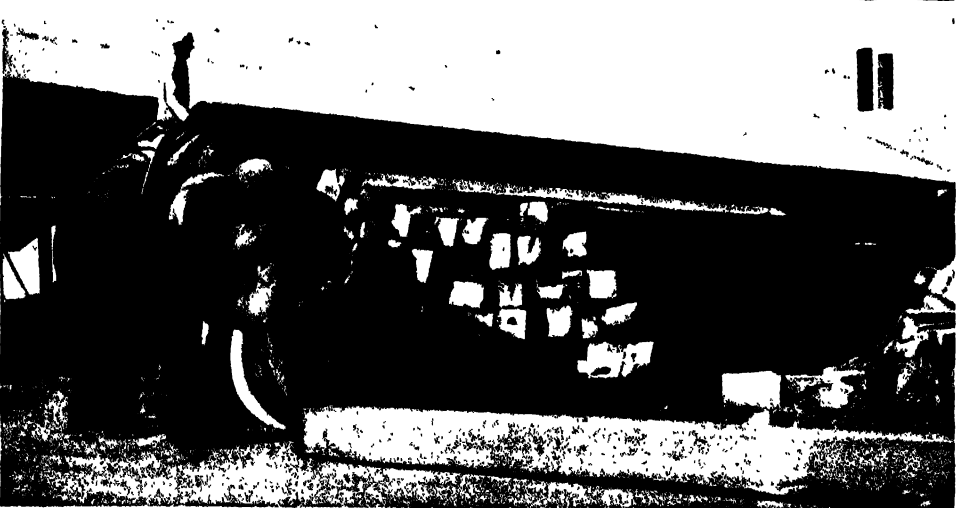
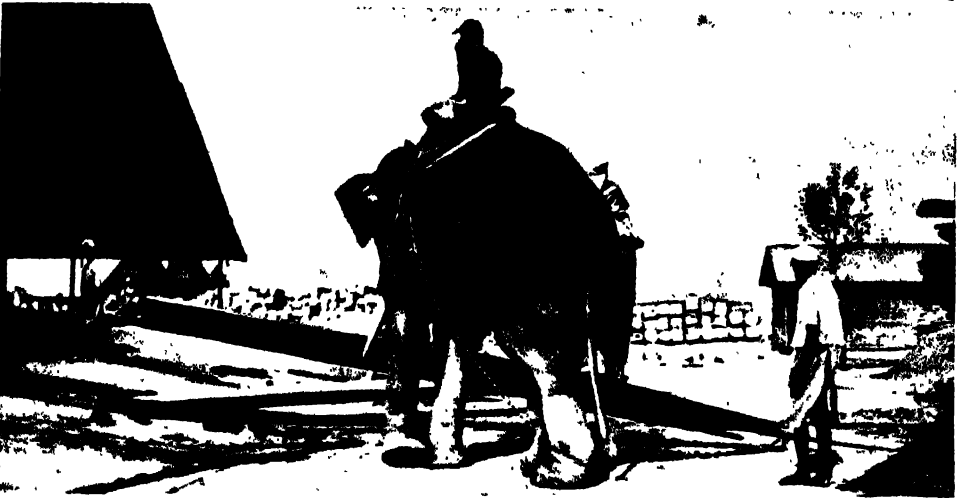
The two of them failed, and a third elephant was summoned. Finding the task so unexpectedly difficult, the driver now resolved to leave it until the morrow and then try again. Next morning the first elephant got his tusks under the log and carried it away quite easily without assistance. He knew that when the bell rang it was time to stop work!

Before leaving the timber-yard, let us notice that the elephants do not lift heavy weights with the trunk, as is sometimes supposed. The trunk is far too delicate and precious an instrument to risk in that way. The elephant may put his trunk round a man and lift him up; or he may use it to break off the slender branches of a tree, or turn it into a step-ladder to enable his mahout to climb up to his neck. But he will not lift a balk of timber with it. He will carry heavy weights on his tusks, or even in his mouth, but not with his trunk. The trunk is really very wonderful,





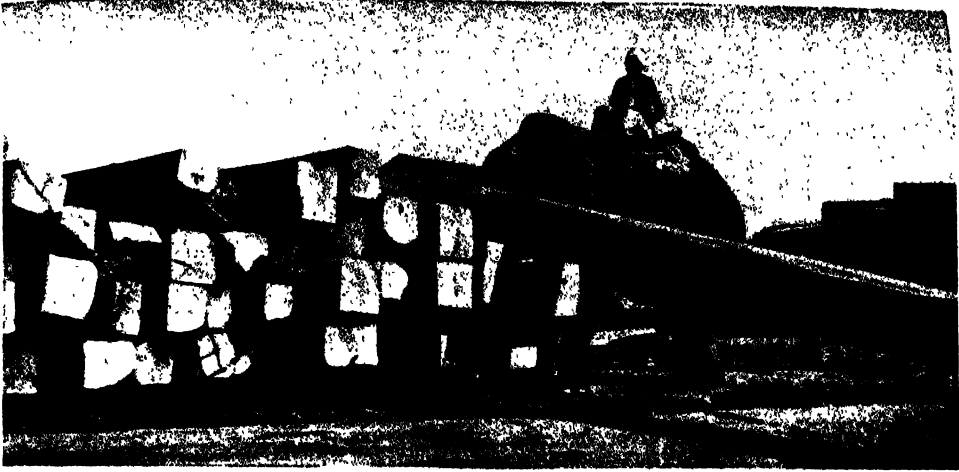
Ponting



Bushby

#### ELEPHANT WORKERS IN THE TIMBER YARDS OF RANGOON

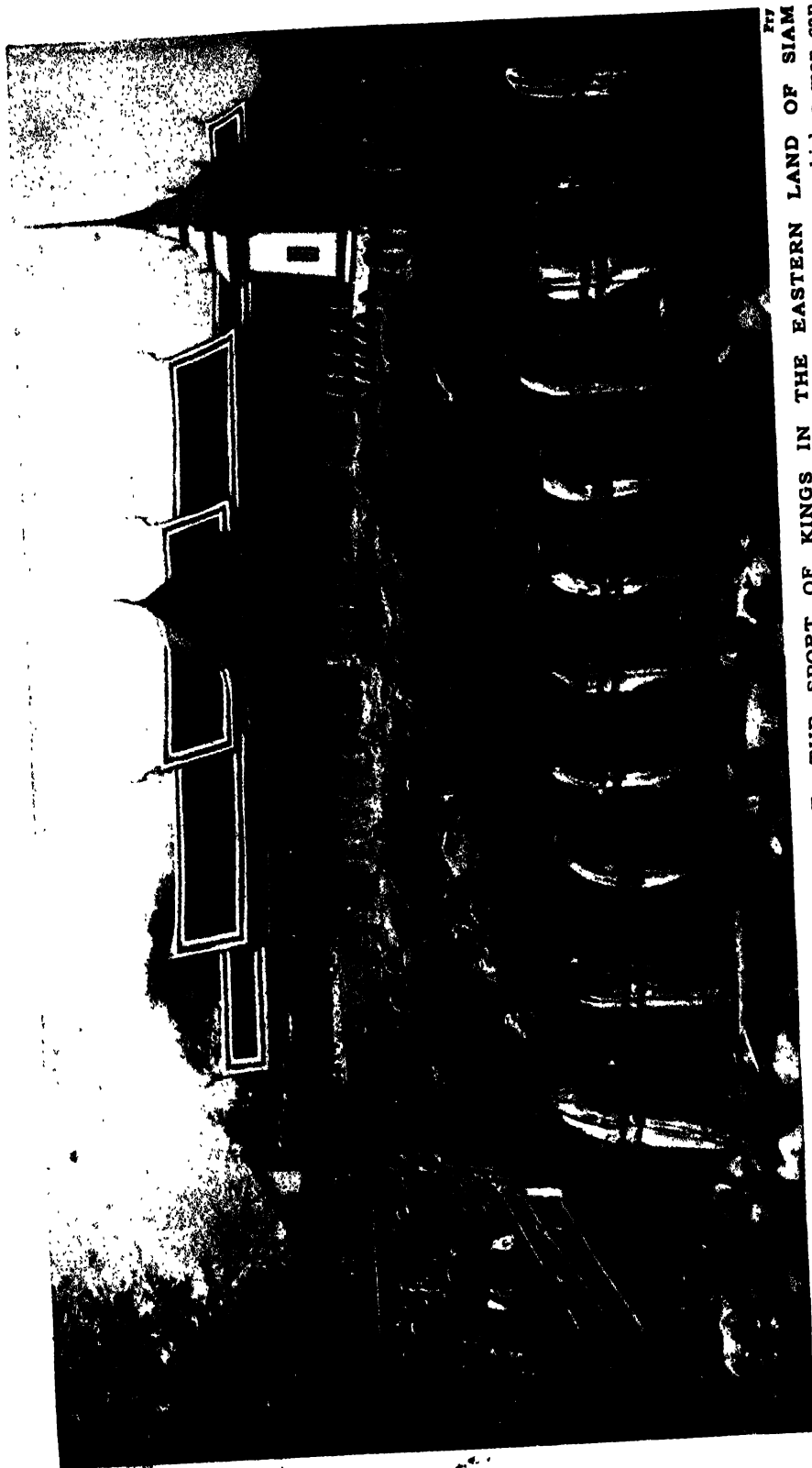
One can best understand the trained intelligence of the elephant by watching him at work in the Rangoon teak yards. He pulls the rough logs from the river down which they have been floated, and carries a sawn plank across his tusks, keeping it steady with his trunk; or with that same organ he will push a heavy balk along the ground.



Bushby

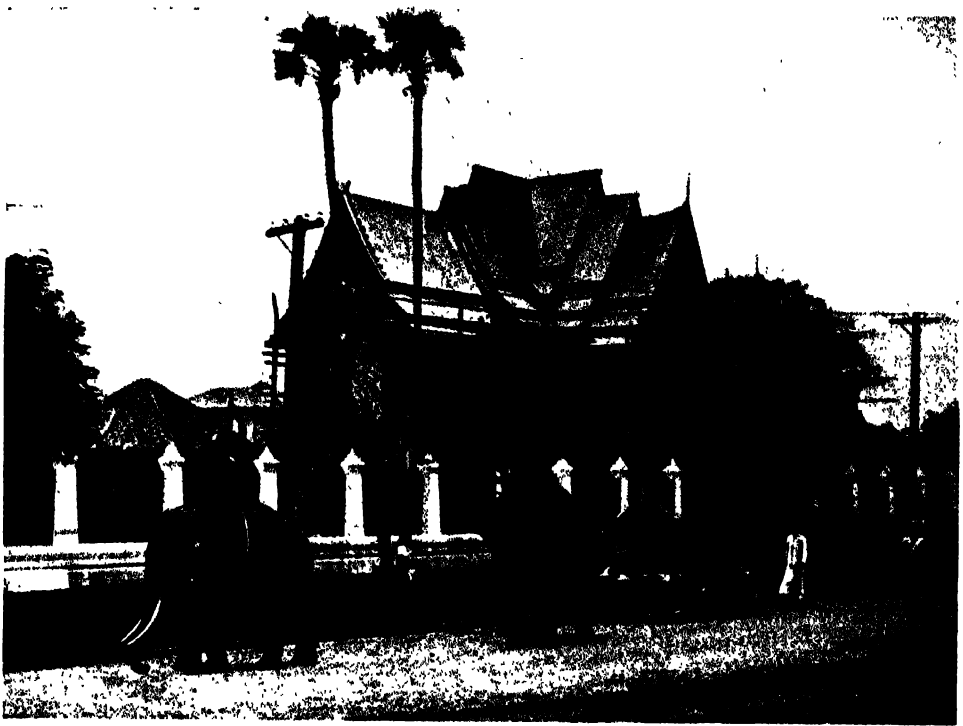
# **THE ELEPHANT IS A SKILLED ARTISAN AND NEEDS NO DIRECTIONS**

When he has shoved the balk to the right spot, he lifts one end on to the stack and works it in line with those already in place. Then, moving to the other end, he uses his coiled trunk to push the balk home. Small wonder that this clever animal has been employed by the people of Burma and India for many centuries!



Fig

**ON THE SECOND DAY OF AN ELEPHANT HUNT: THE SPORT OF KINGS IN THE EASTERN LAND OF SIAM**  
 enclosure surrounded by stout palisades between which a man can pass, and into this the wild beasts were driven. That happened on the first day. On the second, men on trained elephants entered the keddah and with nooses of rope made fast the pick of the herd.



#### THE STRENGTH OF THE LORDLY ELEPHANT PUT TO HUMBLE USES

Although in Siam all wild elephants belong to the king and the occasional white, or albino, ones are creatures of very high rank indeed, many trained elephants, usually rather small ones, are put to quite lowly work. We see them pulling dustcarts or builders' wagons and doing other jobs for which in England a carthorse would be employed.

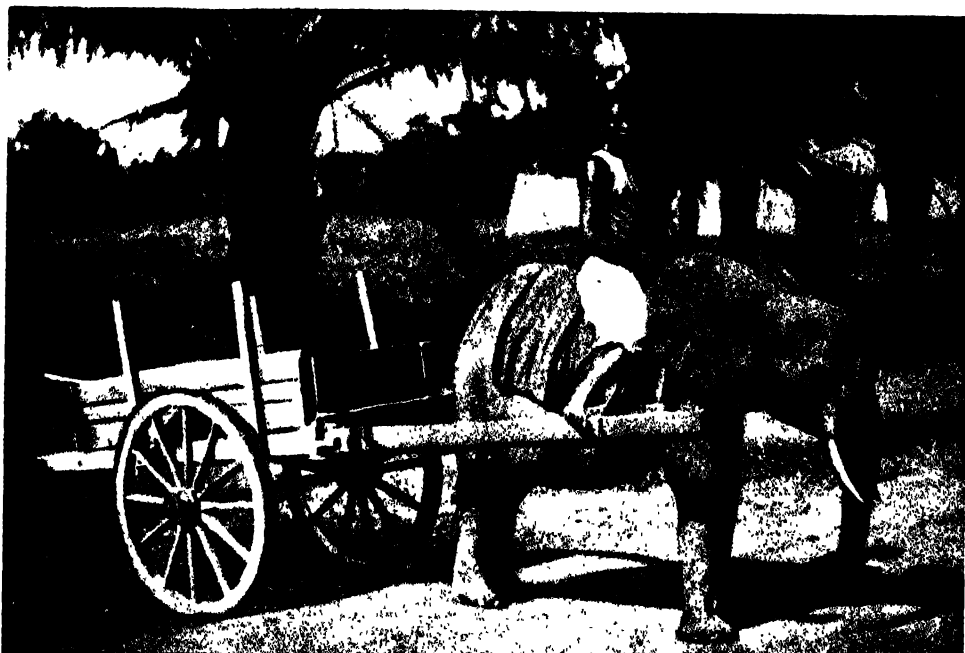
and the most characteristic thing about an elephant. It is so delicate that the elephant can pick up a sixpence with it; and we have all heard stories of an elephant using it to punish people who have done him an injury. The elephant uses his trunk for conveying food and water to his mouth, and for squirting water or dust over his body. With his trunk he will gather grass, and pluck leaves from trees; yet the point of that trunk is so sensitive that he will not, in any circumstances, allow even his trusted keeper to touch it.

The elephant's tusks are as wonderful as the trunk. No other animal has such splendid ivory. The tusks of a full-grown elephant are frequently five or six feet long, and rare specimens have measured eight or ten feet. To the elephant, tusks are most useful, not only for lifting heavy objects but as weapons to defend itself or to attack its foes. The African species uses them also as instruments for digging up roots on which it very largely lives.

In Africa, elephants are killed for their ivory, and are seldom captured and trained. The sportsman, rifle in hand, hunts them on foot. Guided by African hunters, he creeps carefully through the dense undergrowth of the forest towards some spot where a herd or a stray "rogue" is believed to be. The greatest care is necessary, for a mistake may cost the sportsman his life. A charge from an infuriated elephant is terrible. The monster can crash through the undergrowth at great speed, smashing the creepers before him like cotton threads. To be caught by that waving trunk, or on those gleaming tusks, is almost certain death.

The African elephant is usually larger than the Indian, frequently being ten or eleven feet high. It appears to be more powerful and active than its Asiatic cousins—and also more fierce when attacked. It can charge at a greater speed and maintain it for a longer distance.

It is said that for three hundred yards or so it can run at a speed equal to fifteen



E. N. A.

#### THIS CONGO BOY HAS MADE A SERVANT OF A PYGMY ELEPHANT

The African elephant we see here is only a young one, but that is not the sole reason why he is small. He is a pygmy, a kind of elephant that lives only in Equatorial Africa, and when full grown he will be no larger than a carthorse. African elephants are usually bigger than the Asiatic ones, and have much larger ears and tusks.



#### YOUNG WHITE ELEPHANT RECEIVING HOMAGE IN BURMA

A white elephant is regarded with a certain amount of respect in Burma and is greatly revered in Siam. It must be treated with such pomp in the latter country that the king, when angry with one of his nobles, gives him a white elephant, knowing the gift will ruin him. The London Zoological Gardens, in 1926, acquired one of these rare beasts.

## MY LORD THE ELEPHANT

miles an hour, and for a full hour can keep up a pace of ten miles, as against the Indian elephant's six or eight. As a rule, too, its tusks are larger and usually both males and females possess them. The great difference between African and Asiatic elephants, however, is that the African has much larger ears.

In certain regions of West Africa there lives a race of pygmy elephants, which, even when full grown, are not very much more than five feet in height. The ears of these little elephants are not so crinkled as those of the ordinary African elephant. As we can see from the illustration in page 766, they may be tamed and trained to draw carts. They are much cheaper to feed than their big brothers.

The intelligence of "My Lord the Elephant" is a matter of dispute. Most people imagine that so huge an animal

must have a very large brain, and for this reason Indian idols represent the Hindu god of wisdom as having the head of an elephant. This, however, is not the case. The brain is very small in proportion to the size of the animal, and of a very inferior quality.

Even when trained, an elephant can only do what it has been taught to do. It cannot be left to act without its mahout to guide it. A famous traveller said that he never saw an elephant which would of its own accord interfere to protect his master. An enemy might assassinate the master at the foot of his favourite elephant, which would never attempt to interfere in his defence; he would probably run away or remain impassive unless guided or instructed by his mahout. The elephant will do nothing unless he is ordered. In view of this "My Lord the Elephant" is, after all, only fit to be a servant.



### FROM THE AFRICAN ELEPHANT COMES MOST OF THE WORLD'S IVORY

In a number of ways, apart from its general appearance, the African elephant differs from the Asiatic one. It likes the sunlight, for one thing, and is more savage. Also, instead of living on leaves, fruit and grass, it eats roots and the boughs of trees. It digs the roots up with its tusks—one of which is, in consequence, often worn down.



Nicholls

**DRAWING THE FAMILY WATER-SUPPLY FROM A BRAWLING STREAM**

Outlandish and unbecoming as they might seem to an English girl, the bright handkerchief that acts as a bonnet, the gaudy shawl and the flannel petticoat give the strong, graceful Irish colleen a great charm. She is a very hard worker, both in the house and in the fields, and may even cross to England or Scotland every year to make some money by harvesting.

# Ireland North and South

## ITS PEASANTS AND ITS TOWNSFOLK

At one point Ireland and Great Britain are only separated by a strip of water thirteen miles wide, yet the two countries and their peoples are very different. Ireland is a much older island than Great Britain, and has many differences in its plant and animal life, some of its plants and animals being common to North America and others to Spain. Exactly whence the ancestors of the Irishman came nobody really seems to know, but in Northern Ireland the people are chiefly the descendants of English and Scottish settlers and have little in common with the inhabitants of the Irish Free State.

**T**HE island which the English call "Ireland," the Irish call "Eire," and the poets of both nations call "Erin" and the "Emerald Isle" lies to the west of England, and is a little larger than Scotland, with a population of about four millions and a half. Formerly it consisted of five provinces, but now of four—Ulster in the north, Leinster in the east, Connaught and Munster in the west and south. Between them these provinces contain thirty-two counties.

The earliest history of Ireland is somewhat legendary, but the country was split up into a number of small kingdoms until the third century A.D., when a certain Cormac mac Airt made himself supreme, and ruled as Ard Rí, or head king, over all the lesser kings. His palace was at Tara, not far from Dublin, in county Meath.

Tara was for some centuries an important place, where warriors awaited the orders of the Ard Rí, and the court was thronged with bards who played their harps and chanted the praises of kings and heroes. To-day Tara is only a grassy mound, with not a stone to tell us of the royal court, or of the fact that it was once a great religious centre, the stronghold of Druids.

### *The Story of S. Patrick*

The first great figure in Irish history is that of its patron saint, S. Patrick. There are many conflicting accounts concerning him, but the most likely one says that he was of noble birth, born in North Britain, close to the Great Roman Wall, about 387 A.D. He was carried away into slavery in one of the many raids of the

Picts and Scots, when he was about sixteen, and set to mind the sheep of his master on the hills of Antrim, in Ulster.

Six years later he escaped and made his way to Gaul, which we now call France, and here, after much education and training, he was finally ordained bishop and returned to Ireland as a Christian missionary. There he preached before the Ard Rí at Tara, and proceeded to organize and establish the Christian religion.

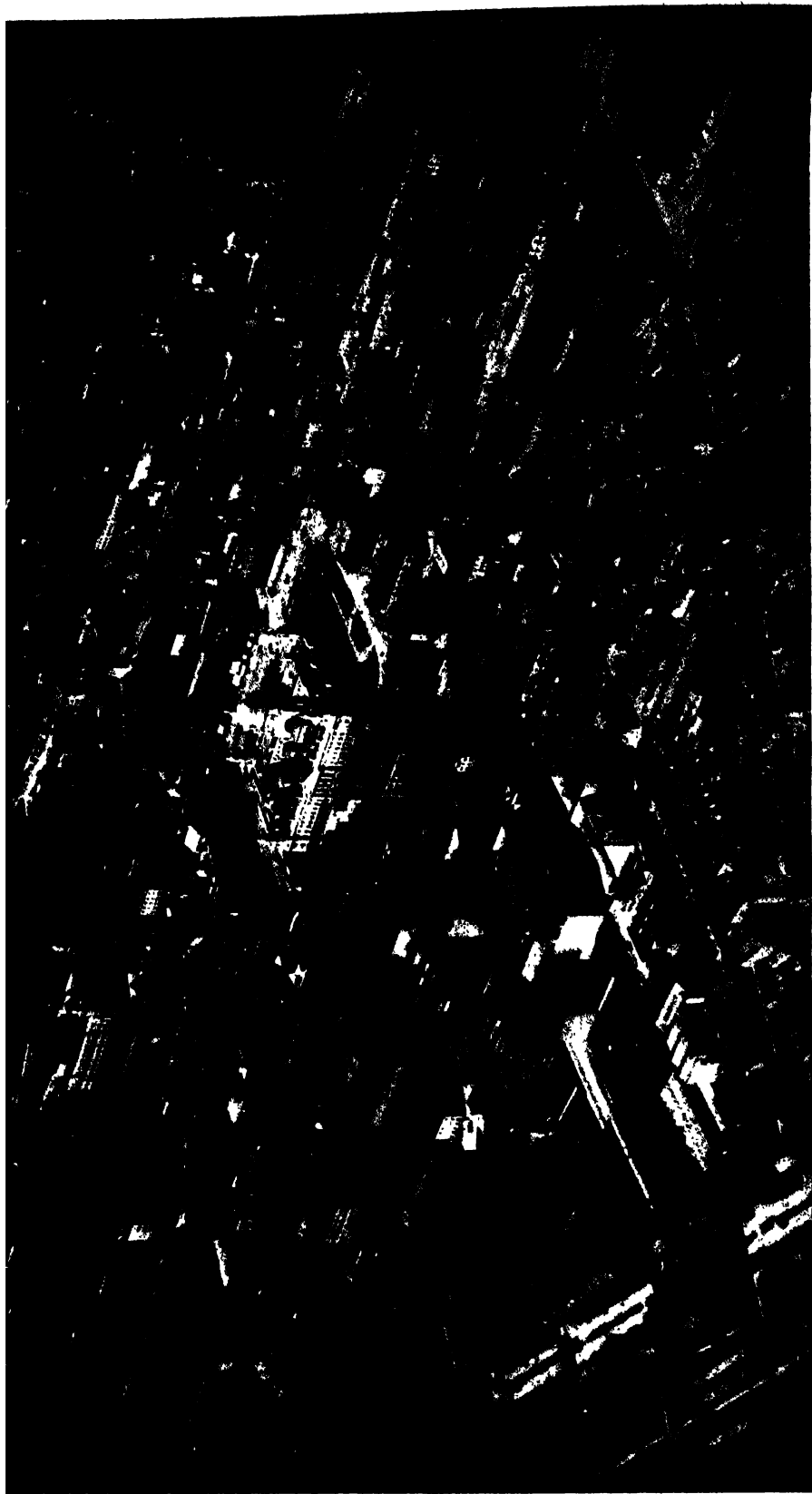
### *Learning in Early Times*

As a result of this, Ireland, during the next few centuries, became a place of Christian learning and culture. During the ninth and tenth centuries, however, it suffered much from invasion by Norsemen and Danes. Monasteries and colleges were burned, books were destroyed and scholars dispersed, until about the year 1002 A.D., when a patriotic leader, Brian Ború, became Ard Rí. This man finally broke the Scandinavian power at the battle of Clontarf, A.D. 1014, where he was killed.

In the reign of the English king, Henry II., Diarmid, King of Leinster, having a grievance against the Ard Rí, sought help from England, and Strongbow, Earl of Pembroke, took over an army to his assistance, married Diarmid's daughter Eva and settled in Ireland. Two years later Henry II. went over and exacted homage from the Irish kings.

After this, more and more adventurers and colonists came over and settled in the country. At one time English influence was confined to a district on the east coast called the Pale; but the Tudors made a determined effort to establish an





Aerial view

#### AN AIRMAN'S VIEW OF THE CENTRE OF THE RICH, INDUSTRIAL CAPITAL OF NORTHERN IRELAND

Belfast, the largest and most prosperous city in Ireland, is the capital built on the site of the old Linen Hall, since Belfast's great wealth is principally due to its linen industry, which was firmly established in the seventeenth century, and still flourishes. To-day, Belfast is also the new city hall of Belfast, with its imposing front and graceful dome, is seen in the centre of this photograph. It is appropriately celebrated for its ship-building yards which line the River Lagan.



Underwood

#### **SHEETS OF LINEN IN A BLEACHING FIELD NEAR BELFAST**

When fresh from the looms, linen-cloth is of a dirty yellow colour. Before it becomes pure white it has to undergo several bleaching processes, including that of being exposed to sunlight in the open air like the sheets seen in the background. The flax used for the making of the famous Belfast linen is largely grown in Northern Ireland.

English claim to all Ireland, and during Elizabeth's reign the conquest was complete—for the time being.

During the reign of James I. there was a rising in Ulster. When this was crushed most of the surviving native landowners were driven from home and their estates were divided among colonists from England and Scotland. Later risings brought Cromwell and his Ironsides into the country, and a rebellion in 1798 was followed, in 1801, by the Act of Union, which abolished the Irish Parliament and made the members sit in the Parliament at Westminster.

This arrangement was distasteful to the majority of the Irish people, and now, as a result of Acts of Parliament passed in 1920 and 1922, Ireland is divided into two independent portions.

In the north, six of the counties of Ulster—namely, Down, Antrim, Armagh, Tyrone, Londonderry and Fermanagh, peopled mainly by Protestants of English and Scottish descent—form the territory

of Northern Ireland under a governor, representing the king, with a Parliament at Belfast, the capital. The remainder of the country, peopled mainly by Roman Catholics of Gaelic race, forms the Irish Free State, with a governor-general representing the king, and a Parliament sitting in Dublin, the capital.

The centre of Ireland is one large plain, the mountain ranges being mostly along the coast. In the west, particularly in Connaught, these end in a barren, rocky coastline. In some places on the mainland and on the islands which fringe the coast, the people have carried up earth and sand, often on their backs, and made little patches of cultivable land.

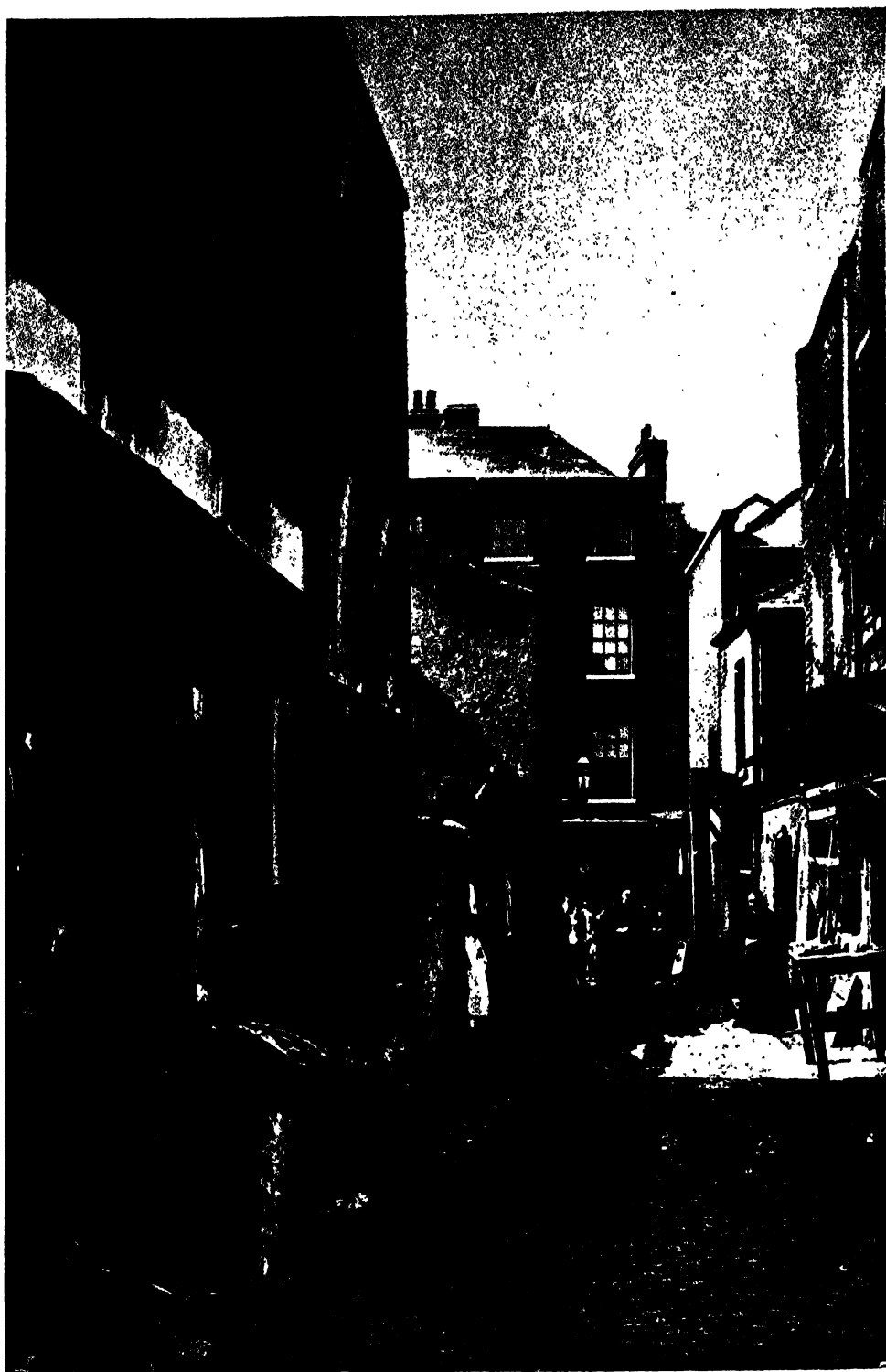
Ireland has numerous rivers and lakes. The Shannon is the biggest river, and Lough Neagh, in Ulster, is the largest lake in the British Isles, whilst the lakes of Killarney, immortalised in a famous song, which nestle amid the hills of Kerry, where the red deer still roam wild and rare plants and ferns are found, deserve all that the



**THROGGED SHIPPING AND THE BUSTLE OF LOADING AND UNLOADING AT THE QUAYSIDE IN DUBLIN**  
Dublin, the capital of the Irish Free State, is a fine city set in the midst of very beautiful country. It is an important centre of educational and commercial activity. Ships can make their way directly from the sea by way of the wide and deep River Liffey to Dublin's excellent modern docks and quays, and thus an important part of the trade of the Free State comes to the historic city. Its manufacturers have suffered a great deal in the past from interference resulting from political unrest ; nevertheless it has some very flourishing industries.



**DUBLIN'S CHIEF THOROUGHFARE, SACKVILLE STREET, AND O'CONNELL BRIDGE OVER THE LIFFEY**  
 A statue to O'Connell, the famous Irish patriot, who in the nineteenth century did so much to unite Irishmen of all classes to work for their country's good, faces us across the broad bridge that takes its name from him. Beyond the statue is Sackville Street, which, risen anew in London, that was erected in 1806 to the memory of Lord Nelson.



Lawrence

### TINY SHOPS AND ROUGH COBBLES IN DUBLIN'S SLUMS

Far different from Sackville Street, with its handsome buildings, or the Quays, with their air of prosperity, are the narrow roads and alleys of the district that lies about the Castle and the cathedrals of S. Patrick and Christchurch, on the southern bank of the Liffey. This is the oldest part of Dublin, and is everywhere stamped with the mark of poverty.



Outler

#### **OLD-TIME COSTUME THAT IS BUT SELDOM SEEN TO-DAY**

As in other countries, national customs are fast disappearing in Ireland. The jaunting-car and donkey-cart are little used to-day, and pigs are even taken to market by motor-car instead of being driven. The knee-breeches and tail-coat, too, which were once so commonly seen in Ireland, are now only occasionally worn, and then by very old men.



# PEASANTS AT THEIR COTTAGE DOOR IN A CONNEMARA VILLAGE

According to the strange fashion of the peasants of Connemara, a district of Galway, the woman who stands by the doorway of this thatched cottage wears a red flannel petticoat over her head and shoulders instead of a shawl. Much of the coarse cloth worn by the natives is woven from the wool of Connemara sheep.

poets have said and sung concerning them. Owing, amongst other causes, to these many rivers and lakes, and to the fact that Ireland receives warm, wet winds from the Atlantic, the climate is moist and equable, never very hot or very cold, and the land, though it is not nearly so well wooded as England, produces luxuriant grass.

It is this rich mantle of grass that gives Ireland the name of the Emerald Isle

and has made green the national colour. The national emblem, too, is green—the shamrock, which Irishmen wear in their buttonholes on S. Patrick's Day, March 17th. The shamrock is a small plant of the clover family, with a three-lobed leaf, and S. Patrick is supposed to have used it as an illustration of the Trinity.

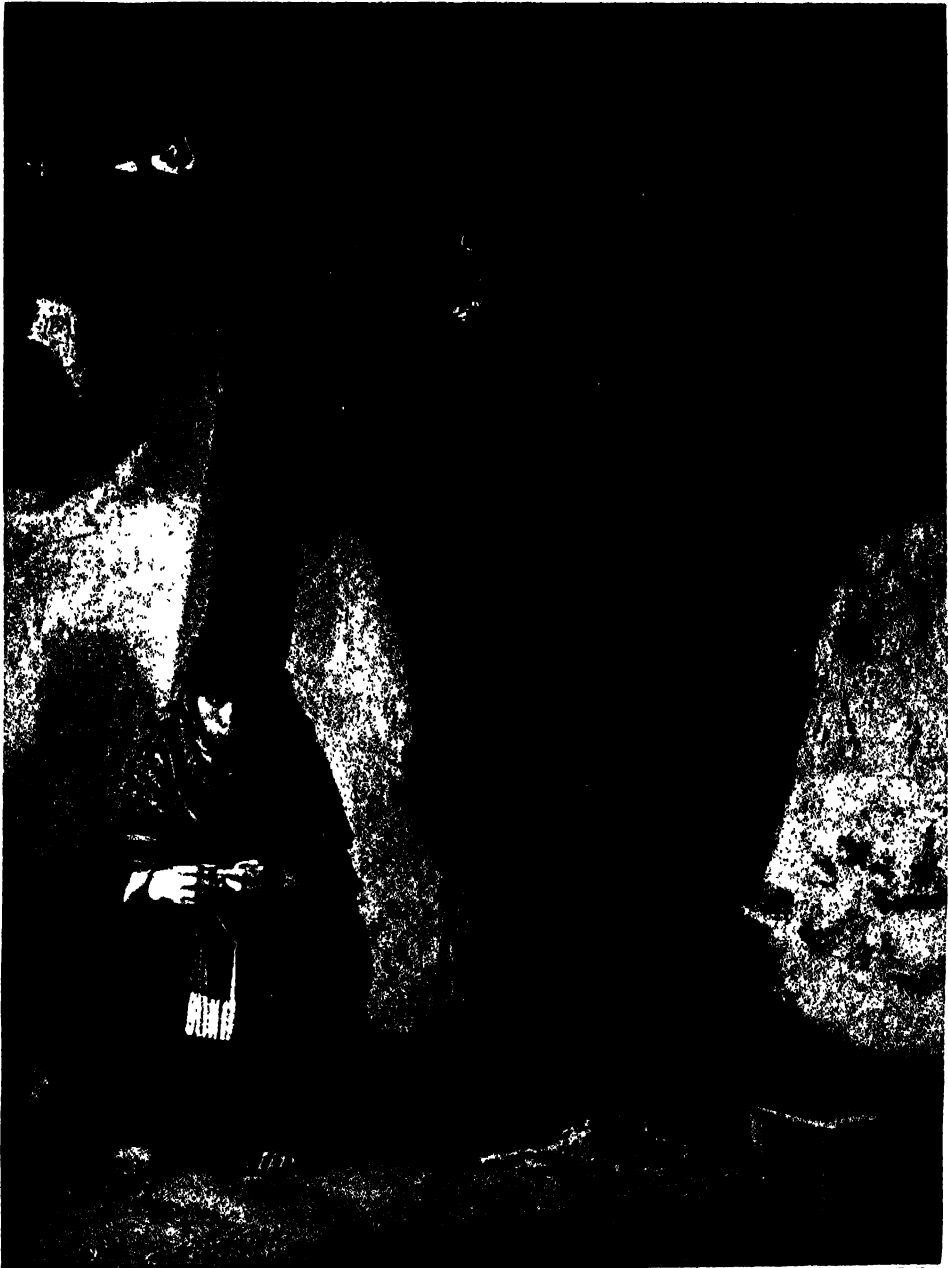
Dublin, now the capital of the Free State and formerly capital of all Ireland, is a fine, spacious city. At one time a

## IRELAND NORTH AND SOUTH

stronghold of the Scandinavian invaders, it later became the centre of the Anglo-Norman colony, and from that time onward its position has never declined. Both Anglo-Norman and Scandinavian have left many traces of their settlements

in certain surnames prevailing in different parts of the country. De Lacy is an Anglo-Norman name, Doyle is Gaelic for Dane, and Swayne is a Norwegian surname.

Most of the cities of Ireland have two cathedrals—one Protestant and one



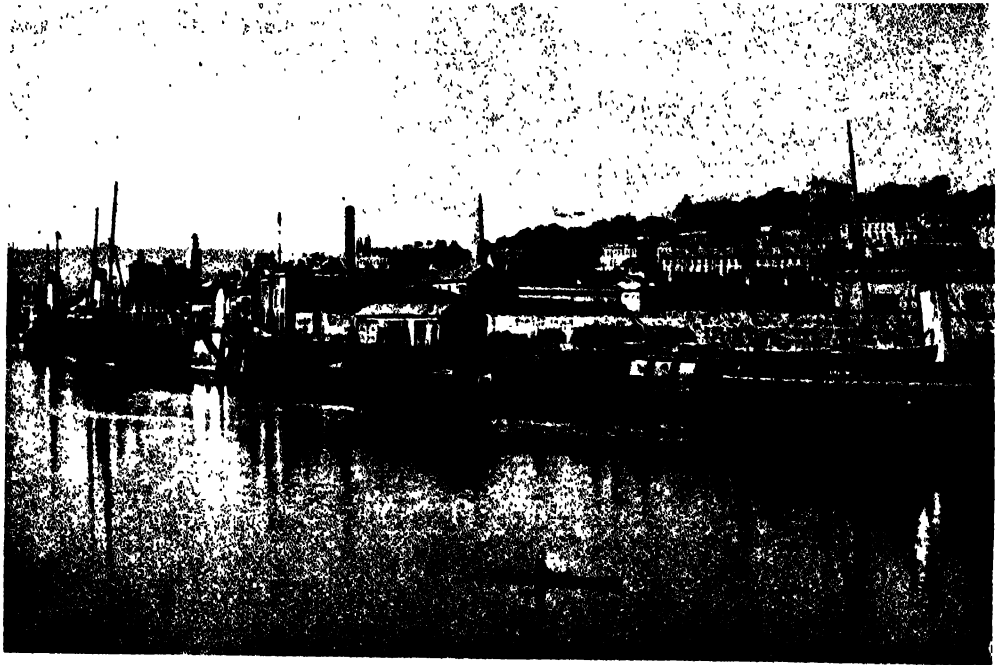
### INDUSTRY AT THE FIRESIDE IN A HUMBLE CONNEMARA HOME

The scantily-furnished room, in which the housewife sits knitting, is typical of a cottage of the poor folk of Connemara. The peat fire is usually kept smouldering night and day, since peat is easily obtained. This woman goes bare-foot, although Connemara has become celebrated for the woollen stockings manufactured by the villagers.





**CATTLE MARKET AT TIPPERARY, THE QUIET COUNTY TOWN THAT A SONG HAS MADE FAMOUS**  
Tipperry is the capital of an agricultural county, and its inhabitants depend almost entirely on cattle-rearing as a means of livelihood. In the south of Ireland its butter market is second only to that of Cork, and it has a factory for condensing milk. Tipperry was an old town when it first became important. That was in the reign of King John, who built a castle there. But very little was heard of the town, however, until, at the beginning of the Great War, our soldiers sang "It's a long, long way to Tipperry" as a marching song.



FAIR CORK CITY AND THE PLEASANT WATERS OF THE LEE

LAWRENCE

The River Lee is divided into two channels when it flows through Cork, which is the most important town in the south of Ireland, on account of its cathedral, college, and schools and its export trade. The brogue, as the dialect spoken by the Irish is called, is particularly soft and distinctive in Cork, a fact of which the natives are very proud.

Catholic—but Dublin has two Protestant cathedrals and a pro-cathedral which is Catholic. The two Protestant cathedrals are Christchurch and S. Patrick's. The former was founded by the Danes and rebuilt by Strongbow, who is buried there. Here, too, in 1487, the child-impostor, Lambert Simnel, was crowned king, afterwards serving as a scullion in Henry VII.'s kitchens. S. Patrick's was founded in 1190. In this cathedral, of which he was Dean, lies Jonathan Swift, author of "Gulliver's Travels," and here the Prince of Wales, afterwards Edward VII., was installed as a Knight of S. Patrick.

Dublin University, better known as Trinity College, dates from Queen Elizabeth's time. In the library of Trinity are many valuable manuscripts, including the Book of Kells. This is a copy of the Gospels in Latin, the work of an eighth century scribe. For elaborate ornamentation and workmanship it has no rival. Here also is a harp called "Brian Ború's harp," which may have belonged to some bard of Brian Ború's court, for it is reputed to be more than 900 years old.

Ulster is the chief manufacturing province of Ireland; spindles and looms are incessantly at work there turning out some of the most beautiful linen, damask, cambrics and embroidered muslins in the world. Belfast, the centre of the linen trade, was a fortress and fishing village 400 years ago; to-day it is a thriving city with many fine buildings, and extensive docks and shipyards where are built some of the largest ocean liners. Armagh, another of the linen towns of Ulster, is built picturesquely on the side of a steep hill. One of S. Patrick's first churches is believed to have been here, and it early became a seat of learning.

The city of Cork, the third city of Ireland, has many manufactures and also a famous butter market. About ten miles south-east, on an island in Cork Harbour, is Queenstown, a regular port of call for trans-Atlantic steamers. This town, formerly known as the Cove of Cork, changed its name after a visit from Queen Victoria in 1849. Cork Harbour is so extensive that as many as 600 merchant vessels have been in harbour at once.



**FISHERMEN CARRYING THEIR LIGHT AND SEAWORTHY CURRAGH TO THE SEA AT INISHMAAN**  
 Curraghs, which are made of thick, tarred canvas stretched over a wooden frame, have been used by the Aran Islanders for many hundreds of years, and withstand the fierce buffeting of the Atlantic. The Gaelic word "curragh" is akin to our English word "coracle."

Outer



**ARAN ISLANDERS FEEDING THE GREAT BONFIRES IN WHICH DRIED SEAWEED IS TURNED INTO KELP**  
 The shore is made to yield a crop in the Aran Islands, since seaweed is known as kelp, are obtained the soda-salts used in the manufacture of there collected, dried in the sun and burnt. From its ash, which is soap and iodine, which were once very important for glass-making.

Outer



#### STORES OF FUEL FROM THE EARTH FOR USE IN WINTER

In nearly every peasant cabin in Ireland brown lumps of what seems to be dried turf are burned instead of coal. If we lifted one of these, we should find that it was very light and that it did not dirty our hands in the least. This is peat, which is obtained in great quantities from the mountain bogs of Ireland.

Not far from Cork is Blarney Castle, in the outer wall of which is a stone, the kissing of which is supposed to endow the kisser with a persuasive tongue. Formerly it was usual to let the would-be orator hang down by the heels to perform the rite, but to-day he reaches the stone through a hole cut in the wall. It is this custom which has given rise to the phrase, "None of your blarney."

Apart from the manufactures of the towns, there are various cottage industries carried on wherever the population is scattered. In many of the peasants' cottages in Donegal and Connaught woollen goods, cloth and carpets are made, and the whole family takes part in the work, the men doing the weaving, the women the spinning and dyeing. Hand-

made laces, crochet and "sprigging"—that is, embroidering on muslin—are other cottage industries, though much of this dainty work comes from the convents.

Along the coasts and by the rivers and lakes there are important fisheries, but in the interior the people for the most part are engaged in pastoral or agricultural pursuits, particularly in Munster and Leinster. Pigs and potatoes are raised all over Ireland.

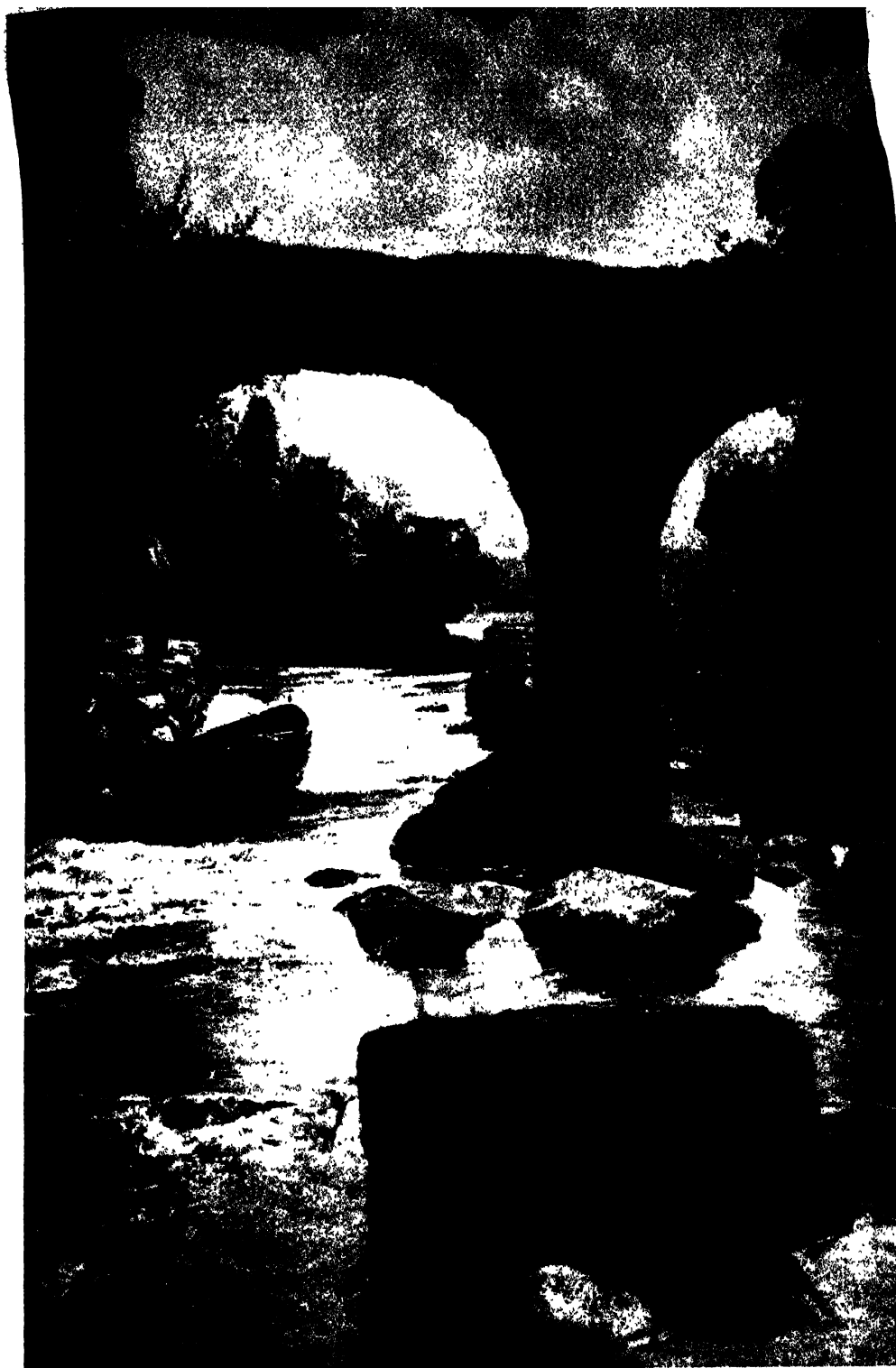
Raleigh introduced the potato there, and it grew so well and so easily that it became to the Irish what rice is to the Hindus and wheat to the English—the staple food. On the rare occasions when the potato crop has failed Ireland has starved. Between 1845 and 1847 there occurred a terrible potato famine; numbers



LAWSON

# WILD LOVELINESS OF NATURE AMONG THE MOUNTAINS AND LAKES OF KILLARNEY IN COUNTY KERRY

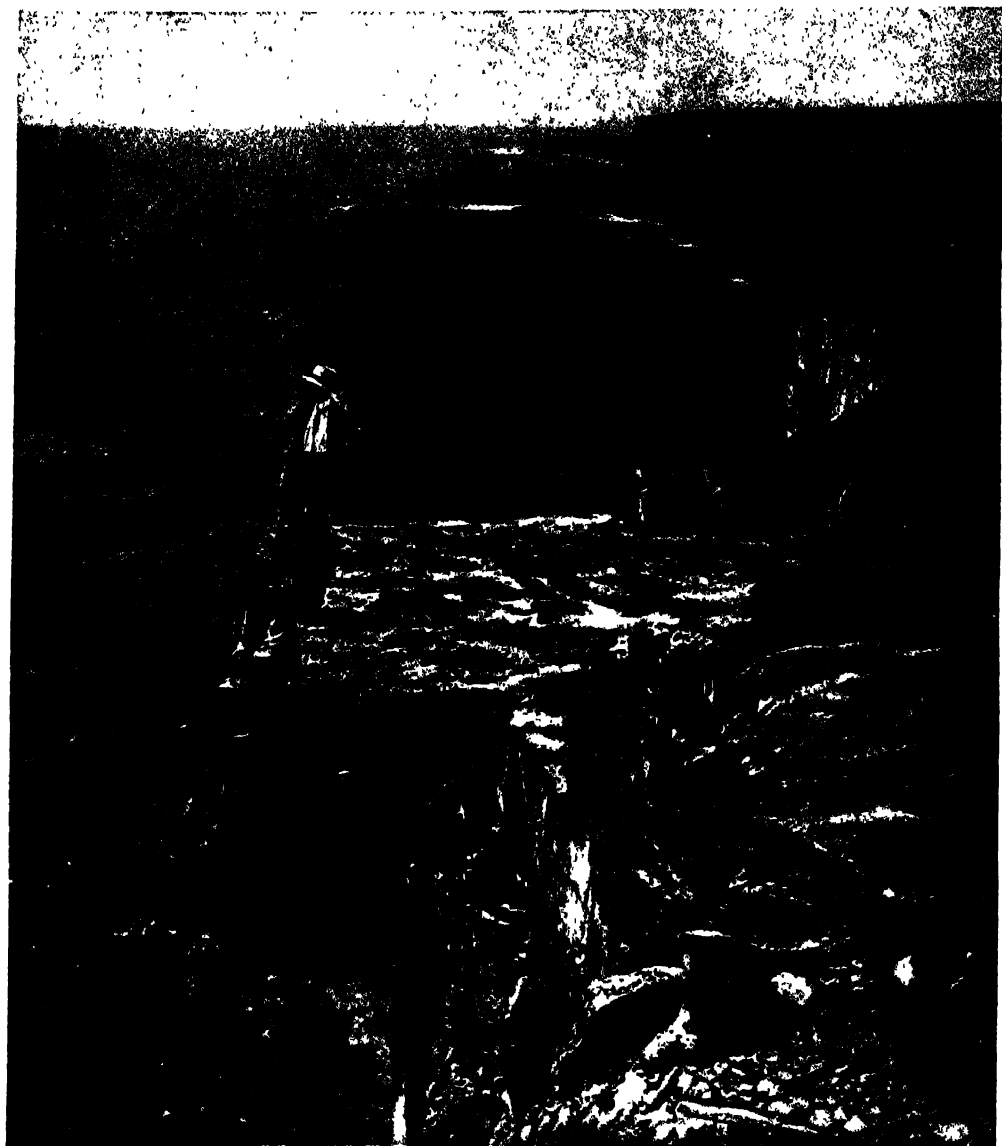
The Killarney district has long been famed for the exquisite beauty of its chain of three lakes. These lie among high, rugged mountains and dense woods, and are studded with islands, tree-covered and of varying shapes and sizes. The Lower Lake, or Lough Leane, a magnificent sheet of water four miles long, under which, the natives say, lies the fairy City of Perpetual Youth, is the largest of the three. A narrow peninsula separates it from the Middle or Muckross Lake, which is connected with the Upper Lake, the smallest, by a winding stream.



Underwood

#### OLD WEIR BRIDGE OVER THE LONG RANGE NEAR KILLARNEY

The Long Range, which is about two and a half miles in length and connects the Upper and Middle Lakes of Killarney, flows through wild and thickly wooded country. Red deer may occasionally be seen on its banks, and until a few years ago eagles nested on a precipice that overhangs the stream. The whole course of the Long Range is navigable.



Cutler

#### DIFFICULT ANGLING FROM THE STEEP CLIFFS OF INISHMORE

Although the ocean is eighty feet below the cliff-top, so that many a fish may be lost while it is being drawn up to them, these anglers of Inishmore, the largest of the Aran Islands, hope to catch a few pollack and rock-bream for dinner. The crops on Inishmore are very poor, so that fish form an important part of the islanders' food.

of people died ; and then from the harbour of Cork started a steady stream of emigrants to America and Australia, which has gone on ever since, so that Ireland to-day has little more than half the population it had in 1845.

The land abounds in romantic castles, monasteries, ruined abbeys, round towers and other relics of the past. The round towers, some of which rise to a great height, are usually found near churches and served as belfries, but they were

built, in the ninth century and later, as a defence against the invading Scandinavians. A watcher on one of these high towers could see the foe advancing and give the alarm which would bring the natives hurrying to the tower for safety. The High Crosses which we find standing alone in various parts of Ireland serve as memorials or to mark the boundary of some sanctuary.

Every cottager keeps a pig or pigs, and so profitable is this most useful animal



Underwood

### PILLARS ERECTED BY NATURE MAKE THE GIANT'S CAUSEWAY

Once upon a time, a fairy tale relates, a giant travelling to Scotland used this causeway, which has ever afterwards been known as the Giant's Causeway. It is on the northern coast of Antrim, and consists of thousands of basalt columns, which were formed in the distant past by the cooling of a stream of lava from a volcano long since extinct.

that it has long been known as "the gintleman that pays the rint." Across Munster, from Tipperary through Limerick and Kerry right to the Atlantic, runs a fertile tract known as "the Golden Vale," which is given up to agriculture and dairy farming. Tipperary has always been famous for its butter and bacon, though many people who never heard of either sang the praises of "Tipperary" a few years ago. The song "It's a long, long way to Tipperary" was written about

1912; it became a barrack-room song, and during the Great War it was the favourite marching tune of the British troops.

The people of Ireland are mostly of Gaelic race, with black hair and blue eyes. By nature they are impulsive and warm-hearted, witty, bright and clever, simple and well-mannered. But though loving and lovable, particularly in their home life, they are capable of fierce hatred and are born fighters, loving a fight for its own sake. So it is not to be wondered at



## IRELAND NORTH AND SOUTH

that Ireland has given the world such famous soldiers and sailors as the Duke of Wellington, Lord Kitchener and Admiral Lord Charles Beresford.

The most "Irish" part of Ireland is Connaught, where towns are few and factories almost unknown. During the Middle Ages, when Galway city did a big trade with Spain, certain Spanish merchants settled here and intermarried with the Irish. Some of their descendants

in Galway to-day are very dark and have a foreign look about them. The surname "Costello" found here is clear evidence of Spanish origin.

Partly Spanish, too, are the people of the Claddagh, a district in Galway, for they are descendants of survivors from part of the Armada which was wrecked on the coast. Until quite lately these people were very exclusive, never marrying with outsiders and allowing no strangers among



Outler

### ACHILL ISLANDERS AT WORK ON THEIR SIMPLE FLOUR MILL

In spite of the fact that they depend for food almost entirely on the year's crops, the natives of Achill Island till the soil in a primitive and wasteful manner. They grind their grain, too, in a handmill made of two flat stones such as we see here. Exactly the same type of mill was used thousands of years ago by primitive man.



Underwood

#### DWELLERS BY THE STORM-BEATEN SHORES OF ACHILL ISLAND

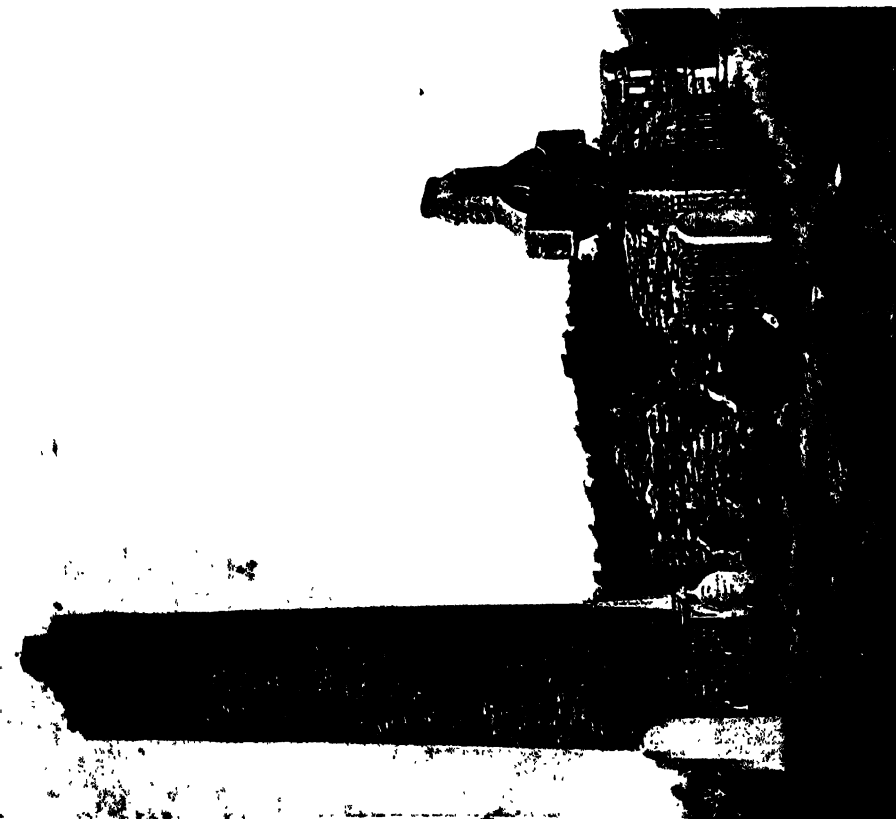
Achill Island, which lies in the Atlantic off Mayo, is bleak and mountainous. The natives rear pigs, cattle and poultry and cultivate small patches of oats, rye and potatoes ; but famine is a constant menace. In the villages, so poor are the peasants that we find them sharing their hovels with pigs and hens.

them. They spoke Irish only, made their own laws and obeyed a ruler elected by themselves. They kept the feast of S. John, Midsummer Eve, with processions and the ceremonious lighting of fires.

The women dressed in blue mantles, red bodices and petticoats, and tied a kerchief over the head. They had a special wedding ring of pure gold, hand carved, in the form of two hands holding a heart. To-day strangers may settle amongst them, the midsummer festival has become a game for the children, who light bonfires

in the streets, and the picturesque dress is worn only on saints' days, especially "Patterns." The Pattern is the festival of the "patron saint" of any locality.

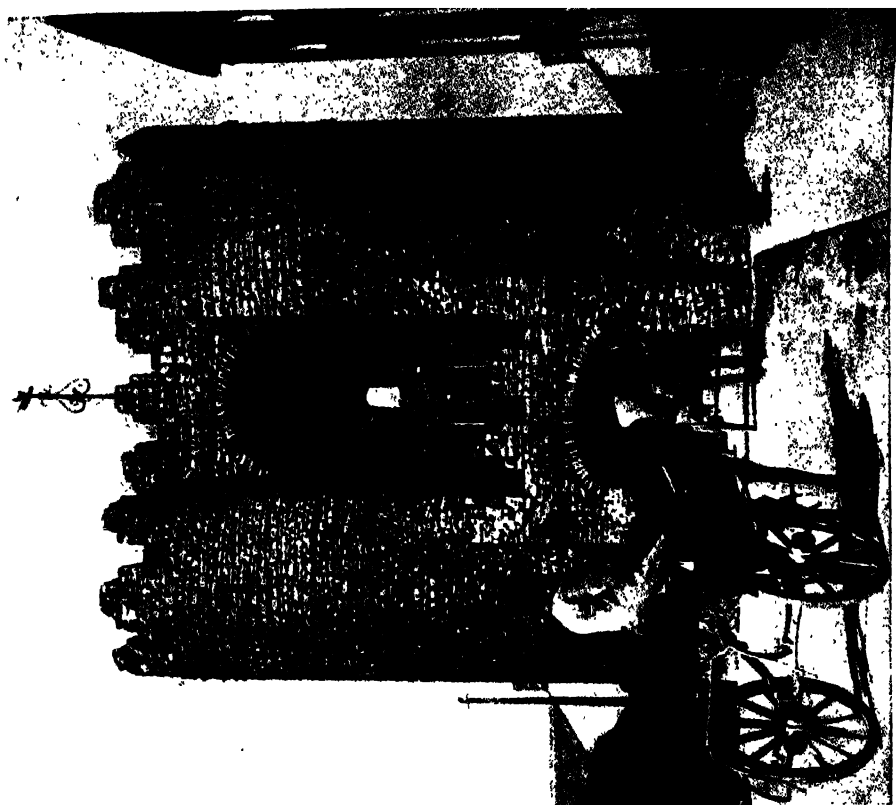
The dress of the Irish peasant varies with the locality ; to-day the tendency is for these distinctions to die out, and the only article which can be called a "national" garment, since it is to be seen all over the country, is the shawl. This is often black or grey, but in some parts it is fawn or brown and has a border of bright colours woven into it.



Lawrence

#### ROUND TOWER OF MONASTERBOICE, NEAR DROGHEDA

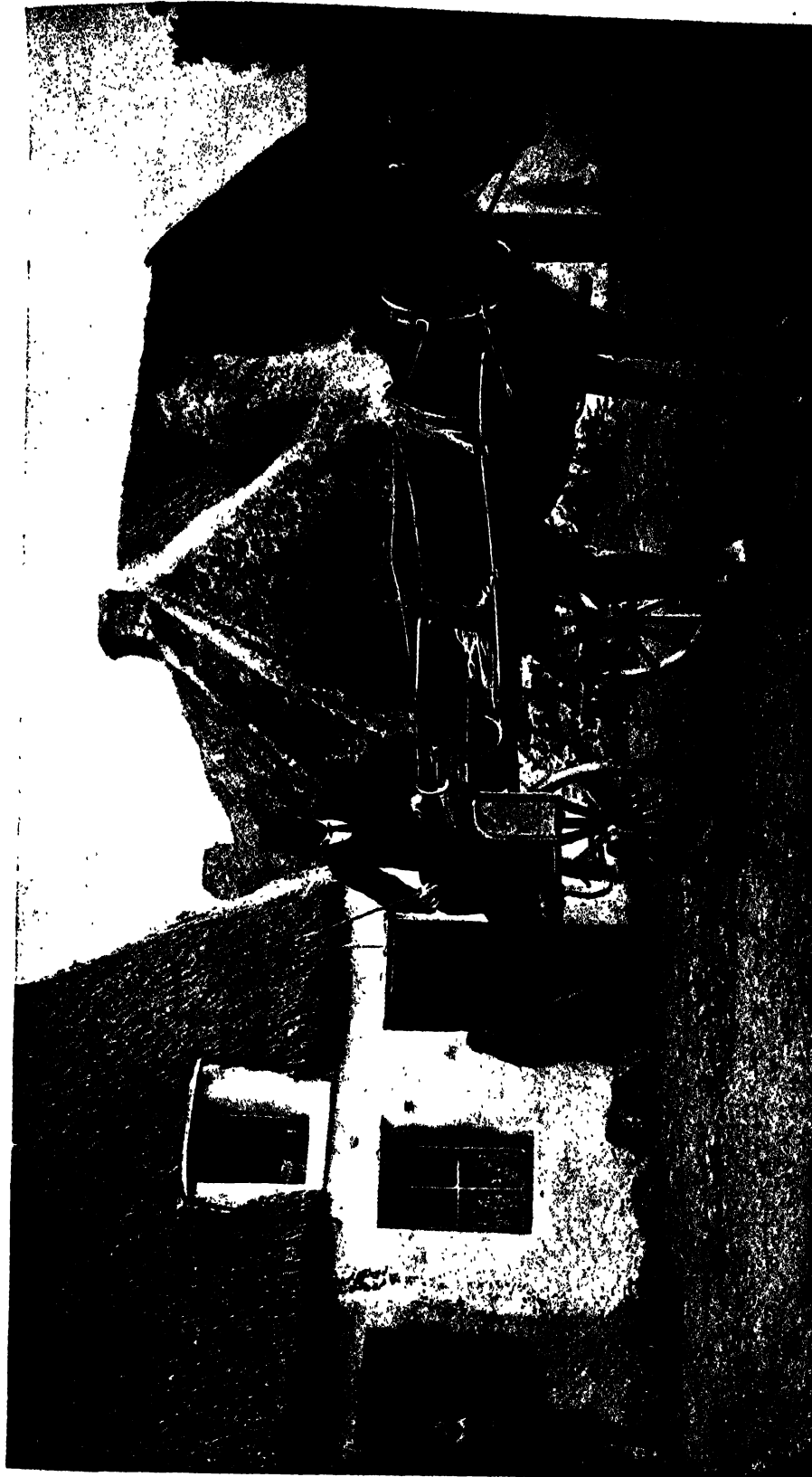
The tower of Monasterboice, which is said to date from the ninth century A.D., is typical of the round towers that we find throughout Ireland. It is 100 feet high, and its door, which would be reached by a ladder that could be drawn up, is several feet from the ground.



Drogheda

#### GRIM GATEWAY OF S. LAWRENCE AT DROGHEDA

Of the ten gates that pierced the walls of Drogheda, S. Lawrence's Gate, which is believed to have been built in the twelfth century, is the only one that now remains standing. The walls themselves which were once so strong, have almost completely disappeared.



Gallop

**JAUNTING-CAR WHOSE HINGED FOOTBOARD MUST BE RAISED IN THE NARROW ROADS OF GALWAY**  
This jaunting-car from the Claddagh can carry four passengers and light luggage as well as the driver, who usually sits directly behind his horse. Its footboards have been hinged so that they can be folded up over the seats to enable the jaunting-car to travel over the country

roads, which are extremely narrow in many parts of the district. At one time the fishermen who inhabit the Claddagh managed their own affairs, maintained their own customs and held themselves strictly aloof from their neighbours: but all this has now been changed.



Ostler

### HOMELY CRAFTS OCCUPY THE HOUSEWIFE'S LEISURE HOURS AMONG THE HILLS OF DONEGAL

Sheep-rearing is an important industry in Donegal, a mountainous county, with very poor soil, in the extreme north-west of Ireland, and from the wool rough, strong homespun is woven by the peasants. The old-fashioned spinning-wheel, like this one at which we see an old

woman working, is still sometimes used by the country people. The thatch with which the cottages of the peasants are roofed has to be held firmly in position by a netting of stout ropes to protect it against Atlantic gales. Instead of chimneys, there is a hole in the roof.



#### LITTLE BOYS OF THE ARAN ISLANDS WHO WEAR PETTICOATS

A kilt like that of the Scots Highlanders was at one time the national dress of the Irish, and it might be thought that these boys were wearing the historic costume. Their petticoats, however, are supposed to make them look like girls, since the simple peasants of western Ireland believe that bad fairies will steal little boys but will not harm girls.

In some places two shawls are worn, one over the shoulders and one over the head. But fashions do not change quickly in western Ireland, and in Connemara we may still see the women in red petticoats and the men in white flannel jackets and tam-o'-shanters. The Aran Islanders wear curious, calfskin shoes known as "pampooties." A piece is cut from the skin of a recently-killed calf and, while it is still supple, is fitted round the foot. As it hardens and dries it takes the shape of the foot. It is secured by thongs of skin passed round the ankle.

All over Ireland are scattered the white-washed, thatched cottages, often with only two rooms, and sometimes only one. Here the fire is still kindled on an open hearth. Over it, suspended from a hook, hangs an iron cooking-pot, or an iron kettle for boiling water to make the tea dear to the Irishwoman's heart; she calls it her cup of "tay"—as our own ancestors did. A favourite way of cooking meat is

to put it in a closed pot on the hearth, cover it completely with burning peat sods and leave it for hours. Peat, cut and dried, takes the place of coal; this peat is obtained from the bogs, and as the bogs cover one-seventh of the surface of the country there is no scarcity of fuel.

Fairs are an essential part of Irish life. General fairs are held in the streets of the towns twice every month. Ireland breeds fine horses, and horse fairs are held twice a year—in February and September. Once a year, when the little pigs are old enough to leave their mothers, they are packed into curiously-shaped carts called "creels," and are taken to the pig fair to be sold. Everybody goes to these fairs, for, in addition to the business of buying and selling, there are jugglers and fortune-tellers, ballad singers and fiddlers and various other attractions. Hurling, which is something like hockey, and Gaelic football—a combination of the Rugby and Association games—are the national

## IRELAND NORTH AND SOUTH

games, while steeplechasing may be said to be the national sport of Irish gentlemen.

Dancing has always been a favourite amusement of the Irish. Formerly the dancing of jigs and reels was part of the education of every boy and girl. A dancing master would go the round of the countryside during the winter months, the boys and girls meeting each night in one house or another. The master taught them the various steps, and they would dance away merrily to the accompaniment of his fiddle.

### *Keeping the School Fire Burning*

Each pupil was supposed to bring a candle to the lesson, so that the hostess should be spared the expense of lights. In similar fashion, until quite lately, it was customary for school children to take with them contributions of peat to keep the school fires burning.

It comes rather as a surprise to learn that in Ireland, especially in the country parts, marriages are often "arranged" for young people, much as they are in France and other countries, by the parents and friends of the bride and bridegroom. The explanation given for this is that a young farmer is usually too busy to do the necessary bride-finding for himself. As in France, the girl is supposed to have a dowry. When the young people have been married a month they pay their first visit to the bride's father and mother, but it is unlucky for a bride to enter her parents' house before the month is up.

### *Popular Belief in Fairies*

There is a great belief in good and ill luck in Ireland. As in the north of England, it is unlucky for a red-headed person to be the first to enter the house on New Year's Day; also to meet a red-headed woman when starting on a journey or any special enterprise is unlucky. If a stranger enters a dairy when butter is being churned he must lend a hand at churning or the butter will not "come"—i.e., the cream will not turn into butter. When this happens for no apparent reason it is said that the fairies have

stolen the butter, for in spite of education the belief in fairies dies hard.

The fairies were spoken of as the "good little people." Not every one could see them, but many were quite sure they had seen them at play or dancing in the moonlight. One of these fairies was called the Leprechaun, a little elf, who was said to sit by the wayside, dressed in a green coat and red knee breeches, bending his brown face over a shoe which he was always trying to repair. But there was one sad fairy in Ireland, the Banshee, whose duty it was to give warning of death by wailing in the night.

A custom known as "wakeing" the dead was once common. Friends and relations would watch the coffin all night, whilst at intervals intoxicating drinks were passed round and women mourners would raise a most dreadful wail known as "keening." "Keening" fortunately has now died out.

### *Beautiful Christmas Custom*

The festival of All Hallows' Eve, October 31st, is faithfully observed in most parts of Ireland, where it usually goes by the name of Holly Eve. Parties are given at which special foods are eaten. A kind of gruel is served in north Ireland on this occasion, and "barmbrack," a kind of dough cake, is also popular in some parts.

It used to be a common belief that the fairies were very busy on All Hallows' Eve, and no Irish child will touch a blackberry after that date, from the belief that the good little people in the course of their All Hallows' Eve wanderings, have cast a blight on the fruit.

Of all the Irish customs the most beautiful is one connected with Christmas. During this time Christmas candles, as long as a human arm and nearly as thick, are on sale in the shops. In every Catholic household one of these candles is lighted on Christmas Eve and left to burn all night. In the country parts, in addition to the burning candle, the house door is left open to signify a welcome to the infant Christ.

# Through Sunny Spain

## A LAND WHERE EAST AND WEST HAVE MINGLED

It seems fitting that from the land that at one time was the boundary of the known world should have sailed the ship to discover the New World. This discovery gave Spain vast wealth and power, of which she possesses little to-day. Perhaps the warm sunshine tends to languor rather than labour, for only in the province of Catalonia shall we find a busy, commercial district that can be compared with those of other countries. In some of the cities we shall find wonderful palaces and churches, many of which were formerly mosques, that are relics of the days when the Moors ruled over Spain.

If we glance at a map of Europe it looks as if Nature, when she created that continent, had intended to stop with France and then had changed her mind and added on a large, almost square country, and deliberately cut it off from France and the rest of Europe by an almost impassable barrier of mountains, the snowy Pyrenees. This square, apart from the strip on the west, which is Portugal, is the land of Spain, more than twice the size of Great Britain and with about half the population.

It has always been a rich, sunny land, full of colour, romance and great possibilities. To the ancients it seemed to be on the edge of the world, since Gibraltar, which was one of the Pillars of Hercules of the Greeks, was the limit of the then known world. The Phoenicians saw the land was rich and traded with the natives, forming colonies. The city of Cadiz, in the south, which the Greeks called the city of Aphrodite, "born of the foam," because of its splendour of white stone and snowy marble rising out of the blue sea, was the old Phoenician settlement of Gades and is, perhaps, the oldest town in Spain. It is better known to English people for Drake's exploit in 1587, when he "sing'd the King of Spain's beard" by entering the harbour and there burning the ships being prepared for the Great Armada. Cartagena, on the east, was settled by men from the Phoenician city of Carthage, in Africa.

### *Relics of Roman Spain*

The Romans, in their world conquest, took Spain, and the land was greatly favoured by the Roman emperors. All over Spain the mark of the powerful Roman civilization is to be seen to-day. Many of the city walls are built on Roman

foundations; great aqueducts exist—one at Segovia runs right through the market place of the city. Toledo has an amphitheatre for Roman games; Mérida has a Roman theatre, a circus, baths and a Roman bridge over the river.

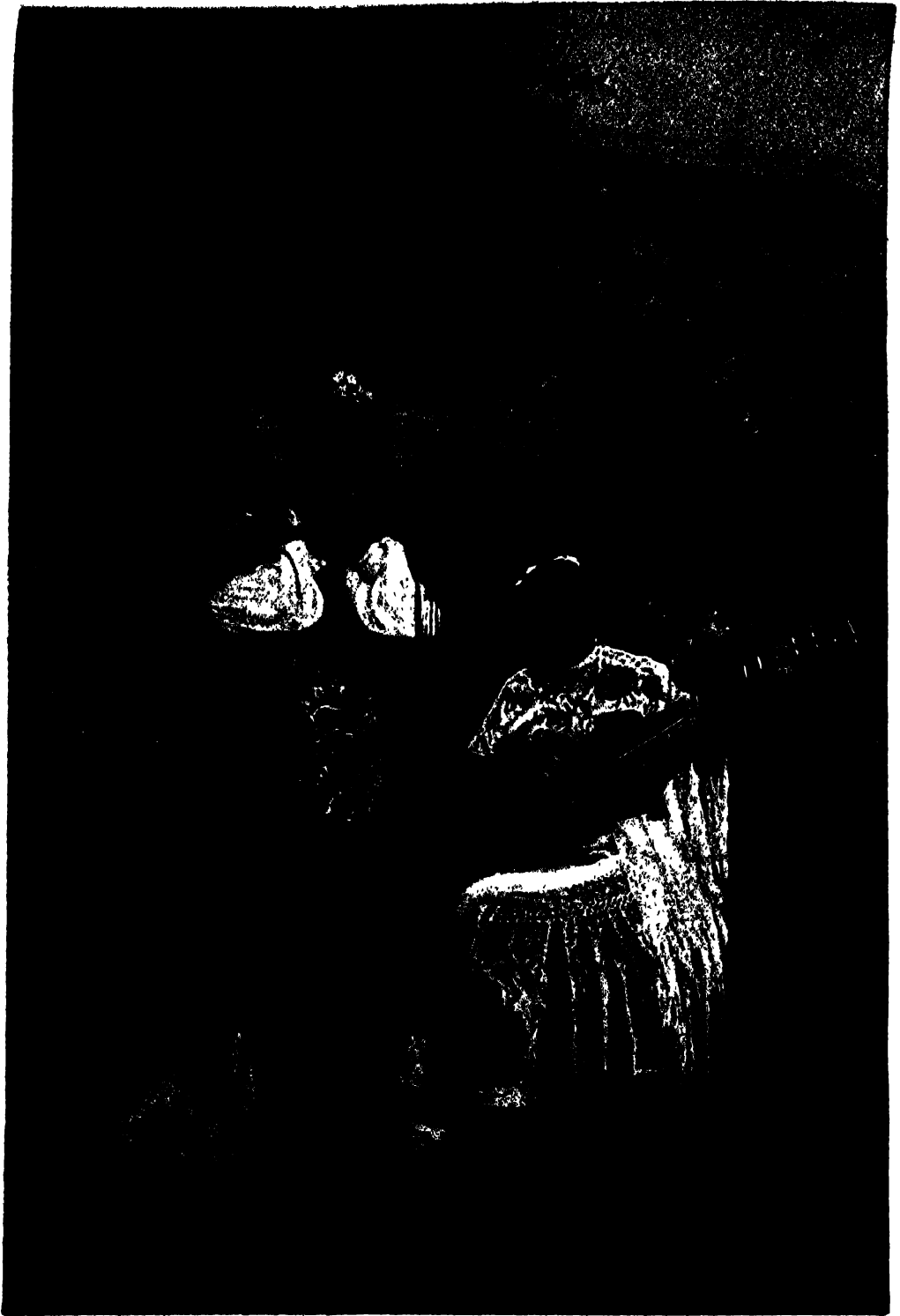
When Rome fell before the Goths and Vandals, Spain was conquered by the Visigoths, who lived in Central Europe. These barbarians adopted the language of their new country, and so modern Spanish is one of the Latin tongues. From the mixture of Goth, Roman and native tribes grew up the people of Spain.

### *Conquering Race from Africa*

The rich land attracted the Mahomedan Moors who were spreading along the north of Africa, and in 711 a number of Moorish warriors under a famous leader, Tarik, crossed over to Spain. The rock near his landing place was named after him, Gebel Tarik (now Gibraltar). A seven days' battle gave victory to the Moors. They conquered all the best of the country, driving such Gothic warriors as remained unconquered into the mountains of the north. They introduced palm trees and all sorts of fruits, cultivated the land diligently, established industries and built schools, colleges and some of the grandest palaces, mosques and gardens in the world. The Alhambra and the Generalife at Granada were both originally Moorish palaces, and many of the cathedrals were first built as mosques.

The mosque at Córdoba, within which to-day is a church, was called the "Wonder of Spain." It had a forest of columns, twelve hundred in all, of which about seven hundred remain; it had nineteen gateways of bronze and was lighted by four thousand





Photochrom

**A SPANISH GUITAR** is the perfect accompaniment to a Spanish song or dance, especially when we hear the gentle clapping of hands or the gay clatter of castanets accentuating the rhythm of its music. The two women whom we show here in their brilliant holiday attire are about to begin one of the favourite diversions of the countryfolk—a song that does not end until the singer's voice or her invention fail her, for she makes up her words as she sings, using, needless to say, frequent repetition.



Photochrom

**A LADY OF ANDALUSIA**, she has sparkling black eyes and knows very well how to arrange her wealth of hair. With her white lace, scarlet blossoms and coal-black tresses, the words of the old fairy tale might be applied to her—"As white as snow, as red as blood, and as black as ebony." On special occasions Spanish ladies arrange, over a high tortoiseshell comb, a scarf of silk lace of very beautiful design which is called a "mantilla."

It is either black or white, according to the occasion.



E N A.

#### SCHOLARS OF ALL AGES AT A VILLAGE SCHOOL IN MURCIA

At this queer little outdoor school in a sunny province of south-east Spain we see a reading lesson in progress. To us it seems shocking that a girl as big as the one kneeling before her peasant-mistress should not know how to read, but in Spain, though education is compulsory, there are not enough teachers for the schools.

seven hundred lamps burning perfumed oil. At Seville the Moorish palace of the Alcazar has a wall-carving so fine that it has been called a veil of lace in stone; and the Giralda, the belfry beside the cathedral, is a Moorish tower nearly as high as S. Paul's cathedral in London.

The tower is surmounted by a gigantic bronze statue of Faith, which is so wonderfully balanced that it turns in the wind like a weathercock. All these Moorish buildings were beautifully inlaid with coloured marbles, mother-of-pearl and rare woods; they were surrounded by gardens and courtyards where palms waved and oranges and myrtles bloomed,

and fountains, rising from marble basins, cooled the "hours of fire," as the hot afternoons are called in Spain.

But the Moors became too rich, quarrelled among themselves and forgot all about the remnant of fighting Goths away in the north. These were getting strong in the life of the mountains; they formed themselves into kingdoms, and, growing bold, attacked the Moors.

Then there came a time, in 1474, when the kingdom of Castile, the stronghold of old Christian Spain, the haughty province from which come most of the grandees and nobility of Spain, and the kingdom of Leon, were inherited by a

## THROUGH SUNNY SPAIN

Princess Isabella, and she married Ferdinand, son of the king of Aragon. Thus at last Christian Spain was united and a final attack was made on the Moors.

In 1492 Boabdil, last of the Moorish kings, surrendered his beloved, royal city of Karnattah—"Cream of the West"—to Ferdinand and Isabella. The Christians changed the name to Granada.

In this same year Columbus, the Genoese sailor, with the help of Isabella, set out on his voyage to the west and discovered the West Indies. Six years later he landed on the coast of South America. From this time onward gold

and precious stones, all the riches of the New World, poured into Spain. That is why, amongst the noble families of Spain, there are such wonderful stores of jewelry, and why images of the Virgin are decorated with precious stones that are priceless.

Charles V., the grandson of Ferdinand and Isabella, was the first prince in Europe, king of Spain and Naples, Holy Roman Emperor and king of Germany, duke of the Netherlands and lord of the New World beyond the seas. But the riches of the New World were wasted; the Moors and Jews were expelled from Spain and



**HARVEST TIME IN THE CORNFIELDS OF OLD CASTILE**

The former province of Old Castile, which occupies the north-central part of Spain, is now divided into eight provinces. It is a high plateau, walled in by great mountain ranges, and most of it is very dry and barren. In the south, however, we find fields of corn, which, as we can see, is cut and carried in a slow, old-fashioned way.



B. N. A.

**A MOORISH ANCESTRY** shows itself in the beautiful features of this Murcian peasant girl, who stands at the door of her cottage in her holiday clothes. Murcia, the capital of the province of that name, seems to stand in a flower garden, so fertile is the country around. It was founded by the Moors early in the eighth century.



Photochrom

**EVERY SPANISH WOMAN** has a "manto de Manila," a silk, embroidered shawl of great beauty and often of great value, but she only wears it when she dances or on festival days. The shawl is folded across from corner to corner and arranged so that the point hangs in the front. The ends are crossed and brought over the shoulders.



**M.A.**  
**MADRID, SPAIN'S CAPITAL, STANDS ON A HILL-CREST IN THE MIDST OF A WIDE AND DESOLATE PLAIN**  
We are looking at Madrid from across the River Manzanares, which, though rarely more than a trickle of water, is crossed by large and handsome bridges. Madrid has only been the capital of Spain since 1560. It is practically in the centre of the country, surrounded by a wide plain once covered with forests but now bare and bleak. The great dome we see on the skyline, right in the centre of the photograph, belongs to San Francisco, the finest church in Madrid. On the left is the Royal Palace, a long, flat building that is considered very beautiful.



M.A.

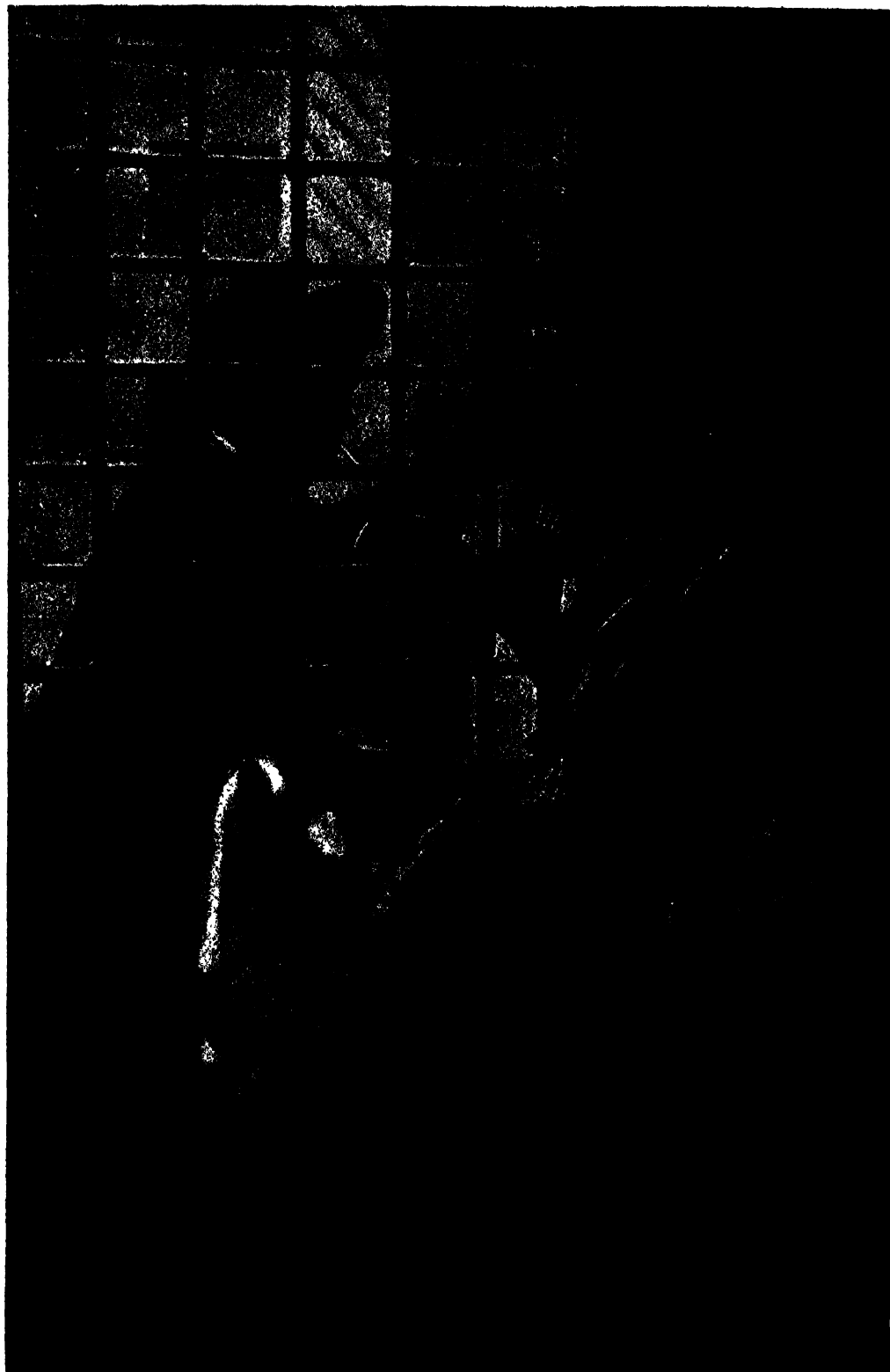
**BRIDGE THAT LEADS TO CORDOVA, ONCE THE "MECCA OF THE WEST" AND THE CAPITAL OF MOORISH SPAIN**  
The ancient city of Córdoba stands on the River Guadalquivir, in the north of Andalusia. It was founded by the Carthaginians, and at the far end a wonderful mosque that since 1236 has been a cathedral. This building, shown also in page 816, was considered by Mahomedans belonged in turn to the Romans, the Goths and the Moors, being finally taken by the Christians of Spain in 1235. It was greatest to be second in sanctity only to the holy Kaaba at Mecca.





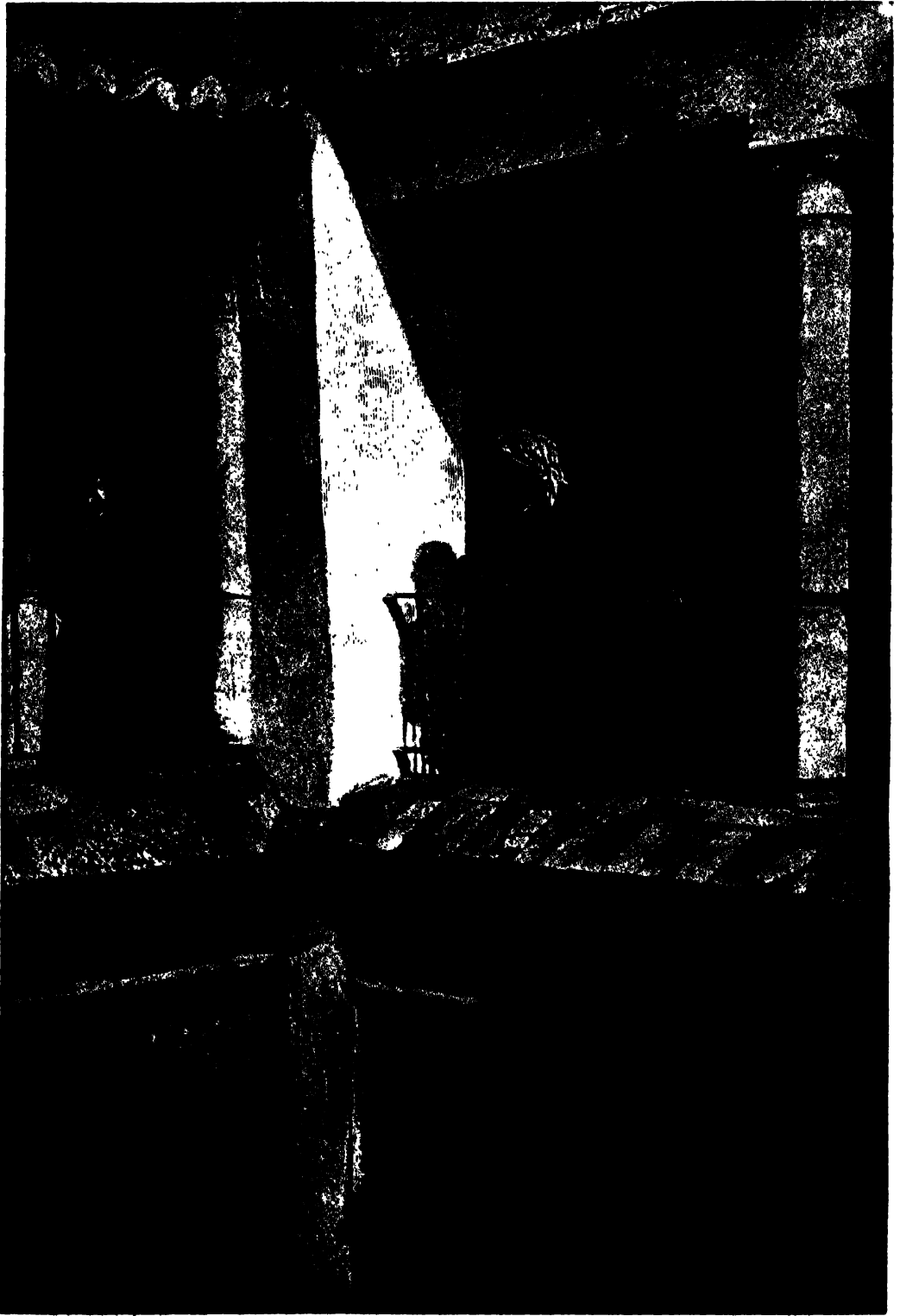
Lehnert & Landrock

**BRILLIANT COLOURS** are not worn every day by the ladies of sunny Spain. In the south, especially, black is the usual colour, bright hues being reserved for holidays or the dance. The man is not wearing the typical Spanish costume. He has not even a "faja" round his waist. The "faja" is the sash worn by the men seen in page 831.



Lehnert & Landrock

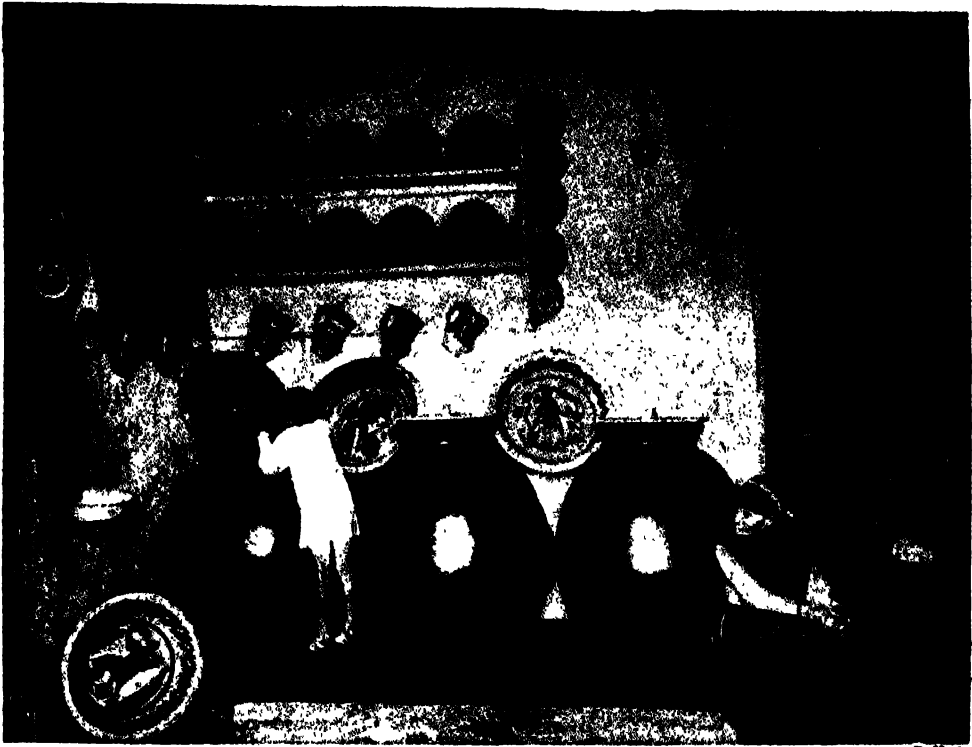
**BARRED WINDOWS** we see in plenty in beautiful Seville, and many of the buildings remain just as they were centuries ago, in the time of their Moorish builders. There is no glass in these windows, which, as we should see if we walked down a narrow street of Seville in the cool of the evening, witness many a serenade and lovers' meeting.



Nicholls

#### **GALLERIED COURTYARD OF A MOORISH HOUSE IN SPAIN**

All south Spain was once a domain of the Moors and, indeed, people say that even now the country is more akin to north Africa than to Europe. The artistry of the Moorish craftsman is very evident in the beautifully decorated arches round the courtyard, or "patio," of this house in Ronda, which was once a Moorish stronghold.



#### INSIDE THE KITCHEN OF A MURCIAN PEASANT'S HOME

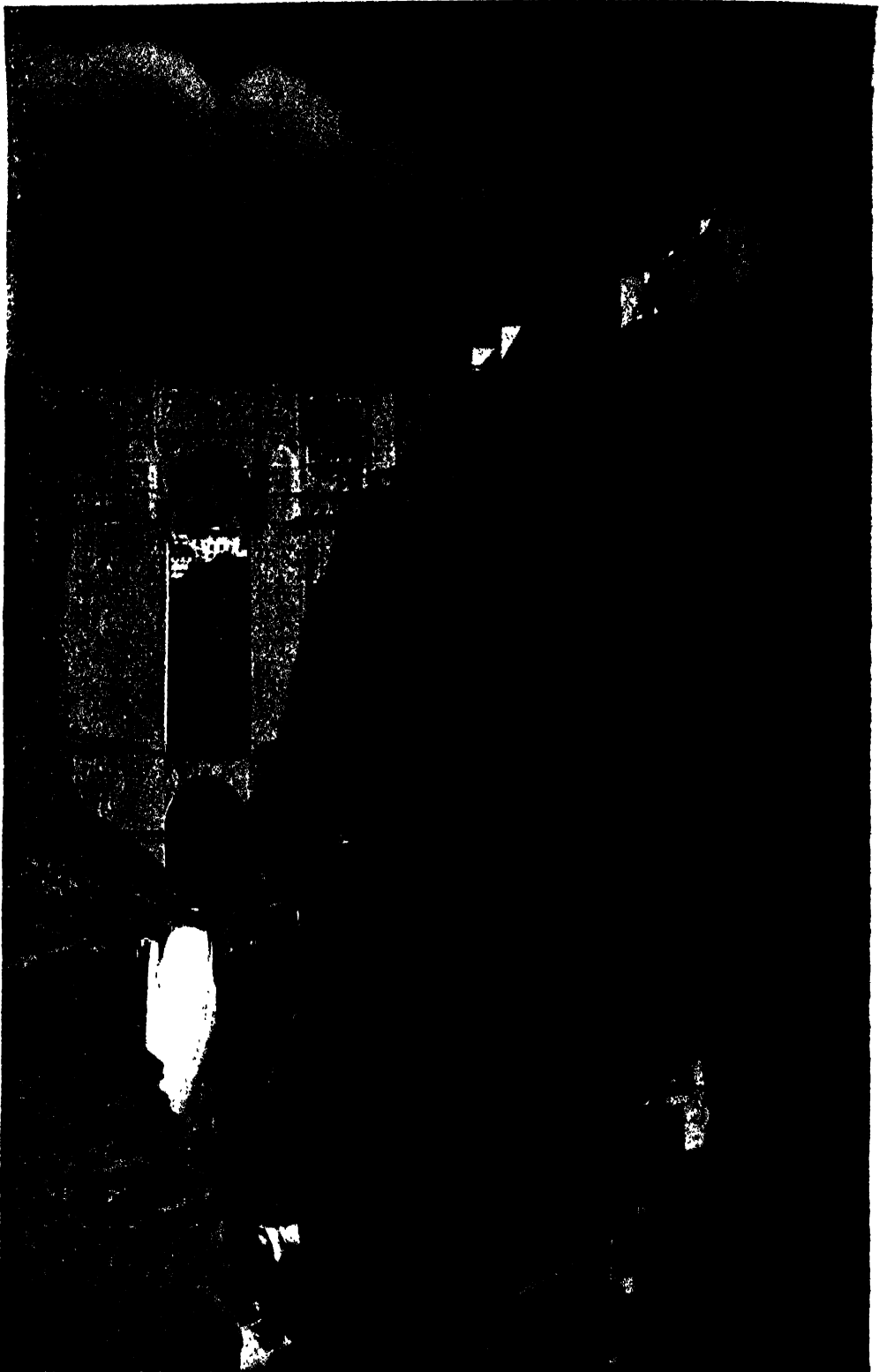
Murcia is a very thirsty land, and water there is very precious. In this household the water for domestic use is stored in huge jars that remind us of those which concealed the Forty Thieves. The beautiful dishes on the walls are of local workmanship, pottery being an art which the Spanish people owe in some degree to the Moors.

they took much of the prosperity of the country with them. The Spanish dominions overseas slipped away; Cuba and the Philippines, the last of the Spanish possessions, were lost as recently as 1899, and to-day the king of Spain holds nothing outside his country but a few small islands, some colonies in Africa and a protectorate over part of Morocco.

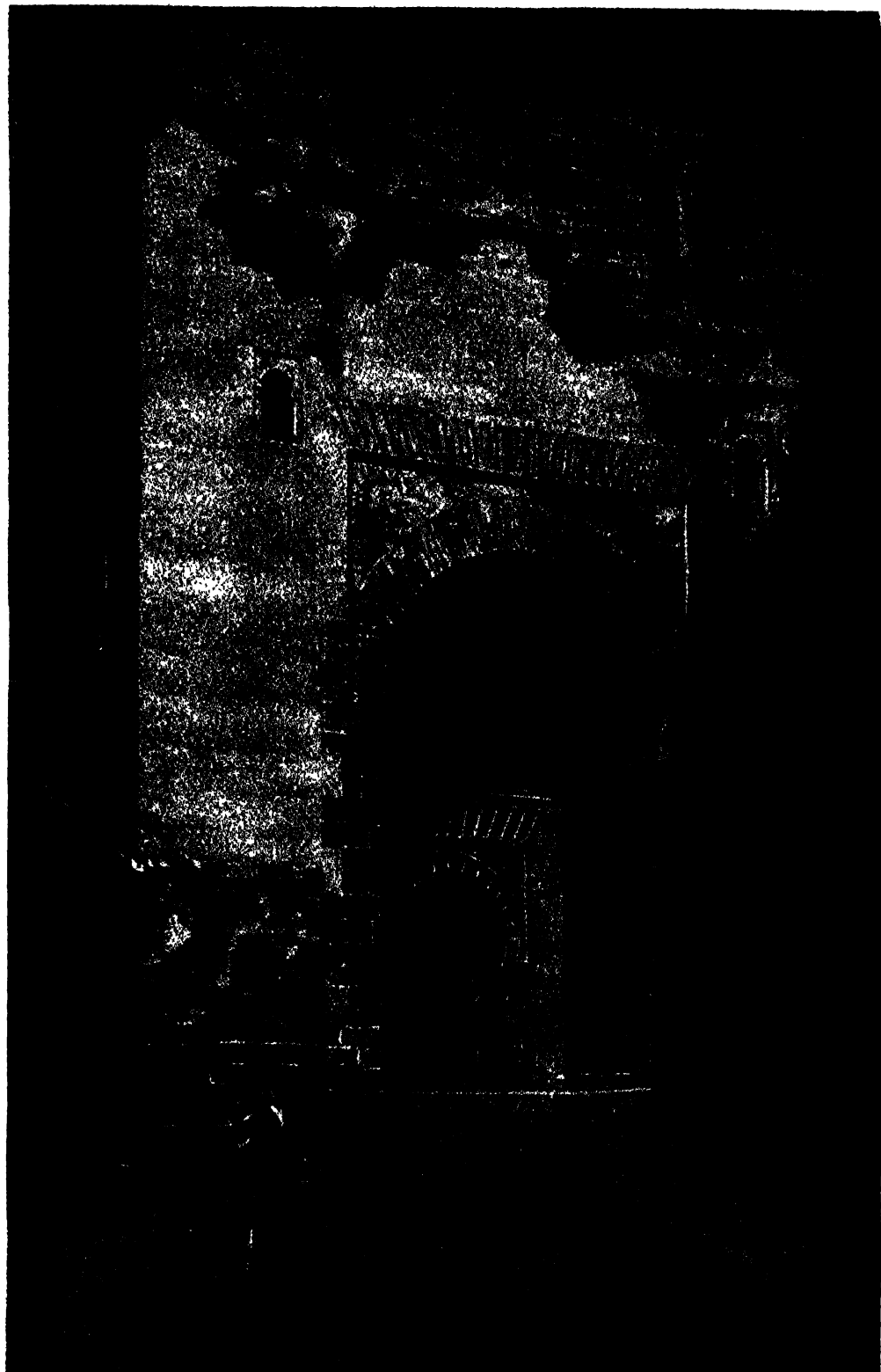
The Basques, inhabiting the corner of Spain by the Bay of Biscay, are not really Spanish at all; they have their own language, which they say was spoken in the Garden of Eden, and their own customs, literature and songs. They are for the most part hardy, independent farmers. Apart from these the people of Spain do not seem nearly so "mixed" as other races—the English, for instance. Here and there we may see a fair-haired, blue-eyed person, someone whose Gothic descent is unusually pure, but most Spaniards are dark-haired and dark-eyed. They are also well built, dignified of movement and wear their clothes gracefully.

Formerly Spanish women dressed their abundant hair high, with a few flowers tucked in at the side and surmounted by a fan-shaped comb, over which was draped a graceful, silk-lace mantilla, black for street wear, white for festive occasions. So universal was this that it became part of the national costume; but old customs change even in Spain, and the beautiful and becoming mantilla, like the richly-embroidered manton, or shawl, is being more and more reserved for certain occasions, such as feast days and bull fights. The pretty custom of wearing flowers—preferably carnations—in the hair is still common. Spaniards love carnations, which may be seen growing in old tins or boxes on the balconies in the villages. The dress of the peasants varies according to the district. Some of the costumes are very pretty.

The better classes live in handsome residences built, in Moorish fashion, round a central court, or patio, which is gay with flowers and fountains. These houses have



**A DEEP CHASM**, along the bottom of which rushes a turbulent stream, divides the old Moorish stronghold of Ronda from its suburb, the Ciudad. Three bridges, this being the loftiest, span the gorge. The brilliance that shines from its blue skies makes Spain a place of sharp contrasts. The shade is very dark, the sunlight is dazzling.



**THE GATE OF JUSTICE** is the most generally used entrance to the amazing Moorish palace known as the Alhambra. It was built in 1338 by the Sultan Yûsuf, and got its name from the fact that the kings of Granada sometimes sat under it to administer justice. The name Alhambra comes from the Moorish language and means "the red."

## THROUGH SUNNY SPAIN

few windows looking on to the streets, and these are usually protected with an iron grille called the "reja." When the windows are on the ground floor a good deal of courtship is carried on through the reja; when they are on a higher storey the lover has to be content with serenading his lady to the accompaniment of his guitar, for the Spanish women still live in a certain amount of seclusion—a legacy from the Moors—and in a few out-of-the-way places the women go abroad veiled like Mahomedan women.

### *Selling Water by the Glass*

The Spaniards are tremendous water drinkers. In the hot weather, water is sold by the glass in the streets, and the most familiar street cry is: "Agua, agua!" (Water, water!) Chocolate is the national drink: it is served for breakfast, and instead of bacon, which is unknown in Spain, is taken with little cakes called "bunuelos," made of egg and flour mixed together and fried in oil. Butter is expensive and is not much used. Oil is used instead for cooking, usually unrefined, greenish oil just as it comes from the olive presses. This and the garlic relished by the Spaniards give to the cooking a flavour which English people dislike and Spanish people dearly love.

Sheep, goats and pigs are the animals mainly used for food. Kid is a favourite dish, and at picnics, which play an important part in this sunny, out-of-doors land, a kid is frequently roasted whole over a fire in the open air.

### *Happy and Contented Peasants*

Every part of the country, however, has its own particular dish, which appears on most tables as part of the meal, but which in the case of the poorer classes may be the only food. There is an abundance of fruit—olives, grapes, oranges, strawberries, melons, peaches, apricots, pomegranates, dates and figs.

Although living poorly the Spanish peasant is, as a rule, a cheerful, happy person. A light diet suits him, a poor home does not matter when he lives so

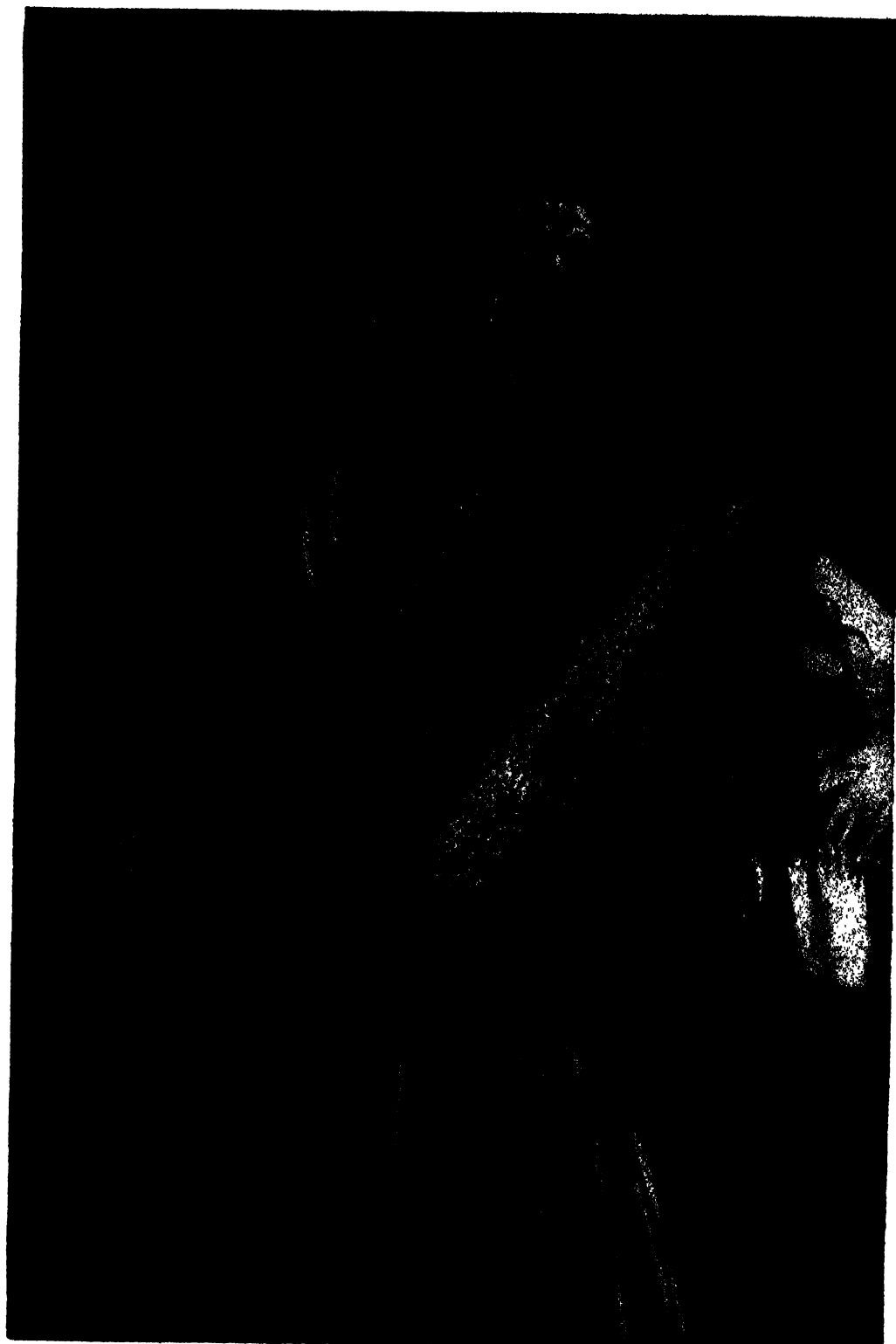
much out of doors. Cigarettes are cheap—the Spaniard and his cigarette are inseparable—and so long as he has enough money to pay for a place at the bull fight, that and the carnival, the fair and the festivals of the church, supply the enjoyment he desires.

Every baby born in Spain is named after some saint, and instead of keeping up birthdays, the people celebrate the day of the saint after whom they are named. On that day they keep open house, with cakes, sweets, wine, cigarettes, etc., for all comers. At a wedding, instead of bridesmaids and best man, the bride and bridegroom are attended by two sponsors. Sugared almonds take the place of our little boxes of wedding cake.

Holy Week is a time of great religious observance. People flock to the churches, especially the cathedrals. The streets, where laughter is hushed and wheeled traffic suspended, are given over to processions. These are arranged by the religious brotherhoods, who escort through the streets a number of platforms on which are reproduced scenes from the Passion with life-sized figures. At every halt a singer comes forward and chants a few lines, which the people take up and repeat until the procession moves on.

### *Four-and-Twenty Proud Beggars*

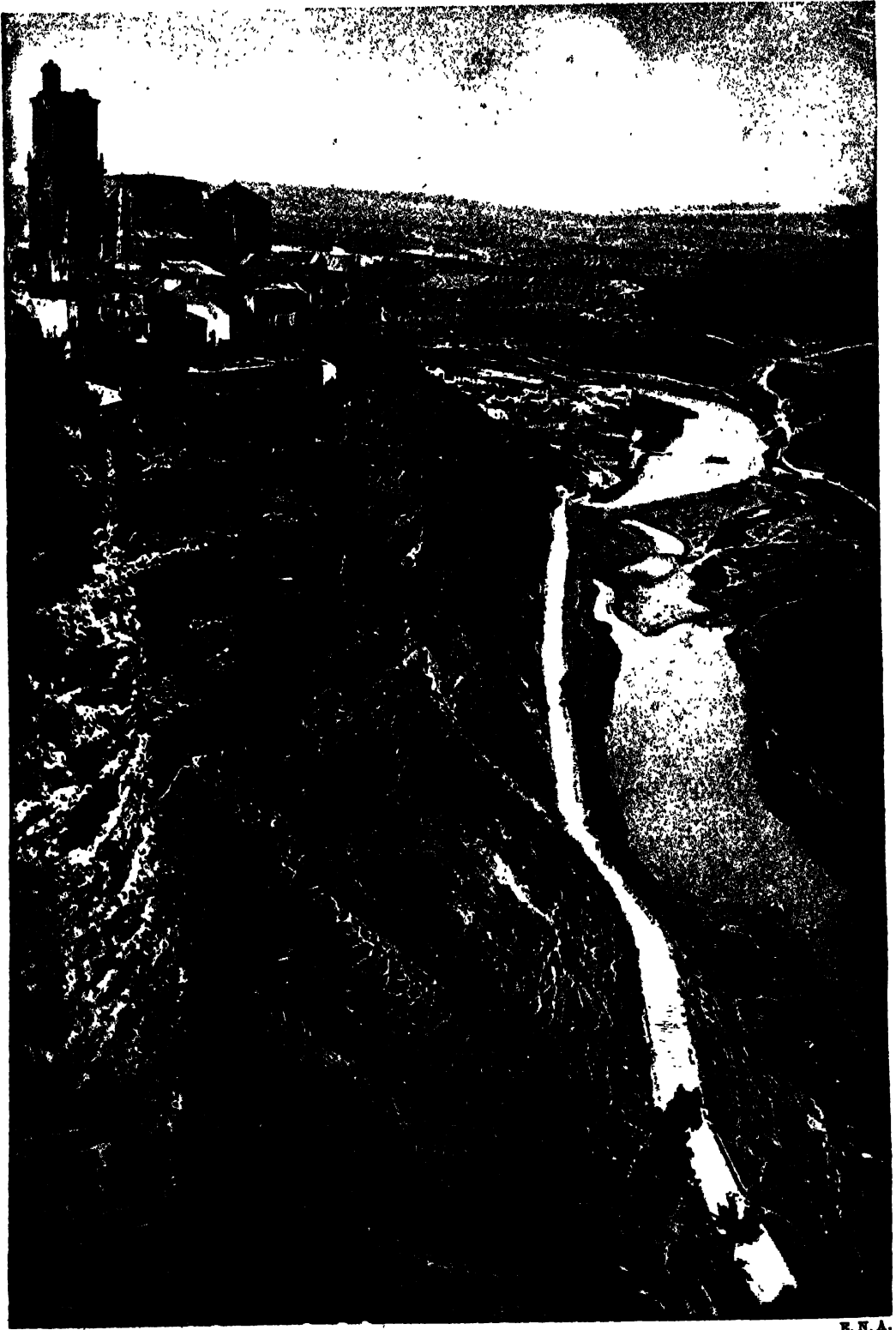
On the Maundy Thursday of Holy Week the king and queen wash the feet of twenty-four beggars, twelve men and twelve women. This is the occasion for a stately ceremony, when the royalties attend church, preceded by a procession of nobles and their wives, soldiers and officials, all dressed in their best, the ladies wearing their most precious jewelry. We can tell the nobles, or grandees, at once, because they, and they only, wear their hats in the presence of the sovereign. After the service the procession returns to the palace, where the beggars—all made neat and clean for the occasion—are waiting, each with one foot bare. The queen, with a towel pinned around her, kneels before the women, and as water is poured over the bare foot she dries and kisses



Lehbert & Landrock

**SUNNY GOOD HUMOUR** is a characteristic of the Spanish people, but combined with it is an easily roused and passionate temper. The women possess great charm of manner and often also considerable beauty. They are usually small and, though their figures are graceful at the age of this smiling maiden, they are inclined to grow heavy with age.

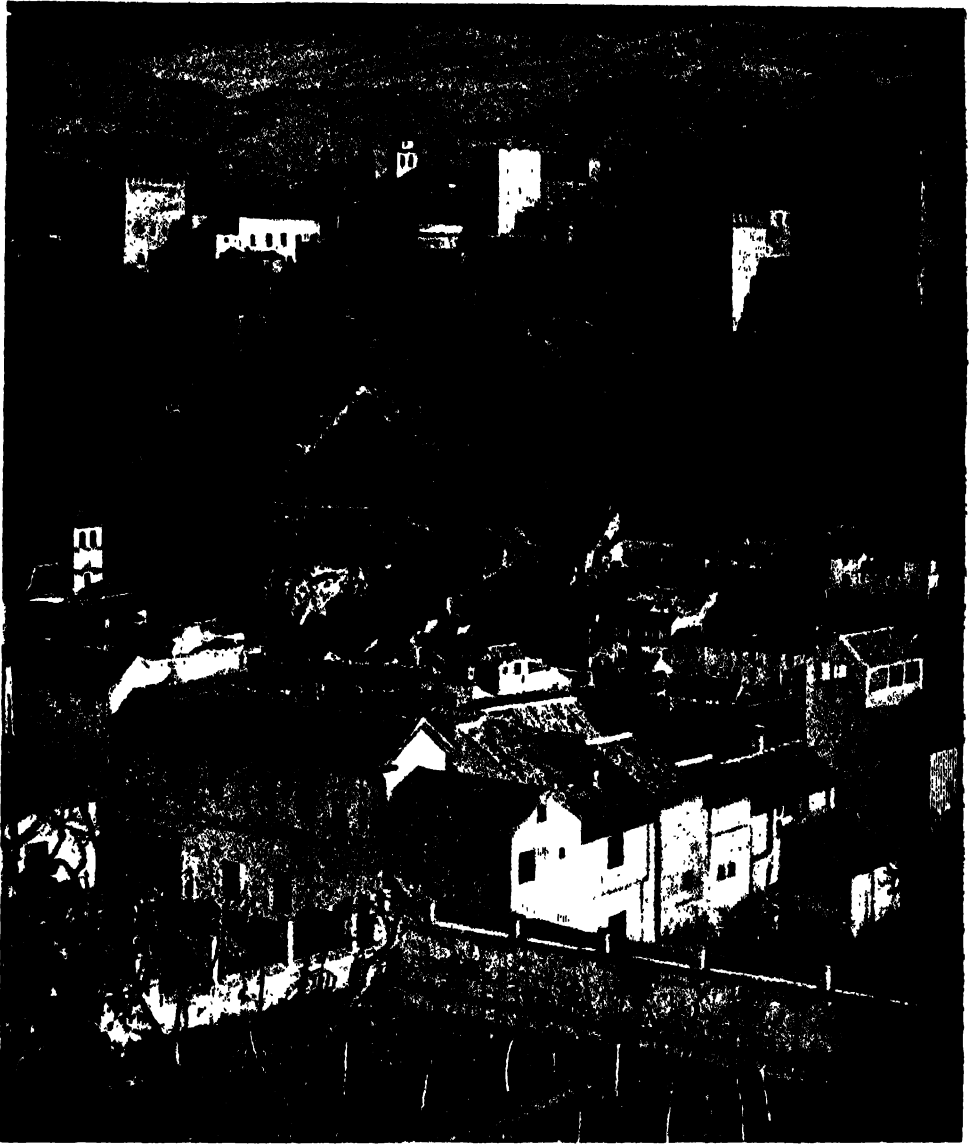




E. F. A.

#### ARCOS DE LA FRONTERA IN CADIZ PROVINCE, ANDALUSIA

In the far-off days of continual warfare, towns were built on the highest and most inaccessible points possible. Thus Arcos de la Frontera is perched on a dizzy height above the River Guadalete, and overlooks miles of fertile, fruitful plain. Nevertheless the Moors were driven from it in 1264 by Alphonso the Wise, who made it a frontier fort.



Underwood

#### GRIM WALLS AND TOWERS GUARDING A WONDERFUL PALACE

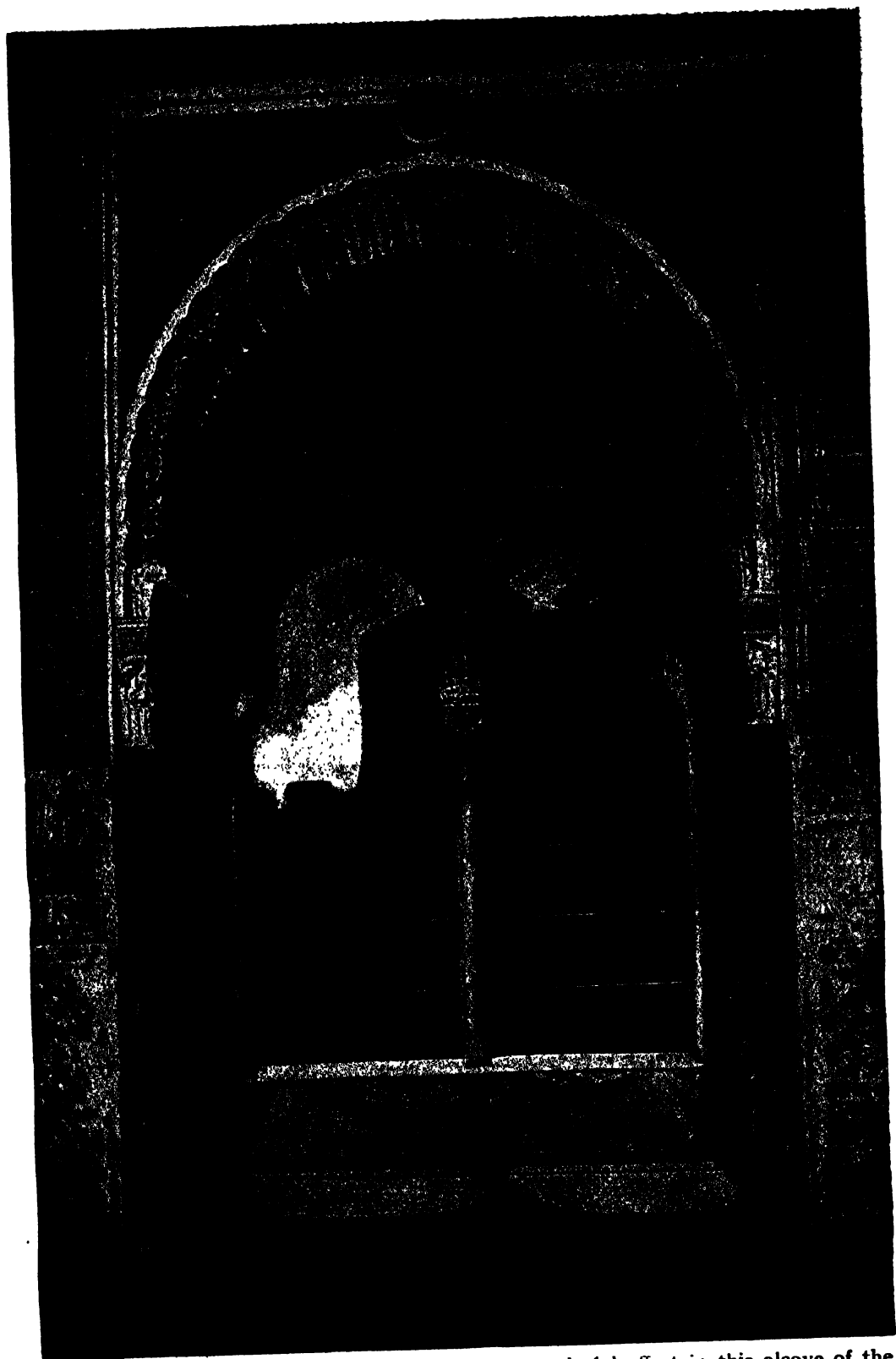
High above Granada, the old Moorish capital of Andalusia, towers the Alhambra, which has all the appearance of a strong and forbidding fortress. Once we are within its gates, however, we find ourselves in a fairy palace—a palace so fragile and delicate in form and colour that it seems impossible that it was built six hundred years ago.

it. The king does the same for the men. Next a dinner, often of twenty-four courses, is served by the king and queen to the beggars. It is not eaten then, but taken away by the grandees and duchesses and put aside with the wine, knives, forks, spoons and even the table-cloths for the beggars to take home or sell as they please.

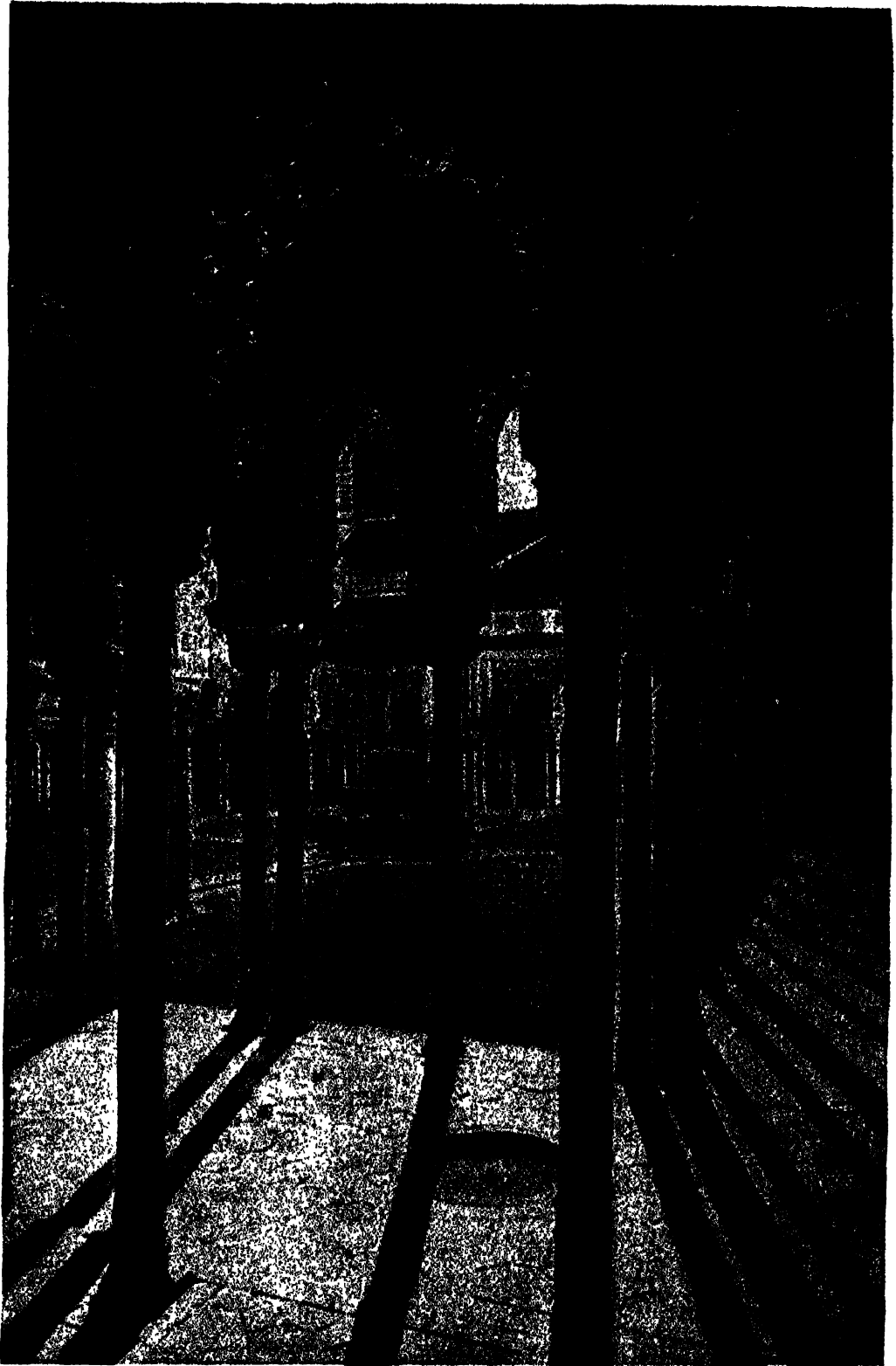
On Good Friday there is a similar procession, only this time the queen and ladies are in black dresses and mantillas.

On this occasion the king pardons several criminals under sentence of death, saying "As God pardons me, I pardon you," after which the black ribbons on the warrants of execution are exchanged for white ones.

On Easter Sunday, Spain throws off the solemnity of Holy Week, the bells ring for joy, people come out in their best, and cafés and theatres are open all day and nearly all the night. In the afternoon rich and poor, old and young, flock to the



**GOLD, SCARLET AND AZURE** are used with wonderful effect in this alcove of the Captive's Tower in the Alhambra. It was named after the beautiful Isabel de Solis, who was taken prisoner by Abu-el-hasan, Moorish king of Granada. Through the gracefully arched windows we see the Sultana's Tower and beyond it the Infanta's Tower.



**GRACEFUL PILLARS**, marvellously coloured, surround the Court of the Lions, the part of the Alhambra that has best withstood the passage of time. The twelve marble lions which support the fountain show that the Moors of Andalusia were lax in their religion, for Mahomedan teaching forbids the use of living forms in sculpture or painting. N. H. A.



B. K. A.

#### PEASANT INDUSTRY IN THE NORTH-WEST CORNER OF SPAIN

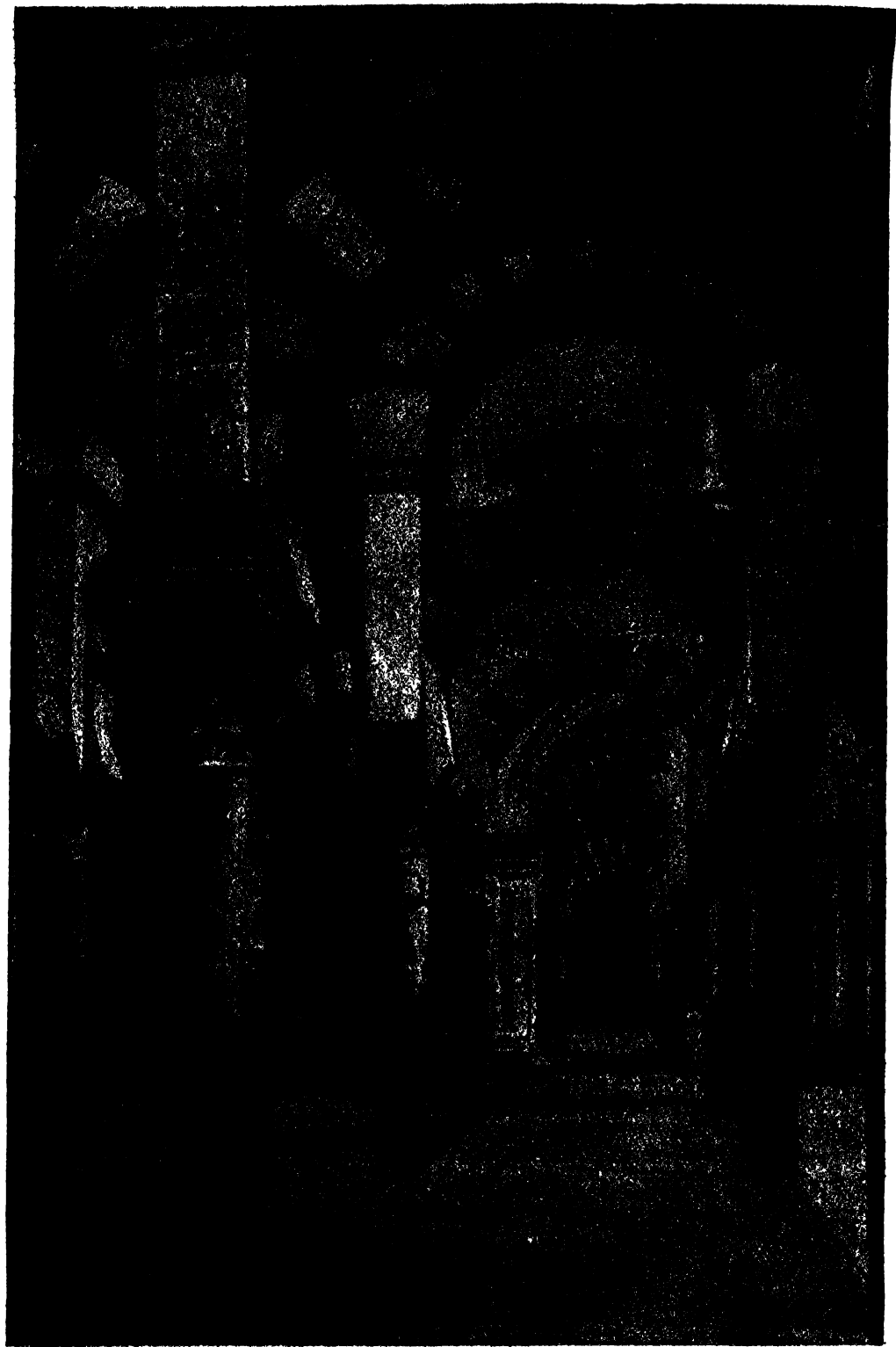
The old man whom we see here making sandals for his fellow-peasants, comes from the inland province of Lugo, part of old Galicia. The Gallegos, as these people are called, are unlike other Spaniards, for they are a Celtic people. Galicia is a very fertile and beautiful part of Spain, and the inhabitants are very hard-working but poor.



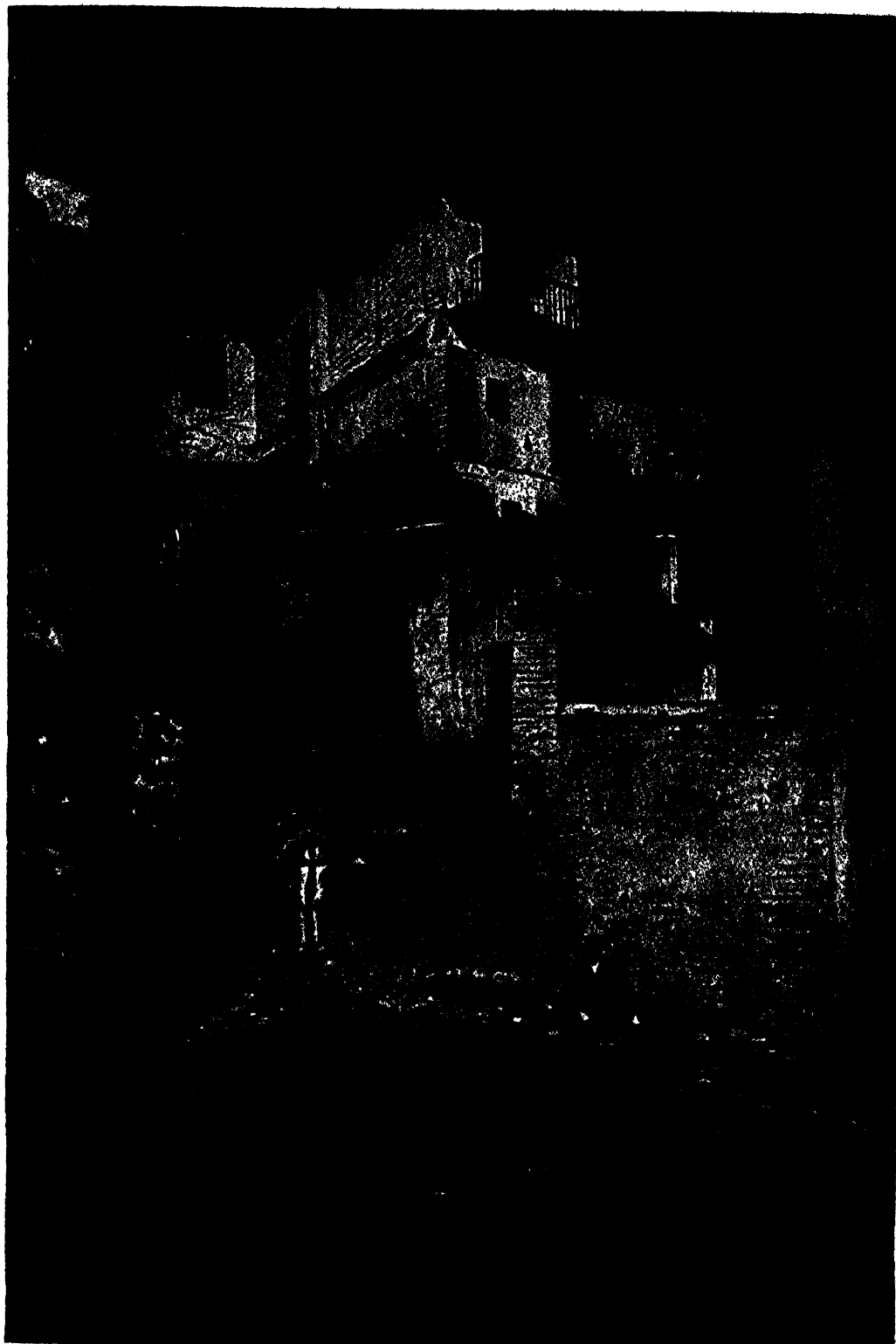
Nicholls

**BY THE WELL IN A DELIGHTFUL SUNLIT COURTYARD OF RONDA**

Though old Ronda on its precipitous crag is mostly Moorish in construction, we can still find traces of a yet earlier, Roman occupation, especially in the castle, the walls and the gates. In this courtyard, too, the round columns with their carved capitals are certainly Roman, and so is the beautiful but rather battered well-head, with its fluted columns.



**MOORISH ARCHES**, one beneath another, enchant the visitor to La Mezquita at Córdoba, a great cathedral that was once a mosque. It was begun in 786 on the site of a Christian church, which had replaced a Roman temple. Mahomedans who made pilgrimages to this mosque were no longer obliged to make the dangerous journey to Mecca.



**IN GRANADA**, north of the Alhambra and across the River Darra, we find the old, walled suburb of Albaicin, which was peopled by Moors from Baeza, after their city had been sacked by the Christians in 1227. It is a picturesque but impoverished district. Close by is the gipsy quarter, the dwellings of these people being caves in the hillside.



## THROUGH SUNNY SPAIN

nearest arena in order to see the first bull fight of the season.

The feria, or fair, which is held annually, sometimes for a week, in most of the towns and villages of Spain, is a great occasion. At the feria of Seville the fashionable clubs have gorgeous temporary houses in which bands play; and small temporary houses are erected for the society people who here receive their friends and entertain them with music and dancing.

Madrid, the capital of Spain, is a city of wide and beautiful avenues, fine streets and imposing public buildings, but it has not the natural advantages of most Spanish cities. It stands on sandy hills in the midst of a rocky, tree-less, grass-less plain. Cold in winter, it is hot in summer.

It owes its importance to the fact that the Emperor Charles V. ate far too much and so had gout. The only place where his tiresome legs were free from pain was in the dry mountain air, so he lived mostly at Madrid.

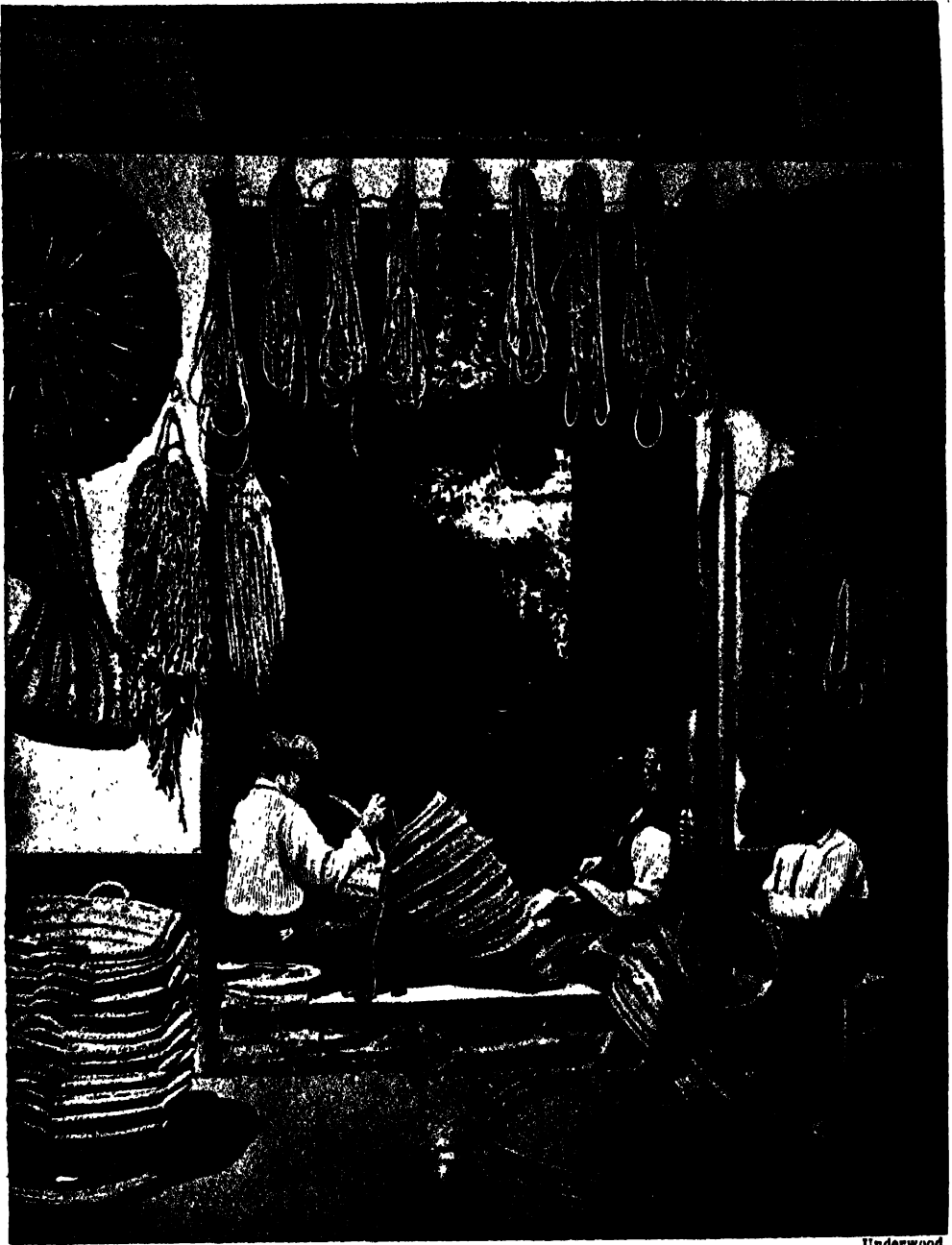
Its austerity appealed to Charles' son, Philip II., who married our queen, Mary Tudor, and he made Madrid his capital. Later on he built for himself, a few miles from the city, what has been called the gloomiest palace in Christendom. This is the Escorial—palace, church and monastery in one. Dedicated to S. Lawrence, it is built in the shape of a gridiron, and is so vast it has 1,200 doors and 86 staircases. To-day it is famous mainly for its collection of valuable books, pictures, etc., and for the fact that the members of the



Underwood

### WORKMEN OF SAN ROQUE PREPARING CORK BARK

The rather English-looking town of San Roque is only seven miles from Gibraltar, and is the favourite summer residence of the families of British officers garrisoned there. It is surrounded by woods of evergreen oak, the bark of which, when soaked and scraped and pressed flat, is cork. Here we see men scraping the bark.



Underwood

# **CORDWAINER'S SHOP IN A CORNER OF SEVILLE THE MARVELLOUS**

The beautiful city of Seville is in south Spain, where the climate, very like that of north Africa, favours the growth of the rush-like esparto grass. This grass, being very tough, is put to all kinds of uses. Rope, baskets, mats and fishing nets are all made of it, and it is also used in the manufacture of very good paper.

royal family are buried here—kings in a black and gold vault under the High Altar, and with them queen consorts who have been mothers of kings, the others being buried in a vault apart.

Piety, pride and politeness are special characteristics of the Spaniards. They give perfect courtesy and expect it in return.

Even a beggar asking for alms expects a polite refusal. Unfortunately they are unbusinesslike and lacking in enterprise. Nobody minds if trains are half an hour late, and, though the country produces olives and grapes in abundance, much of the oil is sent to England to be refined, and much of the wine goes to France for



E. M. A

**FRAGRANT, JUICY ORANGES** grow everywhere in the sunny south of Spain, and those of us who have only tasted them when they have travelled overseas, can have no idea how delicious they are fresh from the tree. These women of Alora are grading the fruit

and wrapping each separately. We may quite likely find by looking at the stamp on the paper in which they are wrapped that the orange we are eating comes from Alora, for that town, surrounded by orange and lemon groves, is the centre of the orange trade in Málaga.



S. F. A.

**MULBERRY TREES** are grown around Murcia, and their leaves are picked to provide food for the silkworms. This part of Spain is noted for its silk, which was first made here by the Moors in the eighth century. The white mulberry, a tree with white fruit, is the best kind for the silk industry. It is really a Chinese tree.

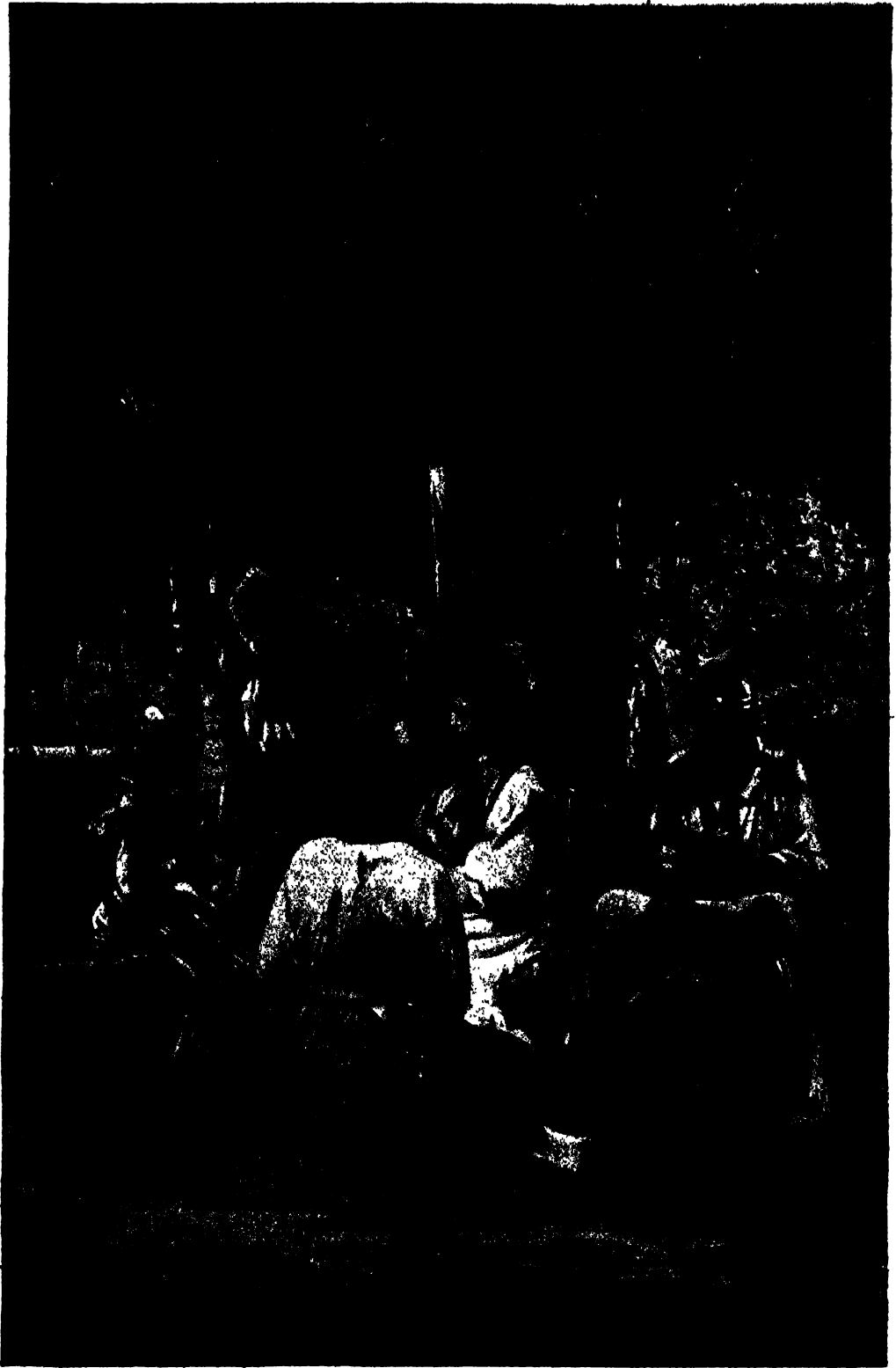


E. N. A.

**A GROVE OF DATE PALMS THAT THE CITIZENS OF ELCHE OWE TO THE ENTERPRISE OF THE MOORS**  
In the whole of Spain there is no town that appears more totally of white-walled, flat-roofed houses. Among the stately trees of Elche we are shown a queer farm building made of grass, and on the left some of the pomegranate trees which, with vines and other plants, are grown beneath them. Large quantities of Elche dates are exported yearly.



**E. H. A.**  
**IN THE YARD OF A SOLIDLY-BUILT FARMHOUSE NEAR DURANGO IN THE BASQUE PROVINCE OF BISCAY**  
The Basque people, who live in the very north of Spain just west of primitive. The wheels of their carts, which are drawn by oxen, are the Pyrenees, are not like other Spaniards. Indeed they are of a just round pieces of board. When a smith wants to shoe an ox—for different race, and have a different language. They are mostly they are shod as horses are in other countries—the poor beast farmers, capable and hardworking, but their methods are certainly is hoisted up in a wooden framework by a wide belt round its body.



Underwood

**IN THE VINEYARDS** of Málaga, luscious Muscatel grapes hang down in purple clusters asking to be picked. Many of them are turred into the sweet wine for which the province is celebrated; a few are packed for export in kegs of sawdust; but most are dried, and turned into the famous Muscatel raisins. Sugar-cane also is grown in Málaga.

## THROUGH SUNNY SPAIN

its final treatment. Cod and other fish abound round the coast, yet much of the salt fish for fast days is imported.

All children are supposed to go to school, but no one sees that they do so, or that they are properly taught; consequently about half the people of Spain can neither read nor write. There is one part of the country, however, where this does not hold good—Catalonia. The province of Catalonia is so different from the rest of Spain that it hardly seems to belong to it. Even the language is different. The Catalonians, it is often said, have the brains of Spain. They are thrifty, industrious and practical.

The soil, both in Catalonia and Valencia, has nothing like the fertility of the rich lands of the south, but untiring industry has made these two provinces the most productive region in Spain. The sides of the hills are carefully terraced for cultivation, and the river valleys are thickly seamed with canals for irrigation.

### *Barcelona, the Manchester of Spain*

Spain is an agricultural, not a manufacturing country. In fact, only Barcelona and the surrounding district can be regarded as a manufacturing area. Here the cotton mills are busy with Spain's most important manufacture, and linen, woollen goods and lace are also produced. Catalonia is the Lancashire of Spain, and Barcelona its Manchester.

Though one of the oldest cities, most of it is modern and up-to-date, with good shops and thoroughfares and a busy, thriving population. Its position on the Mediterranean has made Barcelona a place of importance, and its mariners were early famed for their enterprise. But though the richest city in Spain Barcelona is not concerned only with money-making. It is to the fore in literature, in music and in painting. Every May it holds what are known as Floral Games, literary competitions where budding poets produce their verses and contend for the place of honour. Colleges and schools of art and science are well supported and the practical nature of the

education is seen in the fact that here only eight people out of every hundred are unable to read and write.

The city is very beautiful and its cathedral is unusually fine. In the cloisters of this stately building we may see geese kept as pets. The story goes that once during a siege Barcelona, like Rome in a similar plight, was saved by the cackling of geese, so these strange pets are kept as a reminder of the fact.

### *Where Columbus Led His Indians*

There is a fine statue of Columbus in the city, in memory of the fact that when he returned from America the Court was at Barcelona, and hither he came with his Indians, carrying gold and the skins of rare animals and other treasures, samples of the wealth to be found in the new country, and walked through the streets to where in the open square the king and queen awaited him under a canopy of brocaded gold. Then the people fell on their knees and raised the *Te Deum* in gratitude.

When the news came to Spain that Cuba was lost, the people of Barcelona, snatching up rotten vegetables, eggs and stones, rushed to the statue of Columbus and pelted their hero for having discovered a country which had caused Spain so much trouble. From which it is to be seen that in some respects the enlightened people of Barcelona are still very Spanish.

As is natural the path to progress has not been an easy one. Spain dislikes hustle and bustle and resents Catalonia's business-like methods, and there has been much conflict between ancient and modern, but that is the story of all progress.

### *England's Castle in Spain*

There is one very small region in Spain where only English is spoken. Tarik's rock, Gibraltar, was captured in 1704, and in spite of many sieges this gate of the Mediterranean has remained British ever since. Many labourers come from Spanish territory to work in Gibraltar, but at sundown a gun is fired and there is a rush for the gates. When the second gun is





E. N. A.

## TWO YOUNG BASQUE NOBLEMEN AND THEIR ANCESTRAL MANSION

Every Basque can claim to be a nobleman, and that is the reason why we see coats-of-arms carved on the walls of even the humblest of cottages. The coat-of-arms of which this house can boast is a very elaborate one, but the dilapidation of the building and the rough, broken door make it seem sadly out of place.

fired the gates are shut and woe betide the loiterer who finds himself on the wrong side —no alien may spend even one night on the Rock without very special permission.

The Rock is so steep and so well fortified as to be practically impregnable, though once a Spanish scouting party climbed unperceived a considerable distance up it and their presence was only made known

by the warning cries of the apes living amongst the crags. In gratitude, England voted the apes of the Rock a monthly ration of thirty shillings worth of "dainties." A small number of apes still live at Gibraltar, but they are not much in evidence. Occasionally they appear and do some damage to the fruit trees, but they are quite safe from any molestation.



E. N. A.

### **BASQUE CHILDREN BENEATH THE EAVES OF THEIR BALCONIED HOME**

We should visit the Basque provinces on a Sunday and see all the people dressed, like these sturdy little folk, in their many coloured, national costume. It is a very strange thing, but tennis, fives, rackets—indeed, all our games played with ball and racket—have developed from a game called "Pelota," a game played only by the Basques.

Between Gibraltar and Spain there is a strip of uninhabited, neutral ground.

In the days of Moorish supremacy and after, the eight provinces of south Spain—Almeria, Cadiz, Córdoba, Huelva, Seville, Málaga, Granada and Jaen—were all combined in the one great district of Andalusia, the "El Andaluz" of the Moors. This district is very mountainous,

especially in the south, where is the lofty Sierra Nevada range. To the north lies the wide fertile valley of the Guadalquivir. Andalusia is much more like north Africa than it is like the rest of Spain. Indeed, scientists say it was once a part of Africa, separated from Spain by a narrow channel. Then, centuries and centuries ago, before man existed, two



Underwood

### GREAT ROCK OF GIBRALTAR FROM THE SHORES OF SPAIN

Across the Bay of Gibraltar we look towards an important outpost of Britain. The great fortified Rock of Gibraltar rises practically sheer from the low belt of sand that separates it from Spain. To the south it descends more gently to the sea. The town is built on the west side of Gibraltar, for the eastern side is very precipitous.



Peterffy

### WAITING FOR THE MILKMAN IN A BARCELONA STREET

We should think it very funny, in England, to see a herd of goats standing about and resting in the streets of a busy city, but in Barcelona it is quite a common sight. Twice a day the milkman drives his goats from door to door and milks them straight into the jug or bottle that his customer brings him.



*Peterfly*

**QUEER, IRREGULAR BLOCK OF FLATS TO BE SEEN IN BARCELONA**  
Barcelona is a great port and manufacturing city, and is the capital of the north-east part of Spain, which is called Catalonia. This very strange and wonderful building is quite a modern one, and, we must agree, it is very unlike any that we have ever seen. The architect who designed it was a native of Catalonia named Antonio Gaudi.



E. N. A.

**FERRY BOAT THAT CARRIES MAN AND BEAST ACROSS THE RIVER GUADALHORCE IN FRUITFUL MALAGA**  
Spain is not very well provided with railways, and the roads, especially over the swift streams. This ferry boat is neither poled across the river nor rowed. Two men, one at each end of the boat, pull upon ropes attached to either bank, and thus bring the boat across. The platform in its side enables the mules to get in and out easily.



E. N. A.

**PEASANTS OF CENTRAL SPAIN IN THEIR GAY HOLIDAY CLOTHES**  
 With silver buttons on shirt, waistcoat and cuff, in velvet jacket, embroidered "faja," or sash, tight breeches and high, tasselled boots—these three men are wearing their finest clothes, for it is a holiday. They come from the borderland between the two ancient kingdoms of Leon and Castile, where four modern provinces meet.

great convulsions occurred. The first raised the bed of the channel and joined Andalusia to Europe, and the second separated it from Africa.

Andalusia is a sunny land, warm in winter and hot in summer, with roses blooming all the year round. On its fertile soil almost anything would grow were there enough water. The Moors did wonders by means of irrigation, but the modern Andalusian is too indolent to make all he might of his fruitful land. Quite recently, however, some of the more enterprising landowners have installed

modern agricultural machinery and are employing modern methods of farming. Andalusia has great vineyards and olive groves, and produces some of Spain's finest oranges. It is rich in minerals, in copper and coal, iron, lead and sulphur.

Everywhere we see signs of the former Moorish dominion. Most of the villages and the towns—Seville, Córdoba, Martos, Almeria, Ronda on its rocky summit, and, above all, Granada—can show many houses and a mosque, bridge, fortress or palace which were built by the Moors in the days of their pride and strength.



Seely Service

THATCH

HOUSE OF WOOD AND

TANALA CHILDREN

CHANTING BEFORE A

SONG FROM MADAGASCAR:

Five hundred years ago Arab traders settled in Madagascar, and one can still find traces of their influence, for example, among the Tanalas, who are, however, rather a backward race. They are a short people, with light chestnut skins, and they live among the forests of

# Mysterious Madagascar

## WHERE MANY RACES TALK THE SAME TONGUE

Many thousands of years ago Madagascar was part of Africa, but now the Mozambique Channel, about 250 miles wide and 10,000 feet deep, separates it from the mainland. Of the species of animals that wandered over the island when it was a part of the African continent not one is found to-day, but fossil remains have been discovered which prove the prehistoric connexion. Some of the inhabitants have obviously come from Africa, but others have come from Malaya. How or when they came across the thousands of miles of ocean nobody seems to know, but they certainly arrived a very long time ago.

[**ADAGASCAR**, one of the largest islands in the world, is almost one thousand miles long and three hundred and sixty wide, and is nearly four times and a half as big as the whole of England and Wales. Yet in spite of the fact that its coasts have been well known to the people of Europe for more than four hundred years, much of its interior is still almost as mysterious as that of another enormous island, New Guinea. The chief reason for this is probably the difficulty of getting inland, for all around the island, with hardly a break, lies a belt of jungle forest, ten to forty miles deep, that is almost impenetrable, backed, on the east, by precipitous mountains. Another reason is the amazing number of different tribes who inhabit the island and who, until the French conquest, were constantly at war among themselves.

The original settlers in Madagascar were Malays. Why Madagascar, which is only two hundred and fifty miles from East Africa and about three thousand miles from Malaya and the Malay Archipelago, should have been settled by Malays is a puzzle difficult to solve, but the evidence is so strong that there does not seem much doubt about the fact.

### *Malay, Arab and Indian Settlers*

The language of the island is said to be derived from the ancient Malay dialect, and the Hovas, the principal people in Madagascar, trace their origin from the Malays. The date of the coming of the Malays is unknown, but it is believed to have been about two thousand years ago.

There are also Sanskrit words in the language, which were brought in by

Buddhist missionaries from India, and there are Arabic phrases. Arab merchants traded with Madagascar at least one thousand years ago. They formed settlements on the coast, and Indian traders have done the same. On the west side of the island there are tribes showing negro blood, people who are evidently descended from African settlers; and in the western forests there are the remains of a people called the Vazimba. They are supposed to have been the original natives of the island, who were driven inland by the Malay conquerors. Added to all these there are traces of Melanesians, people from the Southern Pacific, but how they came to the island is a puzzle harder to solve than that of the arrival of the Malays.

### *Many Tribes but One Language*

There are supposed to be over three million people in Madagascar, but in spite of the great number of different tribes, the language of the whole country is the same.

The so-called Hovas are the natives of the central province of Imerina. The word "hova" really means the middle class of the tribe as distinguished from the nobles and the slaves, and the correct names of these people is Antimerina or "people of Imerina." They are fine looking folk, with high foreheads and straight noses, and do not resemble negroes in any way. Except for their dark skins they might be Europeans. Their eyes are dark brown, their hair jet black. The Betsileos, who live south of the Hovas, are bigger and much darker in colour. The Hovas, too, have straight hair, while that of the Betsileos is curly.





Slaves

**PREPARING THE GROUND FOR THE RICE PLANTS WHICH PROVIDE THE CHIEF FOOD OF MOST MALAGASIES**  
Rice is the most important crop in Madagascar, especially in the central highlands and the east, some of it being exported. Near the coast it is very easy to grow, but elsewhere the grain is sown on artificial terraces, which have to be irrigated. No ploughs are used, the ground being dug up by means of long-handled, narrow-bladed spades. The Madagascar native, who is known as a Malagasy, threshes rice in the same way as the Filipino shown in page 724, and the women pound the husks from the grain in a wooden mortar.



APR 1935

**WOMAN'S WORK IN THE PADDY FIELDS: TRANSPLANTING THE YOUNG RICE IN FIELDS OF SOFT MUD**  
Paddy fields are very alike all over the world, the workers having to they call "fady," and which are very like the Polynesian "tapus." For instance, Sihanaka women may not eat rice on certain days; in one town of Imerina province it is fady for women to eat rice at all; in another place the unfortunate people may grow nothing else.



511200

**ON THE WESTERN SLOPES OF MADAGASCAR'S MOUNTAINS: NATIVE HIDE-BEARERS TAKE A WELL-EARNED REST**  
Except for the forests that lie parallel to the coast, most of the western important trade in raw hides, which, as there are next to no railways and few roads, have to be carried to the coast by native porters. The skins are rolled in bundles and tied, as shown in this photograph, to each end of a stout pole, which the men bear over their shoulders, wild and some owned by the native tribes. The island has an

## MYSTERIOUS MADAGASCAR

In the south-east are found the Baras, who are different again, and much more primitive. These people wear their hair in knobs done up with wax or fat, and whitening. The middle knob is the size of a cricket ball, the others smaller. Each knob is quite hard and on some heads you may count as many as one hundred of them. The Baras wear great wooden earrings and round their necks necklaces hung with charms. They love brass nails, and have dozens of them fixed into the butts of their guns, cartridge boxes and powder flasks. The head of each nail is the size of a shilling.

Along the western side of the island there are no fewer than twenty-five tribes, among them the Sakalavas, who, before the Hovas rose to power, were the rulers of the whole island.

### *What the Malagasies Wear*

All the tribes make their own clothes out of cotton, grass or tree bark prepared by being beaten with wooden mallets. They never wear garments of skin or leather like some of the African tribes. They are very clever at straw-plaiting and make excellent hats from strips of palm leaves. Hats are needed in Madagascar, where in the north the sun is very strong all the year round. Many natives have ornaments of brass or silver, and some of the forest tribes have an odd fashion of staining every other tooth jet black. Most tribes are quite good builders. The house walls are made of red clay or planks; the high pitched roofs are thatched and have projecting ends ornamented with quaint wooden figures.

While the peoples of Africa live mainly on maize, yams and sweet potatoes, the Malagasy folk are like the Asiatics in that they eat quantities of rice. To grow it they have to flood the land in the same way as the Chinese, but their spades, as may be seen from our illustration, are different from those used in other parts of the world. They are narrow-bladed and long-handled. Even their spades show their difference from the

African peoples, who use a heavy hoe. The Sakalavas and some other tribes of the south and west, however, do not eat rice, but sweet potatoes and cassava.

### *Rifles Instead of Blow-pipes*

In the old days the people of Madagascar used the blow-pipe, through which they shot small, poisoned darts to a considerable distance. Here is one more point in which they resemble the people of the Malay Archipelago, for in Borneo the natives use a blow-pipe called a sumpitan, which we may read about in the chapter *The Men of the Blow-pipe*. Bows and arrows and spears are still to be seen in some parts of Madagascar, but nearly all the men are now armed with guns or modern rifles. Most of the tribes are very good metal-workers. Iron is found in the island, and this they smelt and forge into spear and arrow heads, farm implements and knives.

The people keep sheep and cattle. The cattle are like the Indian zebu, having a big hump behind the neck. No one knows where they came from, for when the Portuguese first landed in the island cattle were, even then, the principal riches of the inhabitants. Most of the sheep are of the fat-tailed breed—queer looking creatures with black heads and very little wool, whose tails make good eating.

### *Silver Canoes for Coffins*

The Malays have always been good sailors, so it is not strange that the Malagasy people are boat-builders. They make dug-outs from single trunks for use on their rivers, and the coast folk build quite large boats made of planks sewed together with palm fibre. Some of these are fitted with outriggers just like the craft used by the South Sea Islanders. A very interesting point is that even the inland people formerly buried their chiefs in canoe-shaped coffins. Indeed, it is said that the Hova kings were each buried in a silver canoe. The Hova royal tombs are vaults made of enormous slabs of rock and the old custom was to build a house over the tomb—a house containing



E. N. A.

# **AN IMPORTANT ITEM IN THE DAY'S WORK OF A MALAGASY WOMAN**

By most of the tribes of the island mat-making is considered a very important feminine accomplishment. The mats are used to cover the floors and walls of their houses, and many are exported. Raphia and grasses are used, and also a strong fibre found in the outer peel of the zozoro sedge. The best mats are those made by the Sihanaka women.



# **MAKER OF HATS OF GENEROUS SIZE IN IMERINA PROVINCE**

For a long time the people of Madagascar have woven straw, raphia and other plant fibres into hats, baskets and mats. The primitive appliances which this Hova hatter is using are the same as those which have been used for many generations. But since 1904 quicker methods of manufacture have been introduced by the French.



Bayaka

# **MALAGASY FISHER LADS WITH CURIOUS BASKET-LIKE HAND-NETS**

With the baskets that will hold their catch upon their heads, these young men are ready to go a-fishing. The most notable fishermen of Madagascar are the Vezo, a tribe of the Sakalava race, who are as at home on the water as on land, and the Antaizakas, whose name explains itself, since it is a Malagasy word meaning "hand-fishers."

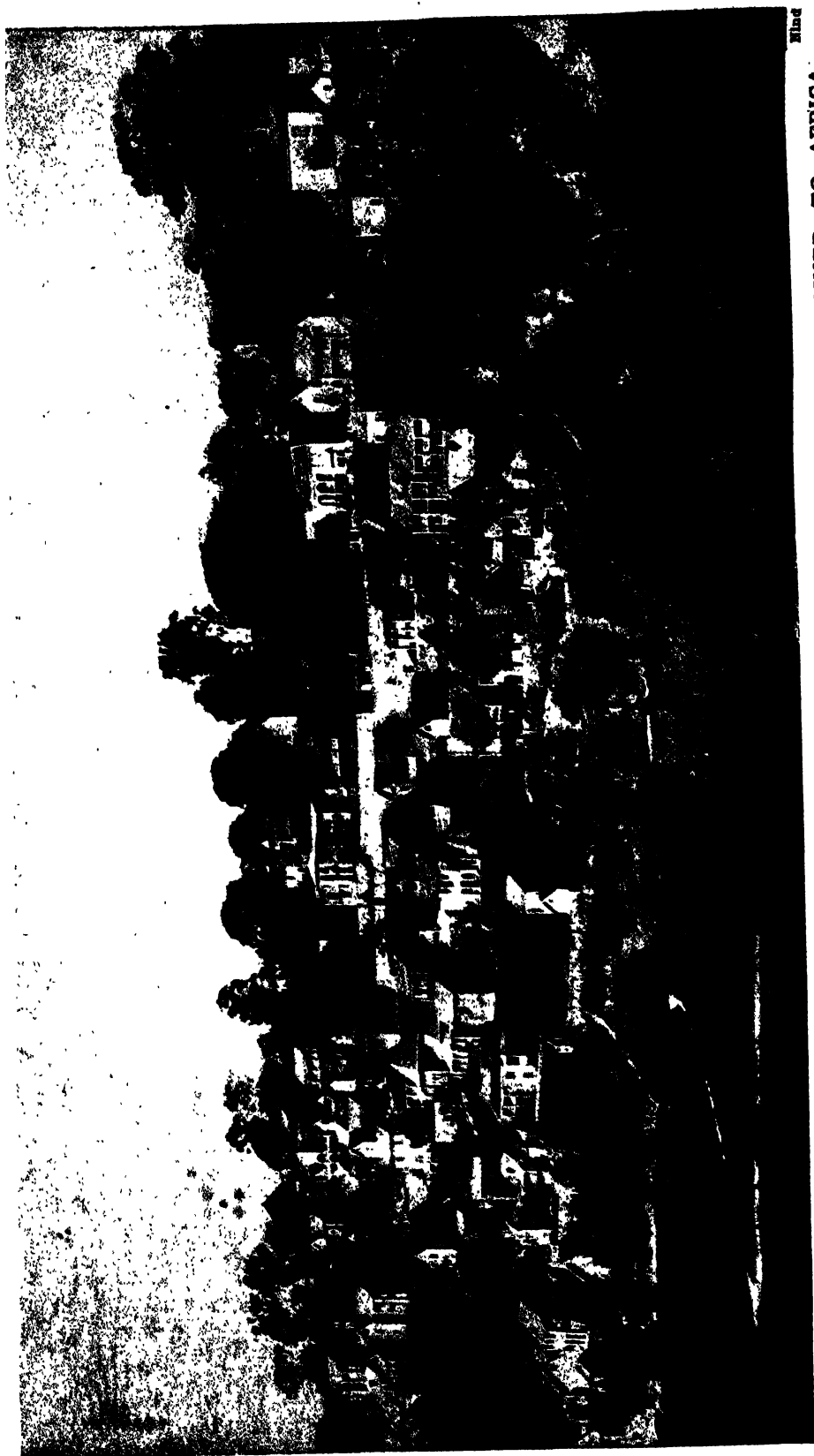


**HOVA WOMEN, WITH GRACEFUL DIGNITY, DANCE TO THE ACCOMPANIMENT OF CLAPS FROM THEIR AUDIENCE**  
When Europeans first came to Madagascar they found that of all the native tribes the Hova were by far the most civilized. They dressed elaborately in a pleasing costume that they still retain, although, as we see in this photograph, European, sleeved blouses are sometimes worn as well. The Hova were the latest arrivals from Malaya. They dwell in Imerina province, in the central highlands, and when their queen, Ranavalona III., was overthrown by the French in 1895, they had been the dominant race in the island for about a hundred years.



**EUROPEAN CUSTOMS HAVE INFLUENCED THEIR CLOTHES, BUT NOT THE DRESSING OF THEIR HAIR**  
Malagasy people are great believers in charms and talismans, as we can see by the wooden necklaces worn by these Sakalava children. Many people of this tribe, men, women and children alike, wear their hair in a multitude of short, tight plaits. They live in north-western Madagascar, and until they were defeated by the Hova people were the rulers of the island. They are taller and darker than other Malagasy people, and one of the most untameable tribes. Polynesian, Malay, Negro, Arab and Hindu, the blood of all five races is in their veins.





Mad

# ANTANANARIVO, THE CAPITAL OF MADAGASCAR, AN ISLAND THAT WAS ONCE JOINED TO AFRICA

there prove that it was once part of Africa, which is about 300 miles away across a very deep strait. Yet most of the people and their language undoubtedly come from Malaya and Polynesia, and some snakes have been found whose only relatives live in South America.

The city of Antananarivo, called by the French Tananarive, is built on the sides and summit of a hill that rises rather abruptly from a plain nearly 5,000 feet above the level of the sea. Madagascar is a mysterious island, because fossil hippopotami that have been found



#### THE ONLY KIND OF CARRIAGE KNOWN TO MANY MALAGASY FOLK

The scarcity of good roads in Madagascar means, of course, that there are few carts and fewer motor-cars. Those who do not wish to walk must, therefore, take a "filan-jana," which is something like the Eastern palanquin, or the European sedan-chair. On level ground four porters are needed, on rough ground at least eight.

furniture, dresses and money. The coast folk are clever fishermen, using both nets and basket traps to catch fish.

Though Madagascar was at one time joined to Africa, it was separated so long ago that the wild life is now quite different from that of the continent. There are no lions or leopards, no hippopotami, elephants or rhinoceros. Most of the wild creatures are small and not particularly dangerous. The worst is the fossa, an ugly beast of the cat tribe, which has a small head, short legs with strong claws, and a very long, thick tail. It is a bad-tempered creature and the natives vow that it will attack any person who happens to be alone.

Lemurs, monkey-like creatures of which there are many different sorts, are plentiful, and they are found in few other countries. The most puzzling animal is the aye-aye, about as large as a cat, with big bare ears, eyes which can see in the dark, rat-like teeth with which it cuts into tree trunks in search

of the insects on which it feeds, and the most amazing, spidery-looking hands. The third finger of the right hand is as thin as wire and used for picking out the grubs from the wood. It sleeps all day and feeds by night.

Another queer creature is the tenrec. In England are found animals such as the hedgehog, which hibernate—that is, sleep through the winter. The tenrec, which is about a foot long and lives chiefly on earth worms, has just the opposite habit—it sleeps through the hot weather and wakens when it becomes cool.

Remains dug up in swampy places prove that there existed in Madagascar a huge, wingless bird which has been named *aepyornis*. It would have made the biggest ostrich look small, for it was quite fourteen feet high, and its eggs, of which many have been found, are three times the size of ostrich eggs. It is believed to have been living up to a few centuries ago.

In Madagascar no fewer than two hundred and thirty-nine species of birds

## MYSTERIOUS MADAGASCAR

have been found, and the list is not yet full. There are plovers, rails, herons and other water birds; also parrots, pigeons, crows, rollers, birds of prey and many delightful little honey-eaters—creatures that look like humming birds. The rivers hold two sorts of crocodile, of which one is peculiar to the island. Both grow to a great size and are dangerous to man and beast. A twenty foot crocodile will pull a bullock into the water and drown and eat it.

The first European to sight Madagascar was a Portuguese explorer; he called it the Island of St. Lawrence. In 1700 the French began colonizing, and continued their efforts for two hundred years. At last, in 1895, they annexed the island. Queen Ranavalona III., who had succeeded to the throne in 1883, was taken to Paris, but, though she loved the Paris shops and dresses, she hated the climate. Now Antananarivo, the capital of the island, is a big town, with broad streets and good roads; elsewhere the French are building railways and also very good roads.

Though thirty years have passed since the French took control, the greater part of the island is still wild forest and mountain. There are, however, regular motor services along the main roads that have been made, joining some of the larger towns. An interesting point is that the centre of the island is far more densely inhabited than the coasts, but this, no doubt, is because the centre is mostly high ground and, therefore, cooler and more healthy than the hot, steamy seaboard.

The mountains in the centre rise to nine thousand feet, but this tableland is not nearly so rich as the coasts, from which districts are obtained rubber and vanilla. A great deal is quite bare of trees, and has a very dreary, desert-like appearance. The great riches of the island are the wonderful coastal forests, which are full of valuable timber, such as ebony, a considerable quantity of which is exported. But it will be many years before these forests can be opened up, for the climate is deadly to white men, while poisonous snakes and stinging insects are plentiful.



### ALL THE FAMILY LEND A HAND IN PREPARING DINNER

Although rice is the main food of the tribes of central and eastern Madagascar, those of the west rely for their vegetables more upon sweet potatoes, maize, beans, a wild plant called tavolo and cassava or manioc, from the roots of which tapioca is obtained. Their food would be very unappetising to us, however, for their cooking-pots are always dirty.

# Strange Homes & Queer Houses

## HOW MAN THE WORLD OVER SHELTERS HIS FAMILY

All kinds of wild creatures, animals and birds, even fishes and insects, either build nests, dig burrows or use natural shelters. No doubt the earliest types of human beings began to realize the possibilities of increased comfort to be got from improving their homes in cave or hollow tree, and so the idea of house-building was born. In this chapter we shall learn that examples of almost every form of home that man has used may be found in some part of the world, and it is curious to note that the most primitive type of all, the hole in the rock, is even now to be seen in use in England.

**F**AR back in the olden days which we term prehistoric, there were cave-dwellers who were probably among the first possessors of homes. The reason for this is not difficult to understand. When that early inhabitant of the earth, who is known to us as primitive man, first looked round for a roof to shelter him and his family, he found it ready to hand. Natural caves abounded everywhere, and when these were occupied by wild beasts he drove them out and took possession. In those bygone days, in the period that we call the First Stone Age, man was little above the level of the beast. It was in later periods that he acquired enough intelligence to build rough structures of wood and grass.

After so many centuries it is surprising to find that cave dwellings still exist in a fair state of preservation. In our chapter, pages 290-310, about the Pueblo Indians of New Mexico and Arizona, we learned that large numbers of these natural homes are to be seen in the Far West. From caves, these Indians, as we know, progressed to more comfortable dwellings in the cliffs. And in several other quarters of the world, where similar conditions obtained, cliff-houses were among the first to be fashioned.

### *Cavemen in England*

It is still more surprising to learn that something of the same type is to be found in our own country. As one of our illustrations shows, there are cave houses cut out of the solid rock in Worcestershire.

For the strangest and crudest of homes we must go to the most savage, primitive folk on the earth's surface. With the Australian aborigines, for instance, who are very backward in intelligence,

their simply-made homes are often nothing more than "breakwinds," composed of bark or leaves and roofed over by boughs, and with one side completely open.

These native huts, called "humpies," "wurleys" or "gunyahs," vary in different localities. Some are very roughly made; others are more substantial, with the tops and sides carefully thatched and plastered with clay and mud; while others yet are of the log-cabin type.

### *Savages' Two-Storey Homes*

Of a more advanced kind are the larger huts, built by the aborigines who have come under Papuan influence. These are eight feet in diameter and nearly five feet high, and are either intended to accommodate more than one family or are set apart for unmarried men. There is even a two-storied hut, the bark walls of which are fastened to four stout poles fixed in the ground. Cross-pieces of wood form the roof of this queer living-room and the floor of the upper chamber. Sheets of bark form the sides and top of the latter, and the occupant is here screened and protected from the rain and wind.

Houses of grass used to be a common sight in the beautiful Hawaiian Islands, in the Pacific, but these are fast disappearing. In some out-of-the-way places they may be seen yet, the huts built on a wooden frame and strongly thatched with grass. Poor-looking as such dwellings are, they are warm and comfortable, and are free from smoke, as the fireplace is outside.

Much more elaborate are the grass-houses of Fiji. These are imposing structures many feet high and planned more on the lines of a modern building. They have thickly-matted, grass walls,



Byott

#### WITHOUT WALLS OR FLOORING, A PRIMITIVE NATIVE HOME IN THE FOREST-LANDS OF PERU

This Indian of the Peruvian forests and his family are content to live in a hut that consists only of a thatched roof supported by bare tree trunks. It can be erected very quickly and easily—a great advantage, since, should one of its members die, the family will immediately leave the hut that it has been occupying free for the use of the spirit of the dead relative and build another. The Peruvian Indians, however, do not all live in such unsubstantial dwellings as this. In the Amazon districts they have snug, well-built huts that look like large bee-hives.



Hughes

#### TIMBER SHACK OF A WOOD-CUTTER OF NORTHERN RUSSIA

The backwoodsman of the forests of northern Russia is very skilful in using the axe, and builds, with his own hands, his warm and weatherproof cabin entirely of timber, giving it a double roof to protect it against heavy falls of snow. He fashions the simple articles of furniture, like the rough table at which this man sits, that he needs.

with a platform at the base, and their roofs slant upwards to a roof pole, the whole being finished off very carefully and smoothly. Inside the living-rooms there are more comforts in the way of chairs, tables and couches than are generally to be found in grass-covered dwellings.

The beehive-shaped house is popular in several quarters of the world. There are the curious, rounded huts of the Indians of the Montana of Peru. These structures, strongly built, are heavily thatched all over with grass and reeds, so that they look like gigantic, grass beehives. Of beehive-shape also are the well-known huts of the Hottentots of South Africa,

which are built of bent sticks with an outer covering of rush mats. The formation of a collection of these huts—a "kraal" as it is called—is circular, the inner portion of the ground being allotted to the live-stock of the tribe. Many other African peoples build huts of this kind.

A vivid picture of the interior of a West African hut is given us by Miss Mary Kingsley, the famous woman explorer. She was in the country of the Fans, near the Gold Coast, and called at a village for hospitality and to engage some native carriers for the following day's journey. The first negotiations took place in the "palaver house," a large, bark hut in the



**WINTER HOME OF A FAMILY OF WANDERING LAPPS AMONG THE BLEAK HIGHLANDS OF NORWAY**  
In winter the wandering Lapps, who are perhaps the most primitive people in Europe, dwell in huts built of firm, very compact turf, and strengthened by great stones and wooden beams. There are no windows; the door is made of rough, wooden boards, and a hole in the centre of the roof suffices to allow the smoke from the fire to escape. In summer, when they are driving the herds of reindeer, from which their wealth and much of their food and clothing are derived, the Lapps live in tents of canvas or reindeer skin.



Fridenauz

#### PEOPLE OF THE WATERS WHO RARELY SET FOOT ON LAND

On all the great rivers and waterways of the world, from the Thames to the Hwang-ho, we find people living in houses made of, or built on, boats. In China there are thousands of craft like this, none of them more than fourteen feet long, housing one or even two families, whose members, fisherfolk for the most part, may never go ashore.

centre of the community. Finally Miss Kingsley was conducted to another hut close by. "I was as high as its roof-ridge," she writes, "and had to stoop low to get through the door-hole. The area of the hut was fourteen or fifteen square feet, unlit by any window. The door-hole could be closed by pushing a broad piece of bark across it under two horizontal, fixed bits of stick. The floor was sand like the street outside, but dirtier. On it in one place was a fire whose smoke found its way out through the roof."

The furniture of this strange, African home consisted of a bed—a rough bench of wood with a wooden pillow and filthy rags upon it—and some boxes. Generally speaking, the squalor and dirt of a native hut in West Africa make it far from inviting to a white visitor. The place is simply a dark, ill-ventilated hole under a bark roof.

Far more picturesque among strange homes are the tree houses which are

to be found in certain of the Pacific Islands. In New Guinea there is a special house of this kind, perched high in the fork of a tree, which is kept solely for the use of the young, unmarried women of the tribe. It is a well-built structure of wood and is thatched to keep it dry and warm. Access to the building is obtained by means of a ladder. When an undesirable intruder makes his appearance in the vicinity of one of these houses, he is greeted with a shower of stones from the inmates, a plentiful supply of missiles being stored on the floor.

A notable type of house which is common in this Pacific Island is the pile-dwelling, the need of which is obvious when we remember the marshy nature of the coast. In making these structures a broad wooden platform is used, supported by strong, upright poles driven well into the ground, and on this is erected the usual thatched hut with a projecting roof pole. Many of the people living inland





Noble

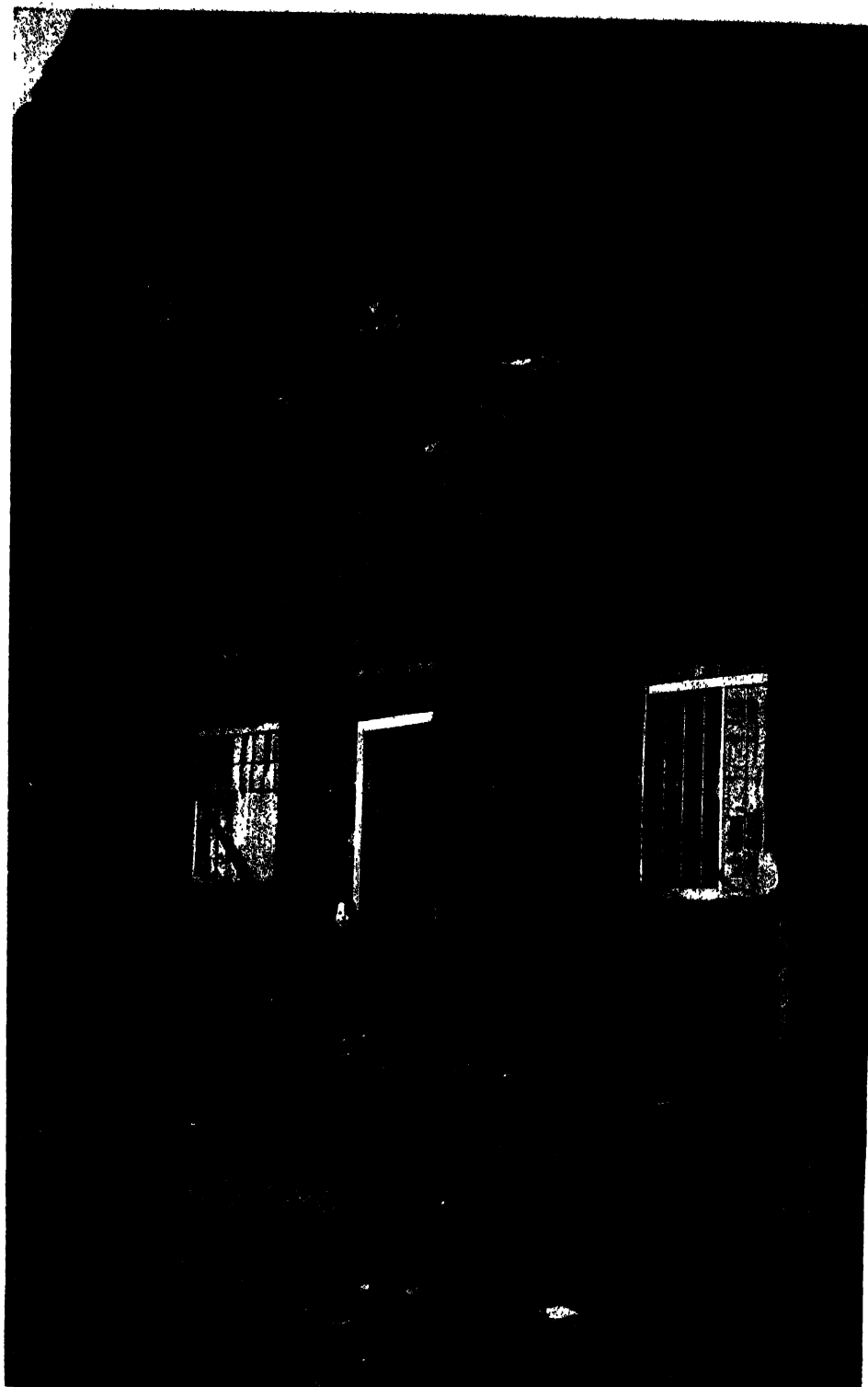
### TEPEES OF STONEY INDIANS IN AN ENCAMPMENT NEAR BANFF

In Canada we still find wandering bands of Red Indians living in the teepees typical of their race. These are made of hide stretched over poles, and some are decorated, like the one at the far end of this row, with totem signs. When the Indian wishes to travel the hide is lashed to the poles, which are drawn behind his horse.



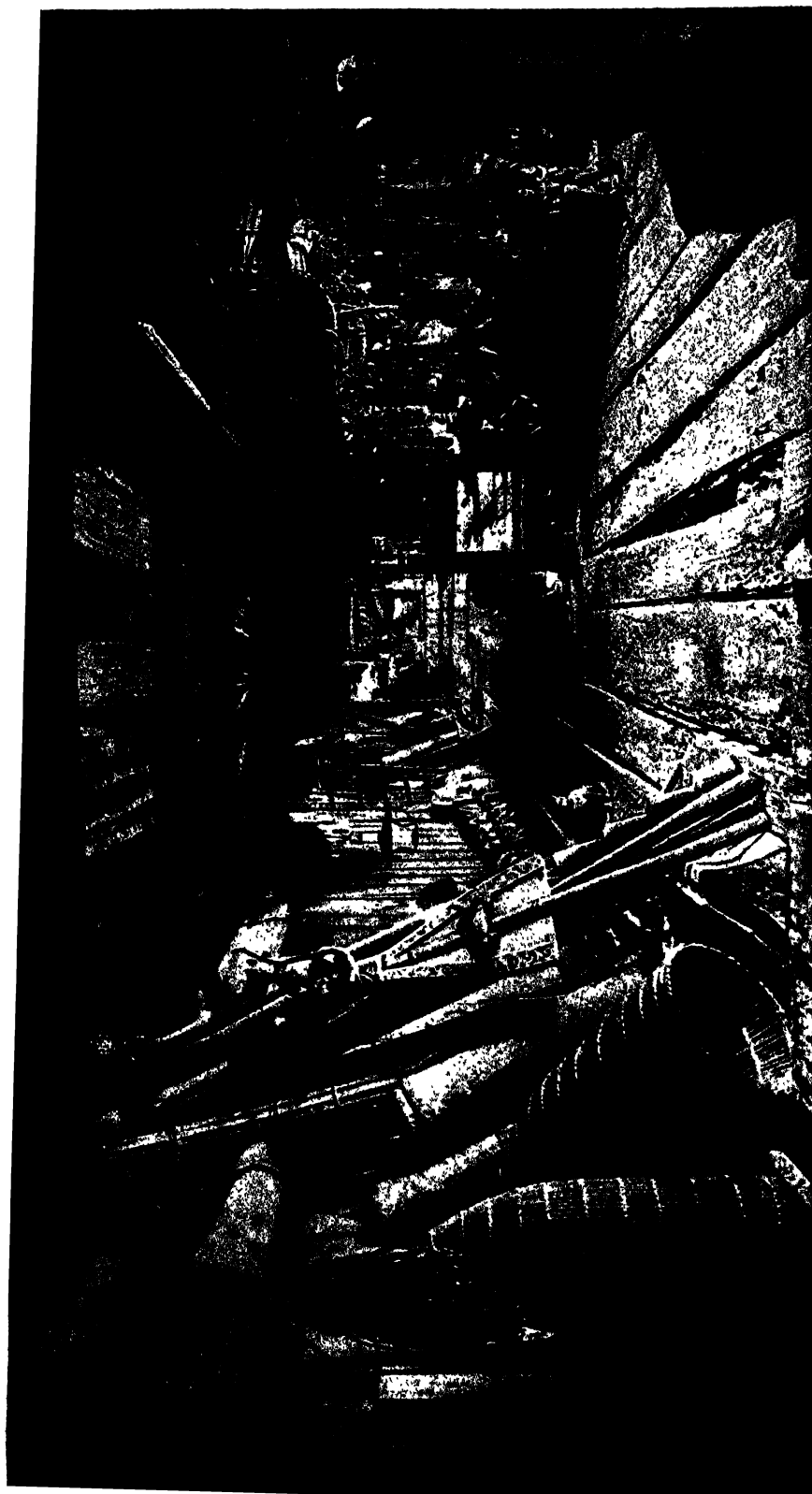
E.N.A.

**COSY ESKIMO HOME BUILT OF SNOW-BLOCKS IN FAR ALASKA**  
Many of the Eskimos live in tents of sealskin, but in the winter they sometimes build neat huts of snow. A sheet of ice serves as a window, and the only doorway is a little hole. Blubber-oil lamps that are continually burning make the interior very warm indeed, but the intense cold outside keeps the snow walls from melting.



**WHERE ENGLISH CAVE-DWELLERS OF TO-DAY ARE AT HOME**

Hundreds of years ago, several odd little dwellings like this were hollowed out of the hard stone of the Holy Austin Rock, at Kinver, in Worcestershire, and they are still in use. Outwardly these dwellings have scarcely changed through the centuries—only a few additions, such as the quaintly twisting, brick chimney, have been made.



HOSE

# MAIN STREET, LOUNGE HALL AND VERANDA COMBINED IN A KAYAN LONG HOUSE IN BORNEO

The typical long house of the Kayans is rather a fortified village than a dwelling-house. It consists of a huge building—some are nearly a quarter of a mile long—divided into apartments, each of which is occupied by a family; so that, in some cases, 120 families all dwell under the same roof. We see here the gallery, open on one side to the fresh air, that runs the whole length of the building, and from which doors lead to the private living-rooms. This gallery serves as a way of communication and as a common-room for the whole community.



Hose

#### **BARE FRAMEWORK THAT WILL BECOME THE HOME OF A VILLAGE**

We cannot but admire the skill in carpentry possessed by the natives of Borneo, who, with primitive tools, build their long houses of such huge wooden posts and beams as we see here. On the floor on which these children now stand will be the living-rooms and the common corridor, raised high above the ground as a protection against savage enemies.

also raise their houses several feet from the ground as a protection from reptiles, wild animals and human enemies.

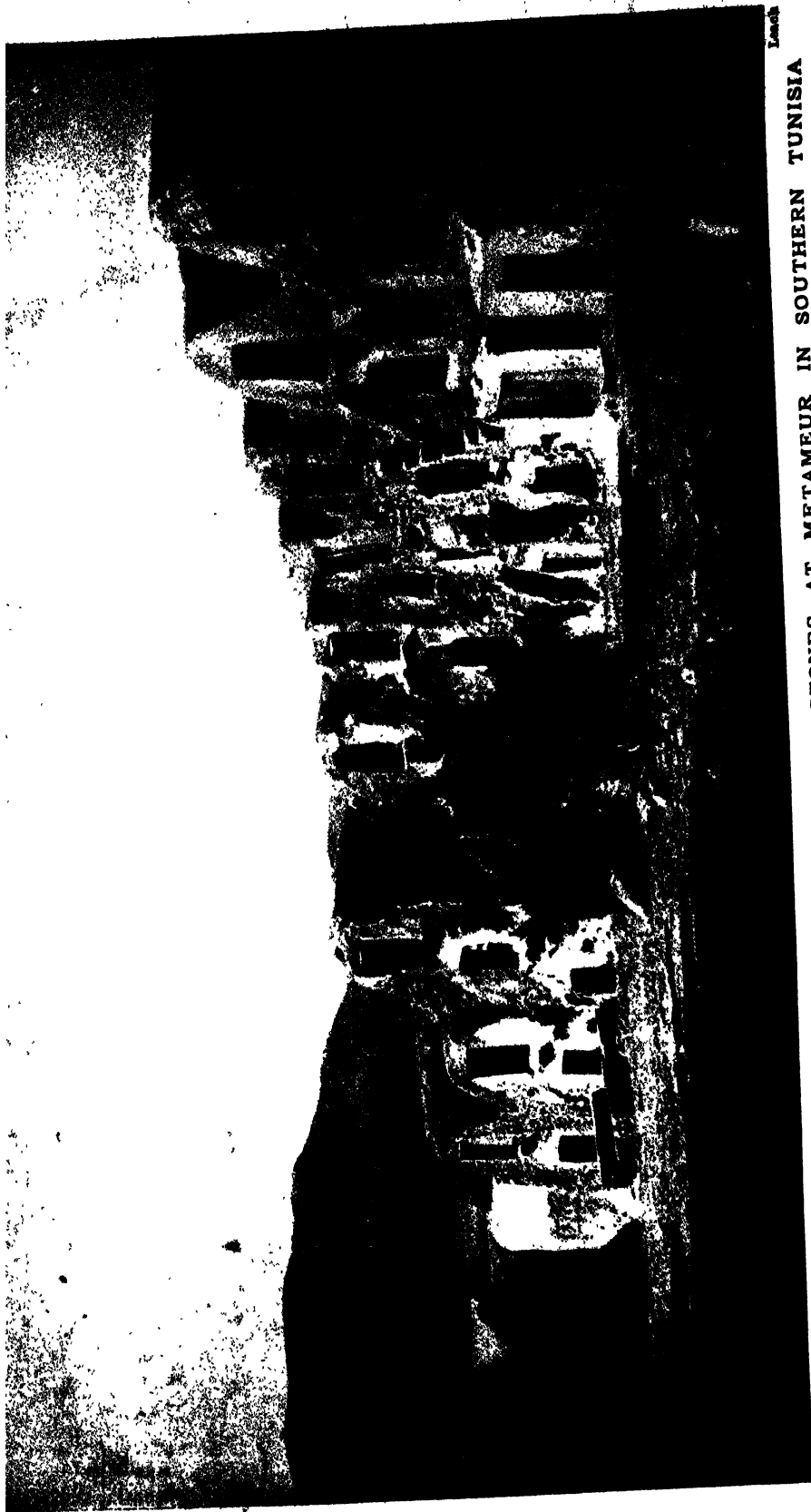
Another form of the pile-built house is the large, communal "long house" of Borneo. These peculiar and extensive buildings, often four hundred yards long and housing a large number of families, are also found in New Guinea. A prominent feature of a Papuan village is the club-house, a spacious, wooden, rush-covered erection which is devoted to the entertainment of strangers.

The building of a house on the island of Samoa may serve as being typical of similar ones throughout the Pacific. Stout poles having been obtained, these are ranged round so as to lean inwards towards a central point, like the ribs of a half-opened umbrella. Round these a number of laths or strips of wood are bent and tied firmly to the poles with ropes of coconut fibre. The final operation is the covering of this conical-shaped building with sugar-canes or leaves from the

pandanus palm. Sometimes there will be a curtain made of plaited palm leaves, but the object of this is to screen the occupants from inclement weather rather than to shut them out from the public gaze, for the occupants of Samoan native houses do not bother much about privacy.

It is not a far cry from the isles of the Pacific to New Zealand. Here, in Maoriland, we shall find some very curious and interesting types of houses. The story of the Maoris has already been told in these pages, and something has been said of their skill in carving. A fuller description, however, of a "wharewhakairo," the special assembly hall or guest-house of a village, may be given here.

A Maori house of the ordinary kind may be quite tastefully ornamented by its owner, as we can see in pages 485 and 497, but the larger house which is the common property of the villagers has more attention paid to it in this respect. We illustrate one of these in page 494. It is usually a wooden building seventy or



Leach

# UNTIDY TENEMENT-HOUSES BUILT OF EARTH AND STONES AT METAMEUR IN SOUTHERN TUNISIA

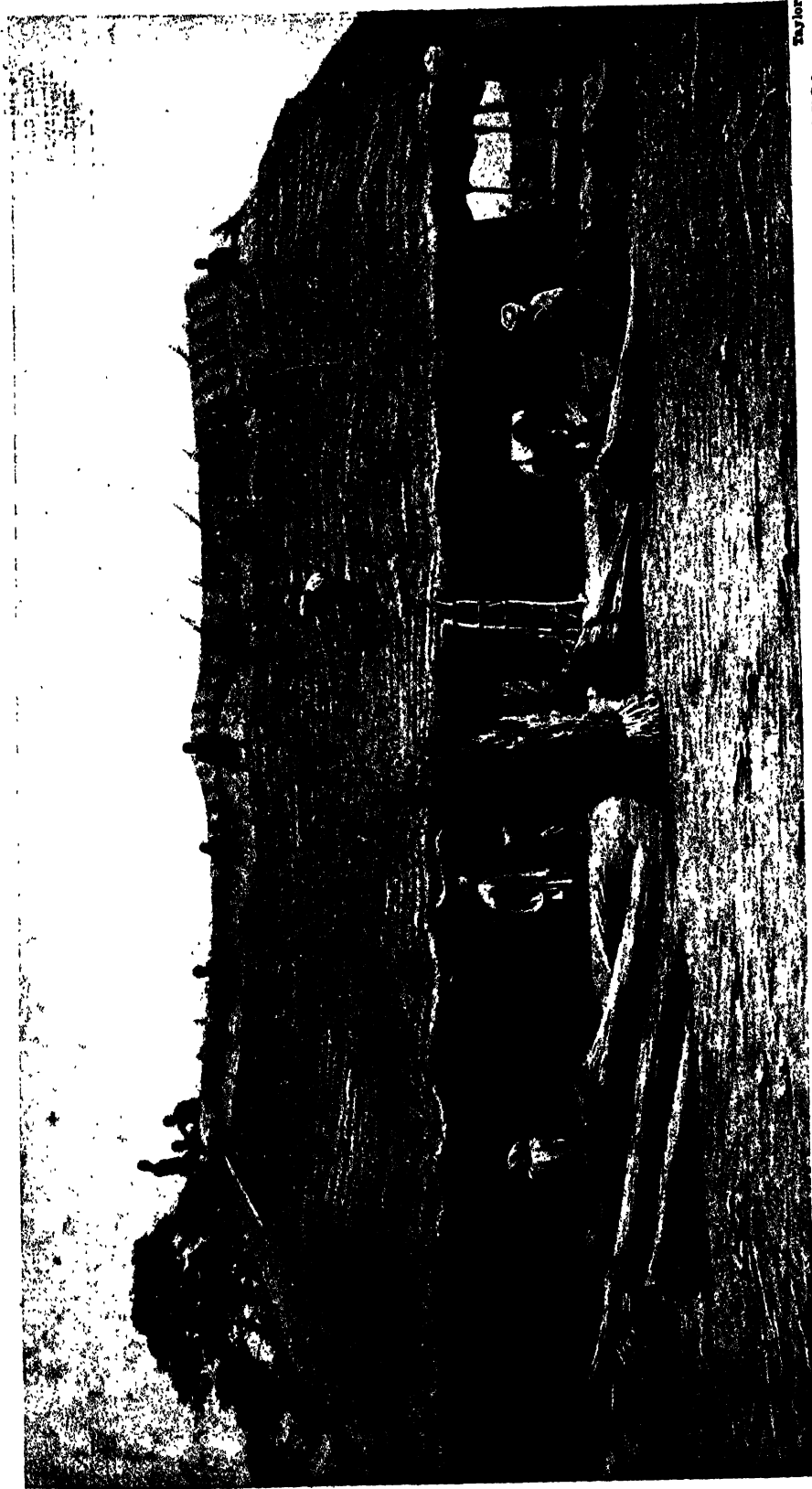
Caves and underground passages, dark, evil-smelling and difficult of access, constitute the houses of many communities of half-civilized Libyans in southern Tunisia. Even where they have built houses, as here at Metameur, they have made the rooms as much like caves



#### HOUSE-BUILDERS WHO USE NO TOOLS, BUT WORK ENTIRELY WITH THEIR HANDS AND FEET

Without the use of any tools whatsoever, the West African labourer can build a house containing several rooms in a very short time. The material used is a kind of red clay, and we see in page 402 how this is made into bricks in the shape of small, roughly-shaped balls,

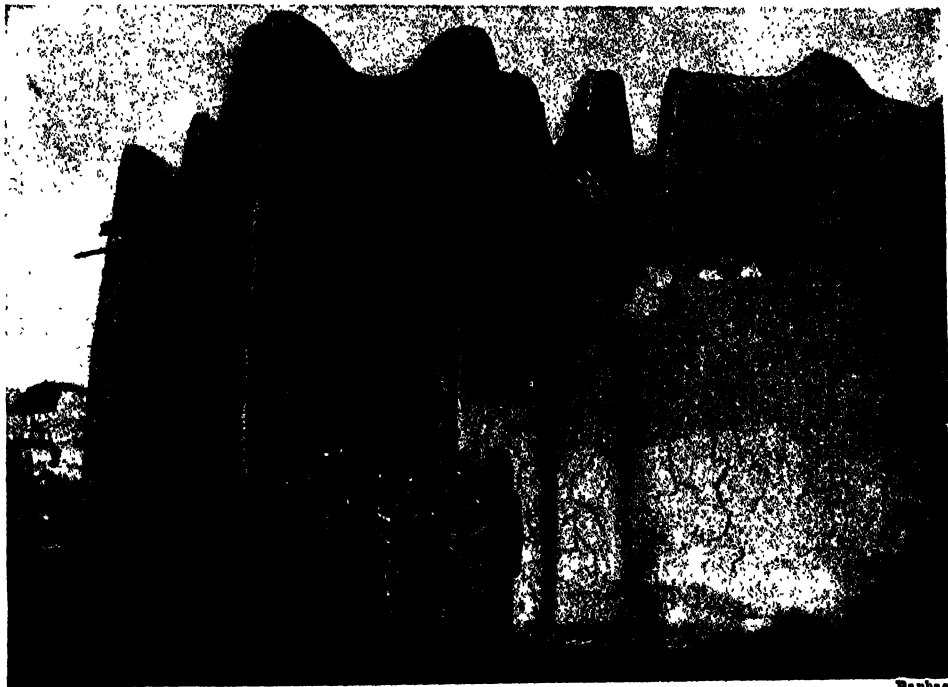
such as that which is here being passed from one native to another. The bricks are cemented together, and are then plastered over with more clay, which is baked hard by the sun. The finished house may be thatched, as in page 856, or flat-roofed, like those in pages 857 and 860.



Taylor

# **BUSY NATIVE THATCHERS AT WORK ON THE GREAT ROOF OF A DWELLING-HOUSE IN NIGERIA**

Thatch affords excellent protection from both sun and rain, and is used to roof over many Nigerian, mud houses. The grasses from which it is made are woven into long strips, which are brought to the scene of the building operations rolled into such bundles as we see here. The strips are fastened to the framework of the roof in layers, each overlapping the one below it. The thatching is begun at the eaves, which project from the walls of the house to make a broad veranda, and when the ridge is reached it is caulked with mud to keep it water-tight.



Raphael

#### CHILDREN WHO LIVE AT THE SIMPLEST ADDRESS IN TOWN

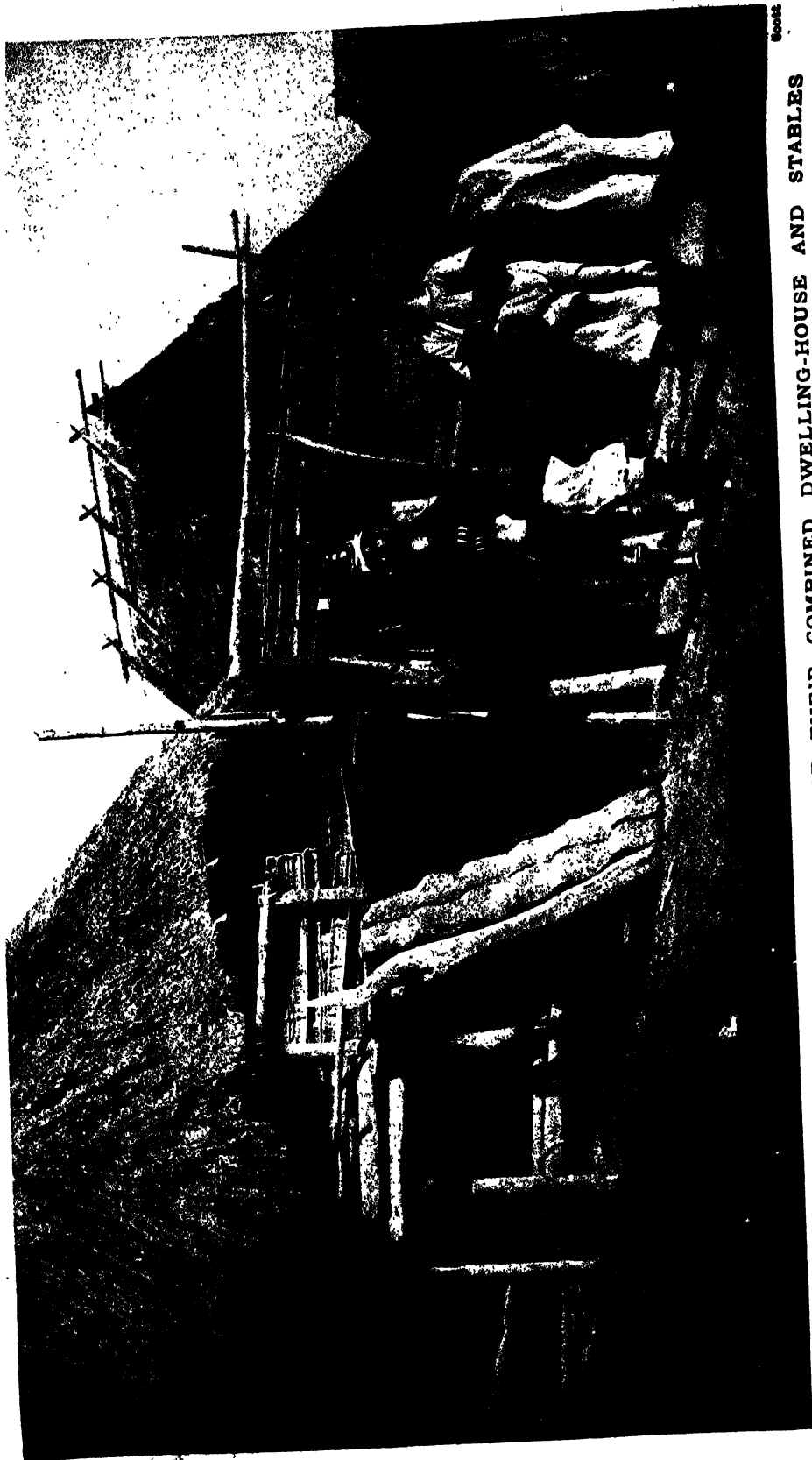
At Kano, in Nigeria, the streets are not named, but all the houses are numbered. Here is No. 1, Kano; elsewhere in the town we should find, for example, No. 6,249. As No. 1 is not thatched it has to have large gutters to drain the rain-water from its roof, since moisture might soften the sun-baked mud of which the house is built.



#### PAPER WALLS A SAFEGUARD AGAINST INJURY IN AN EARTHQUAKE

Japanese houses are built of light materials, mainly because of the risk of their falling and injuring their inhabitants during an earthquake. They have no foundations, but depend for stability on their roofs, which are fairly heavy. Outer house walls are usually of wood or plaster; room walls are of paper stretched in a wooden frame.





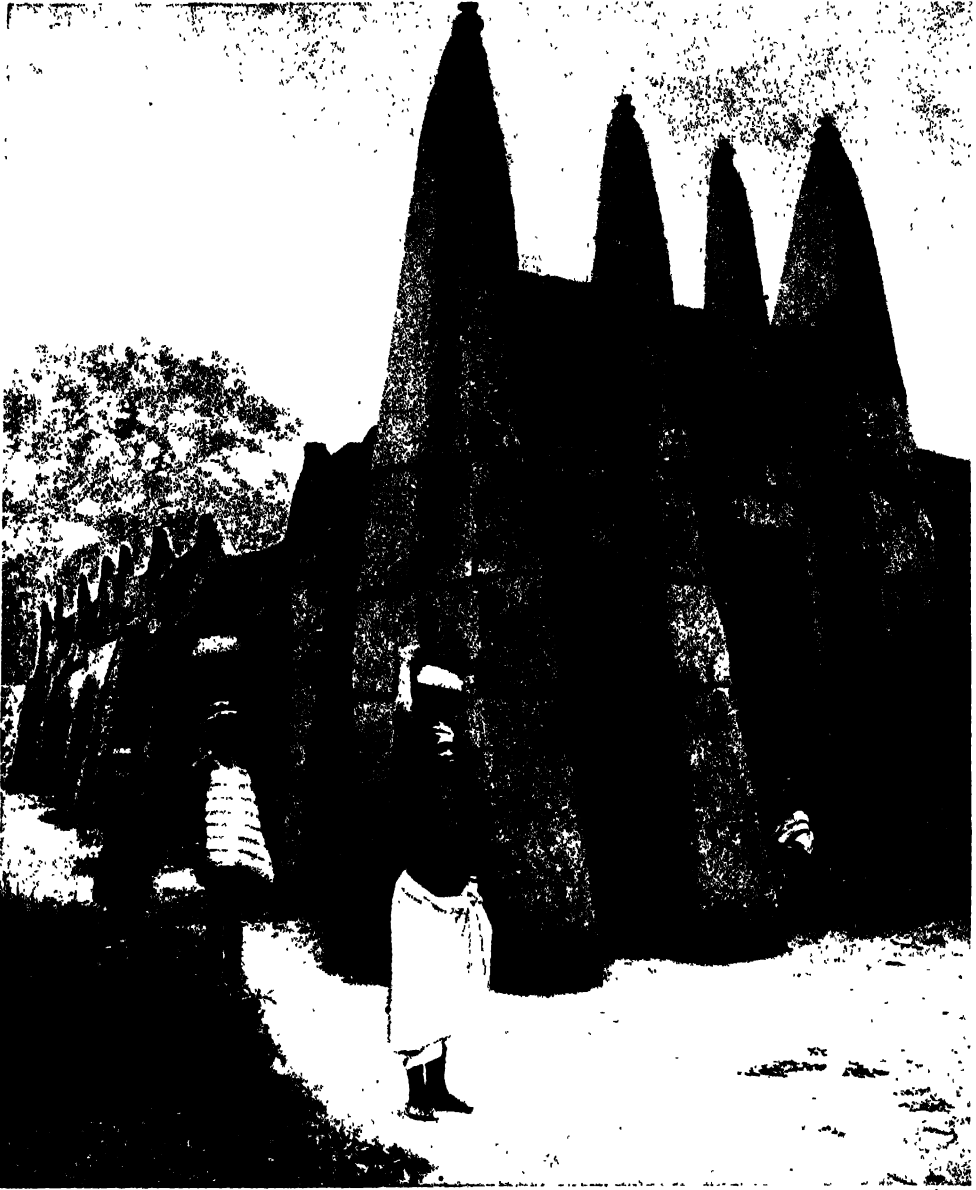
Scott

# PADAUNG FAMILY BEFORE THE VERANDA OF THEIR COMBINED DWELLING-HOUSE AND STABLES

The houses of the Padaungs, a hill tribe of Burma, though large and residential storey is reached by a stairway, such as we see here, fairly well built, are quite dark inside, but have broad, open verandas consisting of solid baulks of wood on which steps have been carved. A person wearing boots might have difficulty in climbing it, but then to allow their inmates to enjoy light and fresh air. Cattle have their quarters on the ground floor, and the family lives above them. This it is intended for natives, who can grip the steps with their bare toes.



**NATIVE INDUSTRY IN A MUD AND TIMBER HOMESTEAD NEAR BEYIN TOWN ON THE GOLD COAST**  
Raised on stout tree-trunks high above the waters of the creek on engaged in extracting oil, which will be exported for the manufacture of margarine, from oil-palm seeds, a heap of which lies before them. Scattered here and there around them are the clumsy wooden vessels of a native West African household, and vegetables and bananas.



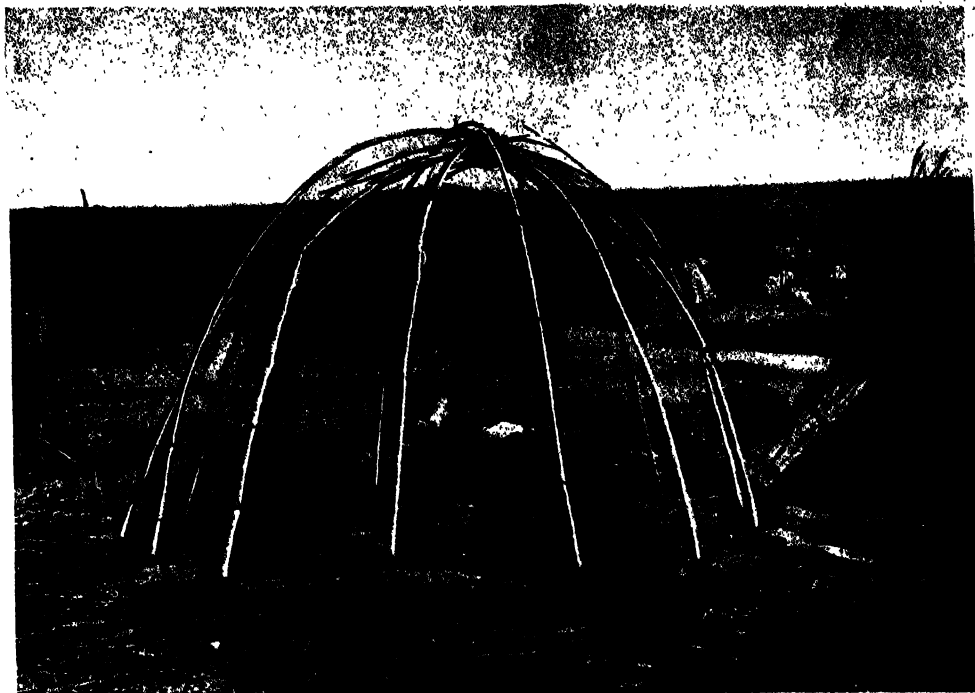
#### UNCOUTH PINNACLES AND BUTTRESSES OF AN ASHANTI MANSION

Although it is only built of mud, baked to the hardness of brick by the fierce West African sunlight, the house of a prosperous Ashanti is given a solid and imposing appearance by its heavy buttresses and rude decorations. The roof, which is flat and has a low parapet, can be used as a place of defence should the town be attacked.

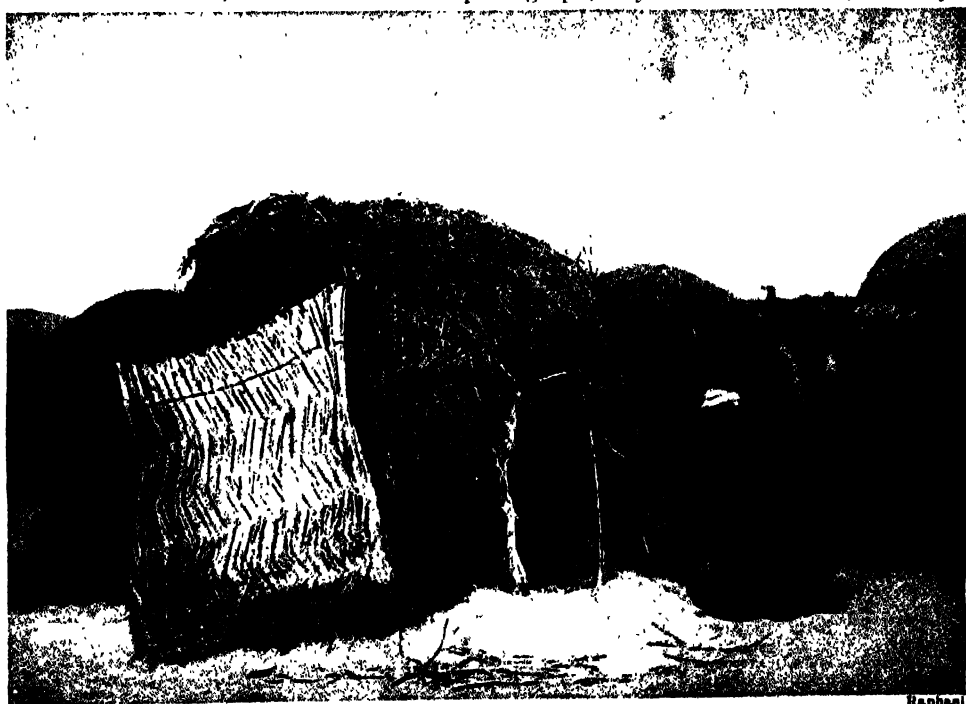
eighty feet long and nearly half as wide. Wherever possible, on uprights, ridge pole, rafters and walls, the cunning craftsmen of the Maoris exercise their skill in decorative art. Some of the designs are rather crude to Western eyes, but the effect is always striking. What we cannot help noticing are the grotesquely-carved heads which adorn the supporting poles, their staring eyes and grinning mouths giving them a ludicrous appearance.

The art of wood-carving runs in certain families among the Maoris, and those well skilled in it rank high as craftsmen. A little-known peculiarity of these human figures is that most of them are represented with three fingers only. This is in honour of one Nuku-mai-teko, the "father" of house decorators, whose right hand possessed only three fingers.

Strange, too, though more familiar to the boys and girls who delight in adventure

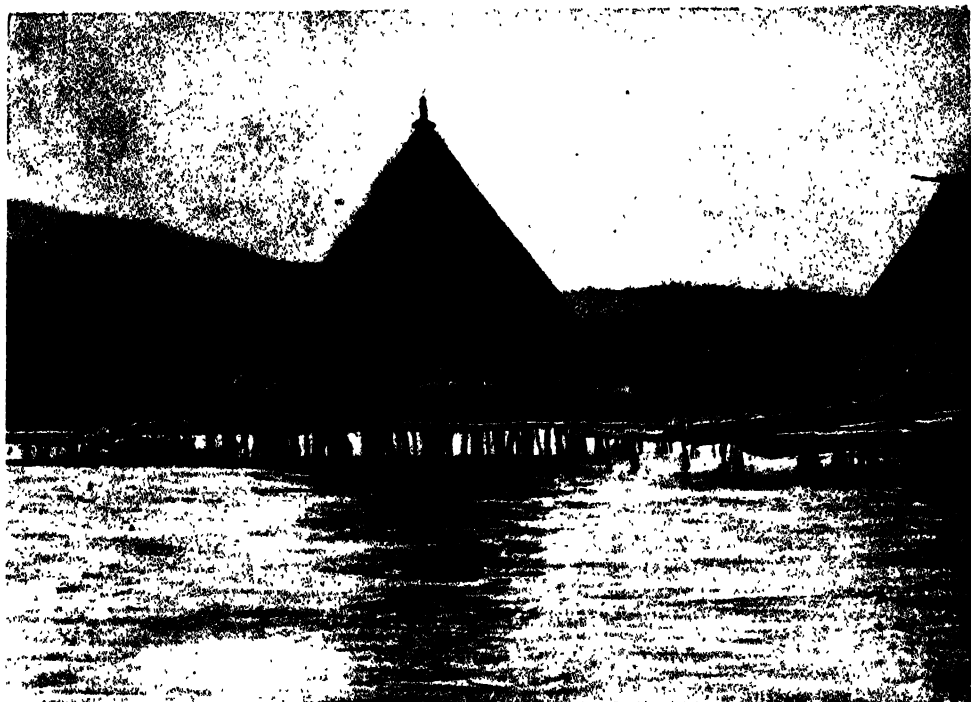


**SLENDER WANDS MAKE THE FRAMEWORK OF A HAUSA GRASS HUT**  
 There need never be any overcrowded houses in Nigeria, since two men can easily build a new hut in two hours. First they cut the grasses, from which the walls are made, weaving them into long strips like those used for thatching; then, having prepared a framework of wands, such as we see in this photograph, they cover it with the grass strips.



#### **HAUSA HUT THAT IS ALREADY A HAPPY HOME**

Although it has been built in two hours, the thatched hut of a Hausa family is a snug enough home in fine weather; but its walls, though fairly thick, are not sufficiently compact to be much protection against the fury of wind and tropical rain. The large, oblong door is made of woven reeds, and is tied over the entrance of the hut at night.



#### **YOUNG MEN'S HOUSE IN A SEA-COAST VILLAGE OF NEW GUINEA**

In this conical thatched hut, erected on piles driven into the bottom of Humboldt Bay, the young men of the village live until they are married. It is connected with the land by a narrow wooden causeway that is easily defended in the event of an attack, while if the inhabitants were defeated they might escape in the canoes that are moored to the piles.



Philippine Bureau of Science

#### **GRIMLY ORNAMENTED DWELLING OF AN IGOROT TRIBESMAN**

Until recently the Igorots, a tribe of the Philippine Islands, were fierce head-hunters, and the bell-shaped baskets hung round this house were intended to contain the heads secured by its owner. The house is solidly built and, what is rather unusual with this tribe, is raised on pillars so shaped that rats and other vermin cannot climb them.



Forbin

# **MOI HUT RAISED ON POSTS AS A PROTECTION AGAINST TIGERS**

The homes of the Moi, a savage tribe of Annam, are flimsily built of bamboos, through which a tiger might easily force its way. The huts are accordingly raised high above the ground, and since the ladder may be easily drawn up, the occupants are also protected from human enemies. The family lives in one small room without windows or chimney.

## STRANGE HOMES & QUEER HOUSES

stories, are the wigwam and the tepee of the Red Indian. A wigwam, or lodge, is a bark hut, or a similar structure, resting on a framework of wood and covered with a mat of thatch. It is the real house in a community of Red Indians. The tepee is the tent in which an Indian and his family live when travelling about.

### *Tents of Bison Hide*

In the olden days when the plains of the north-west of America were overrun by great herds of bison on which the Indians mainly depended for their means of existence, the tents were made of the animals' skins. Since the widespread destruction of the bison some sort of canvas or cotton material has had to be used. But the old Indian method of employing tent poles has not changed.

Some ten or twelve of these are needed, and they must be quite straight and smooth. One is the key-pole, on which the others rest; on this being kicked down, the collapse of the frail structure follows. Two of the poles, be it noted, are more slender than the others, and these are arranged to give an outlet for the smoke from the fire. There is an art in putting up an Indian tent, as anyone can testify who has slept in both a well-built and an ill-built one.

With many Indians of the North-West it is the custom to decorate the covering of the tepee. Some tents are real works of art, with their red, yellow and green colouring. If it is a chief's tepee it will bear the designs of his totem, perhaps the figures of a wolf, a bear, a beaver or an eagle. Round the border of one tepee I have seen a hunting scene depicted.

### *Moving a Red Man's Home*

There are many varieties of tepee, of course, because different tribes have chosen their own ways of building them. When an Indian camp is struck and the party has to move on again, the tents are taken down and the coverings wrapped round the poles; then the latter are harnessed to the ponies of the encampment

and are dragged away to the site of the next stopping-place.

Of all strange homes, however, there are none more strange, perhaps, than the snow-houses which the Eskimos of the Arctic wastes build for their use. These simple abodes are known as "igloos," and if they seem to us to be queer attempts at home-building, let us remember that they are well suited to the needs of the people who are forced to live in them, for they are, strangely enough, cold-proof. "Snow-house" is the name generally used for the Eskimo huts, but those actually made of snow are only built occasionally for winter use. Eskimo igloos are mostly formed of earth, over a framework of whale's bones or rock, or of moss and skins over a framework of willows.

### *Warm Houses Made of Snow*

The chief drawback may be said to be the absence of light and ventilation, for the apology for a window lets in but little light, and since the main living-room is not provided with a chimney, the lamps of seal oil make the atmosphere very hot, but the temperature outside is so low that the walls of a snow-house do not melt. Sometimes the Eskimos overheat their houses on purpose, to make the inside walls melt a little. For they know that when the melted snow freezes again it will turn into ice, and so they will have smooth, glassy walls that will not rub away when touched. Such fresh air as is allowed to enter comes in by the long and narrow doorway, in front of which a skin is hung as a curtain. Round the sides of the room will be a ledge divided at points by screens, which thus form little cubicles or recesses. The walls will be lined with skins and the floor paved, perhaps, with flat stones.

These igloos of the Far North are winter houses; in the summer months the Eskimos take to bell-shaped, skin tents which resemble the tepees of the Indians, except that each tent possesses a single pole in place of several.

END OF SECOND VOLUME















